



*Verelst.*

*Three Poets, in three distant Ages born,  
Greece, Italy, and England, did adorn :  
The First, in loftiness of thought Surpas'd ;  
The Next, in majesty ; in both, the Last .  
The force of Nature cou'd no further goe ;  
To make a Third, she joyn'd the former Two .*

*Dryden .*



# Paradise Lost.

A

## P O E M,

*In Twelve Books.*

The AUTHOR

*J O H N M I L T O N.*

The THIRTEENTH EDITION.

To which is prefix'd

*An ACCOUNT of his LIFE.*

Τὸν πέρι Μῆσ' ἐφίλησε, δίδε δ' ἀγαθόν τε, κακόν τε,  
Ὀφθαλμῶν μὲν ἄμερσε, δίδε δ' ἠδ' εἶαν αἰοδὴν.

HOMER Odyss. Θ.

L O N D O N:

Printed for JACOB TONSON in the Strand.

MDCCXXVII.







To the Right Honorable  
*JOHN LORD SOMMERS,*  
Baron of *Evesham.*

*My LORD,*



T was Your LORD-  
SHIP'S opinion and  
encouragement that  
occasion'd the first ap-  
pearing of this Poem  
in the *Folio* Edition, which from  
thence has been so well receiv'd,  
that notwithstanding the price of  
it was four times greater than be-  
fore,

fore, the sale increas'd double the number every year. The Work is now generally known and esteem'd; and I having the honor to hear Your LORDSHIP say, that a smaller edition of it would be grateful to the world, immediately resolv'd upon printing it in this volume, of which I most humbly beg Your acceptance, from,

*My LORD,*

*Your Lordship's*

*ever obliged servant.*

20 JY 63





THE  
L I F E  
O F  
Mr. JOHN MILTON.

**F**ROM a family, and town of his name in *Oxfordshire*, our Author deriv'd his descent; but He was born at *London* in the year 1608. The Publisher of his Works in Prose (on whose veracity some part of this narrative must entirely

A 4

tirely depend) dates his birth two years earlier than this: but contradicting himself afterwards in his own computation, I reduce it to the time that Monsieur *Bayle* hath assign'd; and for the same reason which prevail'd with him to assign it. His father, *John Milton*, by profession a scrivener, liv'd in a reputable manner on a competent estate, entirely his own acquisition; having been early disinherited by his parents for renouncing the communion of the Church of *Rome*, to which they were zealously devoted. By his wife *Sarah Caston* he had likewise one daughter, nam'd *Anna*; and another son, *Christopher*, whom he train'd to the practice of the Common Law; who in the Great Rebellion adher'd to the royal cause: and in the reign of King *James II.* by too easy a compliance with the doctrines of the Court, both religious and civil, he attain'd to the dignity of being made a Judge of the Common Pleas; of which he dy'd devested not long after the Revolution.

But *JOHN*, the subject of the present essay, was the favorite of his father's hopes; who, to cultivate the great genius which early



ly display'd itself, was at the expense of a domestic Tutor; whose care and capacity his Pupil hath gratefully celebrated in an excellent Latin Elegy; the fourth in the present collection. At his initiation He is said to have apply'd himself to Letters with such indefatigable industry, that he rarely was prevail'd with to quit his studies before mid-night: which not only made him frequently subject to severe pains in his head; but likewise occasion'd that weakness in his eyes, which terminated in a total privation of sight. From a domestic education He was remov'd to *St. Paul's School*, to complete his acquaintance with the Classics under the care of *Dr. Gill*: and after a short stay there, was transplanted to *Christ's College* in *Cambridge*, where He distinguish'd himself in all kinds of Academical Exercises. Of this Society He continued a Member 'till He commenc'd Master of Arts: and then leaving the University, He return'd to his father; who had quitted the town, and liv'd at *Horton* in *Buckinghamshire*; where He persued his studies with unparallel'd assiduity and success.

*An. Ætat. 12.**An. Ætat. 15.**An. Ætat. 23.*

After

After some years spent in this studious retirement, his mother dy'd: and then He prevail'd with his father to gratify an inclination He had long entertain'd of seeing foreign countries. Sir Henry Wotton, at that time Provost of Eaton College, gave him a letter of advice for the direction of his travels: but by not observing \* an excellent Maxim in it, He incur'd great danger by disputing against the superstition of the Church of Rome, within the verge of the *Vatican*. Having employ'd his curiosity about † two years in *France* and *Italy*, on the news of a civil war breaking out in *England*, He return'd; without taking a survey of *Greece* and *Sicily*, as at his setting out the scheme was projected. || At *Paris* the Lord Viscount Scudamore, Ambassador from King Charles I. at the Court of *France*, introduc'd him to the acquaintance of *Grotius*; who at that time was honor'd with the same character there by

\* *I pensieri stretti, ed il viso sciolto.*

† *Et jam bis viridi surgebat culmus arista,  
Et totidem flavas numerabant horrea messes, ---  
Nec dum aderat Thyrsis: pastorem scilicet illum  
Dulcis amor Musæ Thuscæ retinebat in urbe.*

Epitaph. Dam.

|| *Defensio Secunda. Pag. 96. Fol.*

*Christina*



*Christina* Queen of Sweden. In Rome, Genoa, Florence, and other cities of Italy, He contracted a familiarity with those who were of highest reputation for wit and learning: several of whom gave him very obliging testimonies of their friendship, and esteem, which are printed before his Latin Poems. The first of them was written by *Manso* Marquis of *Villa*, a great patron of *Tasso*, by whom he is celebrated in his \* Poem on the Conquest of *Jerusalem*. It is highly probable that to his conversation with this noble *Neapolitan* we owe the first design which MILTON conceiv'd of writing an Epic Poem: and it appears by some latin verses address'd to the Marquis with the title of *Mansus*, that He intended to fix on King *Arthur* for his heroe: but *Arthur* was reserv'd to another destiny!

Returning from his travels He found *England* on the point of being involv'd in blood and confusion. It seems wonderful that one of so warm, and daring a spirit, as his certainly was, shou'd be restrain'd from the camp in those unnatural commoti-

\* *Fra Cavalier' magnanimi, e cortesi,  
Resplende il Manso.*----- Lib. 20,

ons. I suppose we may impute it wholly to the great deference He paid to paternal authority, that He retir'd to lodgings provided for him in the city: which being commodious for the reception of his sister's sons, and some other young Gentlemen, He undertook their education: and is said to have form'd them on the same plan which He afterwards publish'd, in a short tractate inscrib'd to his friend Mr. *Hartlib*.

In this philosophical course He continued without a wife to the year 1643; when He marry'd *Mary* the Daughter of *Richard Powell* of *Forest-hill* in *Oxfordshire*: a Gentleman of estate and reputation in that county; and of principles so very opposite to his Son-in-Law, that the marriage is more to be wonder'd at, than the separation which ensu'd, in little more than a month after she had cohabited with him in *London*. Her desertion provok'd him both to write several treatises concerning the doctrine, and discipline, of Divorce; and also to make his addresses to a young Lady of great wit and beauty: but before he had engag'd her affections to conclude the marriage-treaty, in a visit



visit at one of his relations He found his Wife prostrate before him, imploring forgiveness, and reconciliation. It is not to be doubted but an interview of that nature, so little expected, must wonderfully affect him: and perhaps the impressions it made on his imagination contributed much to the painting of that pathetic Scene in \* PARADISE LOST, in which *Eve* addresseth herself to *Adam* for pardon, and peace. At the intercession of his friends who were present, after a short reluctance He generously sacrific'd all his resentment to her tears.

-----*Soon his heart relented  
Tow'rds her, his life so late, and sole delight:  
Now, at his feet submissive in distress!*

And after this re-union, so far was He from retaining an unkind memory of the provocations which He had receiv'd from her ill conduct, that when the King's cause was entirely oppress'd, and her father, who had been active in his loyalty, was expos'd to sequestration; MILTON receiv'd both him and his family

\* Book X. ver. 909.

to protection, and free entertainment, in his own house, till their affairs were accommodated by his interest in the victorious faction.

*Ann. Ætat. 41.* For He was now grown famous by his polemical writings of various kinds, and held in great favor, and esteem, by those who had power to dispose of all preferments in the State. 'Tis in vain to dissemble, and far be it from me to defend, his engaging with a Party combin'd in the destruction of our Church and Monarchy. Yet, leaving the justification of a mis-guided sincerity to be debated in the Schools, may I presume to observe in his favor, that his zeal, distemper'd and furious as it was, does not appear to have been inspirited by self-interested views? For it is affirm'd, that though He liv'd always in a frugal retirement, and before his death had dispos'd of his Library (which we may suppose to have been a valuable collection) He left no more than fifteen hundred pounds behind him for the support of his family: and whoever considers the Posts to which He was advanc'd, and the times in which He enjoy'd them, will I believe confess He might have accumulated a much more plentiful



plentiful fortune: in a dispassionate mind it will not require any extraordinary measure of candor to conclude, that though He abode in *the heritage of Oppressors*, and the spoils of his country lay at his feet, neither his conscience, nor his honor, cou'd stoop to gather them.

A Commission to constitute him Adjutant-General to Sir *William* An. Ætat. 42. *Waller* was promis'd; but soon superseded by *Waller's* being laid aside, when his Masters thought it proper to new-model their army. However, the keeness of his Pen had so effectually recommended him to *Cromwell's* esteem, that when he took the reins of government into his own hand, he advanc'd him to be Latin Secretary, both to himself and the Parliament: the former of these preferments He enjoy'd both under the Usurper, and his Son; the other, 'till King *Charles II.* was restor'd. For some time He had an apartment for his family in *White-hall*; but his health requiring a freer accession of air, He was oblig'd to remove from thence to lodgings which open'd into St. *James's* Park. Not long after his settlement there, his wife dy'd in child-bed: and much about the time of her death, a Gut-

ta

*ta Serena*, which had for several years been gradually increasing, totally extinguish'd his sight. In this melancholic condition He was easily prevail'd with to think of taking another wife; who was *Catharine* the daughter of Captain *Woodcock* of *Hackney*: and she too, in less than a year after their marriage, dy'd in the same unfortunate manner as the former had done; and in his twenty third Sonnet He does honor to her memory.

*An. Ætat. 52.* These private calamities were much heighten'd, by the different figure He was likely to make in the new scene of affairs, which was going to be acted in the State. For, all things now conspiring to promote the King's Restoration, He was too conscious of his own activity during the Ufurpation, to expect any favor from the Crown: and therefore He prudently absconded 'till the Act of Oblivion was publish'd; by which He was only render'd incapable of bearing any office in the Nation. Many had a very just esteem of his admirable parts and learning, who detested his principles; by whose intercession his Pardon pass'd the Seals: and I wish the laws of Civil History cou'd have extended the



the benefit of that oblivion to the memory of his guilt, which was indulg'd to his person; *nè tanti facinoris immanitas aut extitisse, aut non vindicata fuisse, videatur.*

Having thus gain'd a full protection from the Government, (which was in truth more than He cou'd have reasonably hop'd) He appear'd as much in public as he formerly us'd to do; and employing his friend Dr. *Paget* to make choice of a third consort, on his recommendation He married *Elizabeth* the Daughter of Mr. *Minsul* a *Cheshire* Gentleman, by whom He had no issue. Three daughters by his first wife were then living; the two elder of whom are said to have been very serviceable to him in his studies. For, having been instructed to pronounce not only the Modern, but also the Latin, Greek, and Hebrew languages; they read in their respective originals whatever Authors He wanted to consult; though they understood none but their mother-tongue. This employment, however, was too unpleasant to be continued for any long process of time; and therefore He dismiss'd them to receive an education more agreeable to their sex, and temper.

We come now to take a survey of him in that point of view, in which He will be look'd on by all succeeding ages with equal delight, and admiration. An interval of above twenty years had elaps'd since He wrote *An. Æt.* \*<sup>26.</sup> the Mask of \* *Comus*, *L'Allegro*, Il<sup>†29.</sup> *Pensoroso*, and † *Lycidas*; all in such an exquisite strain! that though He had left no other monuments of his Genius behind him, his name had been immortal. But, neither the infirmities of age and constitution, nor the vicissitudes of fortune, cou'd depress the vigor of his mind; or divert it from executing a design He had \* long conceiv'd of writing an Heroic Poem. The Fall of Man was a subject which He had some years before fix'd on for a Tragedy, which He intended to form by the models of Antiquity: and some, not without probability, say the Play open'd with that Speech in the fourth Book of PARADISE LOST, ver. 32, which is address'd by *Satan* to the Sun. Were it material, I believe I cou'd produce other passages which more plainly appear to have been originally intended for the scene. But

\* *Par. Lost. B. 9. V. 26.*



whatever truth there may be in this report, 'tis certain that He did not begin to mold his Subject in the form which it bears now, before He had concluded his controversy with *Salmasius* and *More*; when He had wholly lost the use of his eyes; and was forc'd to employ in the office of an Amanuensis any friend who accidentally paid him a visit. Yet, under all these discouragements, and various interruptions, in the \* Year 1669

*An. Aetat. 61.*

He publish'd his PARADISE LOST; the noblest Poem, next to those of *Homer* and *Virgil*, that ever the wit of man produc'd in any age or nation. Need I mention any other evidence of its inestimable worth, than that the finest Geniuses who have succeeded him have ever esteem'd it a merit to relish, and illustrate, its beauties? Whilst the Critic who gaz'd, with so much wanton malice, on the nakedness of *Shakespear* when he slept, after having † formally declar'd war against it, wanted courage to make his attack; flush'd though he was with his conquests over

\* Milton's Contract with his Bookseller S. Simmons for the Copy bears Date April 27, 1667.

† *The Tragedies of the last age consider'd*, p. 143.

*Julius Cæsar*, and *The Moor*: which insolence his Muse, like the other assassines of *Cæsar*, \* severely reveng'd on herself; and not long after her triumph became her own executioner. Nor is it unworthy our observation, that though, perhaps, no One of our *English* Poets hath excited so many admirers to imitate his Manner, yet I think never any was known to aspire to emulation: even the late ingenious Mr. *Philips*, who, in the colors of style, came the nearest of all the Copiers to resemble the great Original, made his distant advances with a filial reverence; and restrain'd his ambition within the same bounds which *Lucretius* prescrib'd to his own imitation:

*Non ita certandi cupidus, quàm propter amorem  
Quòd TE imitari aveau: quidenim contendat hirundo  
Cycnis? -----*

And now perhaps it may pass for fiction, what with great veracity I affirm to be fact, that MILTON, after having with much difficulty prevail'd to have this Divine Poem licens'd for the Press, cou'd sell the Copy for no more

\* *Vide* EDGAR.

than



than Fifteen Pounds: the payment of which *valuable consideration* depended on the sale of three numerous impressions. So unreasonably may personal prejudice affect the most excellent performances!

About \* two years after, together with SAMSON AGONISTES (a Tragedy not unworthy the *Grecian* Stage when *Athens* was in her glory) He publish'd PARADISE REGAIN'D. But, *Oh! what a falling-off was there!----* Of which I will say no more, than that there is scarcely a more remarkable instance of the frailty of human reason, than our Author gave in preferring this Poem to PARADISE LOST; nor a more instructive caution to the best writers, to be very diffident in deciding the merit of their own productions.

And thus having attended him to the Sixty Sixth year of his age, as closely as such imperfect lights as men of Letters, and retirement, usually leave to guide our inquiry wou'd allow; it now only remains to be re-

\* They were Licensed July 2, 1670, but not printed before the year ensuing.

*An. Ætat. 65.* corded, that in the Year 1674 the Gout put a period to his life at *Bunhill* near *London*; from whence his body was convey'd to *St. Giles's Church* by *Cripple-gate*, where it lyes interr'd in the Chancel; but neither has, nor wants, a Monument to perpetuate his memory.

In his youth He is said to have been extremely handsome: the color of his hair was a light-brown; the symmetry of his features exact; enliven'd with an agreeable air, and a beautiful mixture of fair and ruddy: which occasion'd the Marquis of *Villa* to give his \* Epigram the same Turn of Thought, which *Gregory Arch-Deacon* of *Rome* had employ'd above a thousand years before, in praising the amiable complexions of some *English* Youths, before their conversion to Christianity. His stature († as we find it measur'd by himself) did not exceed the middle-size; neither too lean, nor corpulent: his limbs well proportion'd, nervous, and active; serviceable in all respects to his exercising the sword,

\* *Ut mens, forma, decor, facies, mos, si pietas sic,  
Non Anglus, verùm herclè Angelus ipse fores.*

† *Defensio secunda.* p. 87. Fol.



in which He much delighted; and wanted neither skill, nor courage, to resent an affront from men of the most athletic constitutions. In his diet He was abstemious; not delicate in the choice of his dishes; and strong liquors of all kinds were his aversion. Being too sadly convinc'd how much his health had suffer'd by night-studies in his younger years, He used to go early (seldom later than Nine) to rest; and rose commonly before Five in the morning. It is reported, (and there is a passage in one of his Latin Elegies to countenance the tradition) that his fancy made the happiest flights in the Spring: but one of his Nephews used to deliver it as MILTON's own observation, that his Invention was in its highest perfection from September to the Vernal Æquinox: however it was, the great inequalities to be found in his composures are incontestable proofs, that in some seasons He was but one of the people. When blindness restrain'd him from other exercises, He had a machine to swing in, for the preservation of his health; and diverted himself in his chamber with playing on an Organ. His Deportment was erect,  
b 4 open,

open, affable; his Conversation easy, cheerful, instructive; his Wit on all occasions at command, facetious, grave, or satirical, as the subject requir'd. His Judgement, when dis-engag'd from religious and political speculations, was just and penetrating; his Apprehension, quick; his Memory, tenacious of what He read; his Reading, only not so extensive as his Genius, for That was universal. And having treasur'd up such immense stores of science, perhaps the faculties of his soul grew more vigorous after He was depriv'd of his sight: and his Imagination (naturally sublime, and enlarg'd by reading Romances, \* of which He was much inamor'd in his youth.) when it was wholly abstracted from material objects, was more at liberty to make such amazing excursions into the Ideal World, when in composing his Divine Work He was tempted to range

*Beyond the visible diurnal sphere.*

With so many accomplishments, not to have had some faults, and misfortunes,

\* *His Apology for Smeſtymnus, p. 177. Fol.*



*Mr.* JOHN MILTON. xxv

to be laid in the balance with the fame, and felicity, of writing PARADISE LOST, wou'd have been too great a portion for humanity.

ELIJAH FENTON.



P O S T -



## POSTSCRIPT.

THE works of inferior Geniuses have their infancy, and often receive additions of strength and beauty, in the several Impressions they undergo whilst their Authors live: but the following Poem came into the world, like the Persons whom it celebrates, in a state of maturity. However, though in the first Edition it was dispos'd into Ten Books only, MILTON thought proper in the Second to make a new division of it into Twelve: not, I suppose, with respect to the *Aeneis* (for He was, in both senses of the phrase, above Imitation) but more probably, because the length of the Seventh and Tenth requir'd a Pause in the Narration, He divided them, each into Two: on which distribution, to the beginning of those Books which are now the Eighth and Twelfth, He added the following Verses, which were necessary to make a Connection.

Book VIII. ver. 1.

*The Angel ended, and in Adam's ear  
So charming left his voice, that he a-while  
Thought him still speaking; still stood fix'd to hear:  
Then, as new wak'd, thus gratefully reply'd.*

The latter half of the verse was taken from this in the first Edition.

To whom thus *Adam* gratefully reply'd.

Book



## P O S T S C R I P T.

### Book XII. ver. 1.

*As one who in his journey bates at noon,  
Though bent on speed: so here th' Arch-Angel paus'd,  
Betwixt the world destroy'd, and world restor'd;  
If Adam ought perhaps might interpose:  
Then, with transition sweet, new speech resumes.*

At the same time the Author made some few additions in other places of the Poem, which are here inserted for the satisfaction of the curious.

### Book V. ver. 637.

“ They eat, they drink, and with refection sweet  
“ Are fill'd, before th' all-bounteous King, &c.

were thus enlarg'd in the Second Edition.

*They eat, they drink, and in communion sweet  
Quaff immortality, and joy, (secure  
Of surfeit, where full measure only bounds  
Excess) before th' all-bounteous King, &c.*

### Book XI. ver. 484. after,

“ Intestine stone, and ulcer, cholic-pangs,  
these three verses were added.

*Dæmoniac phrenzy, moaping melancholy,  
And moon-struck madness, pining atrophy;  
Marasmus, and wide-wasting pestilence.*

And

## P O S T S C R I P T.

And ver. 551. of the same Book (which was originally thus,

“ Of rend’ring up. *Michael* to him reply’d)  
receiv’d this addition,

Of rend’ring up, *and patiently attend*  
*My dissolution.* *Michael* reply’d.

To what I have said in the Life, of our Author’s having no Monument, it may not be improper to add; that I desir’d a Friend to inquire at *St. Giles’s Church*; where the Sexton shew’d him a small Monument, which he said was suppos’d to be *MILTON’s*; but the inscription had never been legible since he was employ’d in that office, which he has possess’d about Forty Years. This, sure, cou’d never have happen’d in so short a space of time, unless the Epitaph had been industriously eras’d: and that supposition carries with it so much inhumanity, that I think we ought to believe it was not erected to his Memory.



20 JY 63

I N





I N  
PARADISUM AMISSAM

SUMMI POETÆ

*JOANNIS MILTONI.*

QUI legis AMISSAM PARADISUM, grandia  
Magni

Carmina MILTONI, quid nisi cuncta legis?

Res cunctas, & cunctarum primordia rerum,

Et fata, & fines, continet iste liber.

Intima panduntur magni penetralia mundi;

Scribitur & toto quicquid in orbe latet:

Terræque, tractusque maris, cœlumque profundum,

Sulphureusque ERERI, flammivomusque specus.

Quæque colunt terras, pontumque, & TARTARA  
cæca;

Quæque colunt summi lucida regna poli.

Et quodcunque ullis conclusum est finibus usquam;

Et sine fine CHAOS, & sine fine DEUS:

Et

Et fine fine magis, (si quid magis est fine fine)  
In CHRISTO erga homines conciliatus amor.  
Hæc qui speraret, quis crederet esse futura?  
Et tamen hæc hodiè terra BRITANNA legit.  
O quantos in bella Duces! quæ protulit arma!  
Quæ canit, & quantâ prælia dira tubâ!  
Cœlestes acies! atque in certamine cœlum!  
Et quæ cœlestes pugna deceret agros!  
Quantus in ætheriis tollit se LUCIFER armis!  
Atque ipso graditur vix MICHAËLE minor!  
Quantis, & quàm funestis concurratur iris,  
Dum ferus hic stellas protegit, ille rapit!  
Dum vulfos montes, ceu tela reciproca, torquent;  
Et non mortali desuper igne pluunt;  
Stat dubius cui se parti concedat OLYMPUS;  
Et metuit pugnæ non superesse suæ.  
At simul in cœlis MESSIÆ insignia fulgent,  
Et currus animæ, armaque digna DEO;  
Horrendúmque rotæ strident, & fœva rotarum  
Erumpunt torvis fulgura luminibus;  
Et flammæ vibrant, & vera tonitura rauco  
Admistis flammis insonuere polo:

Excidit



Excidit attonitis mens omnis, & impetus omnis,  
Et cassis dextris irrita tela cadunt.  
Ad poenas fugiunt, & (ceu foret ORCUS asylum!)  
Infernis certant condere se tenebris.  
Cedite ROMANI Scriptores, cedite GRAII,  
Et quos FAMA recens, vel celebravit anus:  
Hæc quicunque leget, tantum cecinisse putabit  
MÆONIDEM Ranas, VIRGILIUM Culices.

SAM. BARROW. M. D.



*On*



## *On* PARADISE LOST.

**W**HEN I beheld THE POET blind, yet  
bold,  
In slender book His vast design unfold:  
MESSIAH crown'd, GOD's reconcil'd decree,  
Rebelling Angels, the Forbidden Tree,  
Heav'n, Hell, Earth, Chaos, All! the argument  
Held me a-while misdoubting His intent;  
That He would ruin (for I saw Him strong)  
The Sacred Truths to fable, and old song;  
(So SAMPSON grop'd the temple's posts in spight)  
The world o'erwhelming to revenge His fight.

Yet as I read, soon growing less severe,  
I lik'd His project, the success did fear;  
Through that wide field how He his way should find,  
O'er which lame faith leads understanding blind;  
Lest He perplex'd the things He would explain,  
And what was easy, He should render vain.



Or, if a work so infinite He spann'd,  
Jealous I was that some less skilful hand  
(Such as disquiet always what is well,  
And by ill imitating would excell)  
Might hence presume, the whole creation's day  
To change in scenes, and shew it in a Play.

Pardon me, MIGHTY POET! nor despise  
My causeless, yet not impious, surmise.  
But I am now convinc'd, and none will dare  
Within Thy labors to pretend a share.  
Thou hast not miss'd one thought that could befit;  
And all that was improper dost omit:  
So that no room is here for writers left,  
But to detect their ignorance, or theft.

That majesty which through Thy Work doth reign,  
Draws the devout, deterring the profane:  
And Things Divine Thou treat'st of in such state,  
As them preserves, and Thee inviolate,  
At once delight and horror on us seize,  
Thou sing'st with so much gravity and ease;

b

And

And above humane flight dost soar aloft,  
With plume so strong, so equal, and so soft!  
The bird nam'd from that Paradise You sing  
So never flags, but always keeps on wing.

Where could'st Thou words of such a compass find?  
Whence furnish such a vast expense of mind?  
Just Heav'n Thee, like TIRESIAS, to requite,  
Rewards with prophecy Thy loss of sight.

Well might'st thou scorn thy readers to allure  
With tinkling rhyme, of Thy own sense secure;  
While the TOWN-BAYS writes all the while and  
And, like a pack-horse, tires without his bells. [spells,  
Their fancies like our bushy-points appear,  
The poets tag them, we for fashion wear.  
I too transported by the mode commend;  
And while I mean to praise Thee, must offend.  
Thy verse created like Thy Theme sublime,  
In number, weight, and measure, needs not rhyme.

20 JY 63

ANDREW MARVELL.





## *The* V E R S E.

**T**HE measure is ENGLISH Heroic Verse without Rhyme, as that of HOMER in Greek, and of VIRGIL in Latin; Rhyme being no necessary adjunct, or true ornament of Poem or good verse; in longer works especially: but the invention of a barbarous age, to set-off wretched matter and lame metre: grac'd indeed since by the use of some famous modern Poets carried away by custom; but much to their own vexation, hindrance, and constraint to express many things otherwise, (and for the most part worse) than else they would have express'd them. Not without cause therefore some (both ITALIAN and SPANISH) Poets of prime note have rejected Rhyme, both in longer and shorter works; as have also long since our best ENGLISH Tragedies; as a thing of itself, to all judicious ears, trivial and of no true musical delight: which consists only in apt Numbers, fit quantity of syllables, and the  
sense

sense variously drawn out from one verse into another: not in the jingling sound of like endings; a fault avoided by the learned Antients both in Poetry, and all good Oratory. This neglect then of Rhyme so little is to be taken for a defect; (though it may seem so so perhaps to vulgar readers) that it rather is to be esteem'd an example set, (the first in ENGLISH,) of antient liberty recover'd to Heroic Poem, from the troublesome and modern bondage of Rhyming.



20 JY 63

T H E



---

THE  
FIRST BOOK  
OF  
PARADISE LOST.

---



B

## The ARGUMENT.

*This first book proposes, first in brief, the whole subject, man's disobedience, and the loss thereupon of Paradise wherein he was plac'd. Then touches the prime cause of his fall, the serpent, or rather Satan in the serpent; who revolting from GOD, and drawing to his side many legions of Angels, was by the command of GOD driven out of heaven with all his crew into the great deep. Which action pass'd over, the Poem hastes into the midst of things, presenting Satan with his Angels now fallen into hell, describ'd here, not in the centre (for heav'n and earth may be suppos'd as yet not made, certainly not yet accus'd) but in a place of utter darkness, fitliest call'd Chaos: Here Satan with his Angels lying on the burning lake, thunder-struck and astonish'd, after a certain space recovers, as from confusion, calls up him who next in order and dignity lay by him: they confer of their miserable fall. Satan awakens all his legions, who lay 'till then in the same manner confounded: they rise; their numbers, array of battel, their chief leaders nam'd, according to the idols known afterwards in Canaan, and the countries adjoining. To these Satan directs his speech, comforts them with hope yet of regaining heaven: but tells them lastly of a new world, and new kind of creature to be created; according to an antient prophecy or report in heaven: for that Angels were long before this visible creation, was the opinion of many antient Fathers. To find out the truth of this prophecy, and what to determine thereon, he refers to a full council. What his associates thence attempt. Pandæmonium, the palace of Satan, rises, suddenly built out of the deep: the infernal Peers there sit in council.*



7,  
se  
of  
oo  
i-  
ut  
h  
s,  
-  
y  
)  
:  
e,  
-  
er  
l.  
be  
y  
ls  
g.  
be  
w  
to  
ls  
of  
-  
ll  
-  
of







# PARADISE LOST.

# BOOK I.

O F Man's first disobedience, and the fruit  
Of that forbidden tree, whose mortal taste  
Brought death into the world, and all our woe,  
With loss of EDEN, till one Greater MAN  
Restore us, and regain the blissful seat, 5  
Sing heav'nly Muse! that on the secret top  
Of OREB, or of SINAI, didst inspire  
That shepherd, who first taught the chosen seed,  
In the beginning how the heav'ns, and earth,  
Rose out of CHAOS. Or if SION hill 10  
Delight thee more, and SILOA's brook that flow'd

B 2

## Fast

Fast by the oracle of GOD; I thence  
Invoke thy aid to my advent'rous song:  
That with no middle flight intends to soar  
Above th' AONIAN mount, while it pursues 15  
Things unattempted yet in prose or rhyme.

And chiefly thou, O SPIRIT! that dost prefer  
Before all temples th' upright heart and pure,  
Instruct me, for thou know'st: thou from the first  
Wast present, and with mighty wings out-spread,  
Dove-like sat'st brooding on the vast Abyfs, 21  
And mad'st it pregnant: what in me is dark,  
Illumine! what is low, raise and support!  
That to the height of this great argument  
I may assert eternal Providence, 25  
And justify the ways of GOD to men.

Say first, (for heav'n hides nothing from thy view,  
Nor the deep tract of hell) say first what cause  
Mov'd our grand Parents, in that happy state  
Favor'd of heav'n so highly, to fall off 30  
From their Creator, and transgress His will  
For one restraint, lords of the world besides?

Who



Book I. *PARADISE LOST.* 5

Who first seduc'd them to that foul revolt?  
Th' infernal serpent! he it was, whose guile,  
Stirr'd up with envy and revenge, deceiv'd 35  
The mother of mankind, what time his pride  
Had cast him out from heav'n, with all his host  
Of rebel Angels: by whose aid aspiring  
To set himself in glory above his Peers,  
He trusted to have equall'd the Most High, 40  
If He oppos'd: and with ambitious aim,  
Against the throne, and monarchy of God,  
Rais'd impious war in heav'n, and battel proud,  
With vain attempt. Him the Almighty Pow'r  
Hurl'd headlong flaming from th' ethereal sky, 45  
With hideous ruin and combustion, down  
To bottomless perdition: there to dwell  
In adamant chains and penal fire,  
Who durst defy th' Omnipotent to arms.  
Nine times the space that measures day and night  
To mortal men, he with his horrid crew 51  
Lay vanquish'd, rolling in the fiery gulf,  
Confounded though immortal! But his doom  
Reserv'd him to more wrath: for now the thought  
Both of lost happiness, and lasting pain, 55

Torments him. Round he throws his baleful eyes,  
That witness'd huge affliction and dismay,  
Mix'd with obdurate pride, and stedfast hate.

At once, as far as angels ken, he views  
The dismal situation waste and wild; 60

A dungeon horrible, on all sides round,  
As one great furnace, flam'd: yet from those  
No light, but rather darkness visible, [flames

Serv'd only to discover sights of woe:  
Regions of sorrow! doleful shades! where peace  
And rest can never dwell! hope never comes, 66

That comes to all: but torture without end  
Still urges, and a fiery deluge, fed  
With ever-burning sulphur unconsum'd!

Such place eternal justice had prepar'd 70  
For those rebellious; here their prison ordain'd,  
In utter darkness; and their portion set

As far remov'd from God, as light of heav'n,  
As from the centre thrice to th' utmost Pole. 74

O how unlike the place from whence they fell!  
There the companions of his fall, o'erwhelm'd  
With floods and whirlwinds of tempestuous fire,  
He soon discerns: and weltring by his side



One next himself in pow'r, and next in crime,  
Long after known in PALÆSTINE, and nam'd  
BEELZEBUB: To whom th'arch-enemy, 81  
(And thence in heav'n call'd SATAN) with bold  
Breaking the horrid silence thus began. [words

If thou beest He—But O how fall'n! how chang'd  
From him, who in the happy realms of light [shine 85  
Cloath'd with transcendent brightness, didst out-  
Myriads tho' bright! If He, whom mutual league  
United thoughts and counsels, equal hope,  
And hazard in the glorious enterprize,  
Join'd with me once, now misery hath join'd 90  
In equal ruin! Into what pit thou seest, [prov'd  
From what height fall'n; so much the stronger  
He with his thunder! and till then who knew  
The force of those dire arms? Yet not for those,  
Nor what the potent victor in his rage 95  
Can else inflict, do I repent, or change  
(Though chang'd in outward lustre) that fix'd mind  
And high disdain, from sense of injur'd merit,  
That with the Mightiest rais'd me to contend:  
And to the fierce contention brought along 100

Innumerable force of spirits arm'd,  
 That durst dislike his reign: and me preferring,  
 His utmost pow'r with adverse pow'r oppos'd,  
 In dubious battel on the plains of heav'n,  
 And shook his throne. What tho' the field be lost?  
 All is not lost; th' unconquerable will, 106  
 And study of revenge, immortal hate,  
 And courage never to submit or yield;  
 (And what is else not to be overcome?)  
 That glory never shall His wrath or might 110  
 Extort from me, to bow and sue for grace  
 With suppliant knee, and deifie His pow'r,  
 Who from the terror of this arm so late  
 Doubted His empire. That were low indeed!  
 That were an ignominy and shame beneath 115  
 This downfal! since (by fate) the strength of Gods,  
 And this empyreal substance cannot fail;  
 Since through experience of this great event,  
 (In arms not worse, in foresight much advanc'd,)  
 We may, with more successful hope, resolve 120  
 To wage by force or guile eternal war,  
 Irreconcilable to our grand foe:  
 Who now triumphs, and in th' excess of joy



Book I. *PARADISE LOST.* 9

Sole reigning, holds the tyranny of heav'n. 124

So spake th' apostate Angel, though in pain;  
Vaunting aloud, but rack'd with deep despair:  
And him thus answer'd soon his bold compeer.

O Prince! O chief of many throned Powers,  
That led th' imbattell'd Seraphim to war  
Under thy conduct! and in dreadful deeds 130  
Fearless, indanger'd heav'n's perpetual King,  
And put to proof His high supremacy:  
Whether upheld by strength, or chance, or fate,  
Too well I see and rue the dire event,  
That with sad overthrow and foul defeat 135  
Hath lost us heav'n: and all this mighty host  
In horrible destruction laid thus low,  
As far as Gods, and heav'nly essences,  
Can perish: for the mind and spirit remains  
Invincible, and vigor soon returns, 140  
Though all our glory extinct, and happy state,  
Here swallow'd up in endless misery!  
But what if He our conqu'ror (whom I now  
Of force believe Almighty, since no less  
Than

Than such could have o'er-power'd such force as  
 Have left us this our spirit and strength entire, [ours)  
 Strongly to suffer and support our pains;  
 That we may so suffice His vengeful ire,  
 Or do Him mightier service, as His thralls  
 By right of war, whate'er His business be, 150  
 Here in the heart of hell to work in fire,  
 Or do His errands in the gloomy Deep?  
 What can it then avail, though yet we feel  
 Strength undiminish'd, or eternal Being,  
 To undergo eternal punishment?— 155  
 Whereto with speedy words th'Arch-fiend reply'd.

Fall'n Cherub! to be weak is miserable,  
 Doing or suffering: but of this be sure,  
 To do ought good never will be our task;  
 But ever to do ill our sole delight: 160  
 As being the contrary to His high will  
 Whom we resist. If then His Providence  
 Out of our evil seek to bring forth good,  
 Our labor must be to pervert that end,  
 And out of good still to find means of evil: 165  
 Which oft-times may succeed, so as perhaps  
 Shall



Shall grieve Him, (if I fail not,) and disturb  
His inmost counsels from their destin'd aim.  
But see! the angry victor hath recall'd  
His ministers of vengeance and pursuit, 170  
Back to the gates of heav'n: the sulph'rous hail  
Shot after us in storm, o'er-blown, hath laid  
The fiery furge, that from the precipice  
Of heav'n receiv'd us falling: and the thunder,  
Wing'd with red lightning and impetuous rage,  
Perhaps hath spent his shafts, and ceases now 176  
To bellow through the vast and boundless Deep.  
Let us not slip th'occasion, whether scorn,  
Or satiate fury, yield it from our foe.  
Seest thou yon dreary plain, forlorn and wild,  
The seat of desolation, void of light, 181  
Save what the glimmering of these livid flames  
Casts pale and dreadful? thither let us tend  
From off the tossing of these fiery waves;  
There rest, if any rest can harbour there: 185  
And re-assembling our afflicted pow'rs,  
Consult how we may henceforth most offend  
Our enemy; our own loss how repair;  
How overcome this dire calamity;

What

What reinforcement we may gain from hope;  
If not, what resolution from despair. 191

Thus SATAN talking to his nearest mate,  
With head up-lift above the wave, and eyes  
That sparkling blaz'd; his other parts besides  
Prone on the flood, extended long and large,  
Lay floating many a rood: in bulk as huge 196  
As whom the fables name, of monstrous size,  
TITANIAN, or EARTH-born, that warr'd on  
BRIAREUS, or TYPHON, whom the den [JOVE,  
By ancient TARSUS held; or that sea-beast 200  
LEVIATHAN, which GOD of all his works  
Created hugest that swim th' ocean stream:  
(Him, haply slumb'ring on the NORWAY foam,  
The pilot of some small night-founder'd skiff,  
Deeming some island, oft, as sea-men tell, 205  
With fixed anchor in his scaly rind,  
Moors by his side under the Lee, while night  
Invests the sea, and wished morn delays.)  
So stretch'd out huge in length the Arch-fiend lay,  
Chain'd on the burning lake: nor ever thence 210  
Had ris'n, or heav'd his head, but that the will  
And



I. Book I. *PARADISE LOST.* 13

And high permission of all-ruling heaven,  
Left him at large to his own dark designs:  
That with reiterated crimes he might 214  
Heap on himself damnation, while he sought  
Evil to others; and enrag'd might see,  
How all his malice serv'd but to bring forth  
Infinite goodness, grace, and mercy shewn  
On man by him seduc'd: but on himself 219  
Treble confusion, wrath, and vengeance pour'd.  
Forthwith upright he rears from off the pool  
His mighty stature; on each hand the flames  
Driv'n backward slope their pointing spires, and  
In billows, leave i'th' midst a horrid vale. [rowl'd  
Then with expanded wings he steers his flight  
Aloft, incumbent on the dusky air, 226  
That felt unusual weight; till on dry land  
He lights, if it were land that ever burn'd  
With solid, as the lake with liquid fire:  
And such appear'd in hue, as when the force 230  
Of subterranean wind transports a hill  
Torn from PELORUS, or the shatter'd side  
Of thund'ring ÆTNA, whose combustible  
And fuel'd entrails thence conceiving fire,  
Sublim'd

Sublim'd with mineral fury, aid the winds, 235  
And leave a singed bottom all involv'd  
With stench and smoke: such resting found the sole  
Of unblest'd feet! Him follow'd his next mate,  
Both glorying to have 'scap'd the STYGIAN flood,  
As Gods, and by their own recover'd strength;  
Not by the suff'rance of supernal pow'r. 241

Is this the region, this the soil, the clime,  
(Said then the lost Arch-Angel) this the feat,  
That we must change for heav'n? this mournful  
For that coelestial light? be it so! since He [gloom  
Who now is Sov'reign can dispose, and bid 246  
What shall be right: farthest from Him is best,  
Whom reason hath equall'd, force hath made su-  
Above his equals. Farewel happy fields, [preme  
Where joy for ever dwells! hail horrors! hail  
Infernal world! and thou profoundest hell 251  
Receive thy new possessor! One, who brings  
A mind not to be chang'd by place or time.  
The mind is its own place, and in it self  
Can make a heav'n of hell, a hell of heav'n. 255  
What matter where, if I be still the same,

And



And what I should be, all but less than He  
Whom thunder hath made greater? Here at least  
We shall be free; th'Almighty hath not built  
Here for His envy; will not drive us hence: 260  
Here we may reign secure; and in my choice  
To reign is worth ambition, tho' in hell:  
Better to reign in hell, than serve in heav'n.  
But wherefore let we then our faithful friends,  
Th'associates and copartners of our loss, 265  
Lye thus astonish'd on th'oblivious pool,  
And call them not to share with us their part  
In this unhappy mansion: or once more  
With rallied arms to try, what may be yet 269  
Regain'd in heav'n, or what more lost in hell?

So SATAN spake, and him BEELZEBUB  
Thus answer'd: Leader of those armies bright,  
Which but th'Omnipotent none could have foil'd!  
If once they hear that voice, their liveliest pledge  
Of hope in fears and dangers, heard so oft 275  
In worst extremes, and on the perilous edge  
Of battel when it rag'd, in all assaults  
Their surest signal, they will soon resume

New

New courage, and revive, tho' now they lye  
Gro'ling and prostrate on yon lake of fire, 280  
(As we erewhile,) astounded and amaz'd;  
No wonder, fall'n such a pernicious height!

He scarce had ceas'd, when the superior fiend  
Was moving tow'rd the shore: his pond'rous shield,  
Ethereal temper, massie, large and round, 285  
Behind him cast; the broad circumference  
Hung on his shoulders like the Moon, whose orb  
Thro' optic glasse the TUSCAN artist views  
At ev'ning, from the top of FESOLE,  
Or in VALDARNO, to descry new lands, 290  
Rivers, or mountains, in her spotty globe.  
His spear, (to equal which the tallest pine  
Hewn on NORWEGIAN hills, to be the mast  
Of some great Ammiral, were but a wand)  
He walk'd with, to support uneasy steps 295  
Over the burning marle (not like those steps  
On heaven's azure!) and the torrid clime  
Smote on him fore besides, vaulted with fire.  
Nathless he so indur'd, 'till on the beach  
Of that inflamed sea he stood, and call'd 300

His



k l. Book I. *PARADISE LOST.* 17

His legions, Angel-forms, who lay intrans'd,  
280 Thick as autumnal leaves that strow the brooks  
In VALLOMBROSA, where th'ETRURIAN shades  
High over-arch'd imbow'r; or scatter'd sedge  
Afloat, when with fierce winds ORION arm'd 305  
Hath vex'd the Red-Sea coast, whose waves o'er-  
BUSIRIS, and his MEMPHIAN chivalry, [threw  
285 While with perfidious hatred they persu'd  
The sojourners of GOSHEN, who beheld  
From the safe shoar their floating carcases, 310  
And broken chariot wheels: so thick bestrown,  
Abject and lost lay these, covering the flood,  
290 Under amazement of their hideous change.  
He call'd so loud, that all the hollow Deep  
Of hell resounded: Princes, Potentates, 315  
Warriors, the flow'r of heav'n! once yours, now  
If such astonishment as this can seize [lost,  
295 Eternal spirits: or have ye chos'n this place  
After the toil of battel to repose  
Your wearied virtue, for the ease you find 320  
To slumber here, as in the vales of heaven?  
Or in this abject posture have ye sworn  
300 T'adore the conqueror? who now beholds

His C Cherub

Cherub and Seraph rowling in the flood,  
With scatter'd arms and ensigns ; 'till anon 325  
His swift persuers from heav'n-gates discern  
Th'advantage, and descending tread us down  
Thus drooping ; or with linked thunderbolts  
Transfix us to the bottom of this gulph.  
Awake, arise, or be for ever fall'n ! 330

They heard, and were abash'd, and up they sprung  
Upon the wing ; as when men wont to watch  
On duty, sleeping found by whom they dread,  
Rouze and bestir themselves ere well awake.  
Nor did they not perceive the evil plight 335  
In which they were, or the fierce pains not feel ;  
Yet to their General's voice they soon obey'd,  
Innumerable ! As when the potent Rod  
Of AMRAM's son, in ÆGYPT's evil day,  
Wav'd round the coast, up call'd a pitchy cloud  
Of locusts, warping on the eastern wind, 341  
That o'er the realm of impious PHARAOH hung  
Like night, and darken'd all the land of NILE:  
So numberless were those bad Angels, seen  
Hov'ring on wing under the cope of hell, 345  
"Twixt



'Twixt upper, nether, and furrounding fires:  
 'Till, as a signal giv'n, th' up-lifted spear  
 Of their great Sultan waving to direct  
 Their course, in even ballance down they light  
 On the firm brimstone, and fill all the plain: 350  
 A multitude! like which the populous north  
 Pour'd never from her frozen loins, to pass  
 RHENE or the DANAW, when her barbarous sons  
 Came like a deluge on the south, and spread 354  
 Beneath GIBRALTER to the LIBYAN sands.  
 Forthwith from ev'ry squadron, and each band,  
 The Heads and Leaders thither haste where stood  
 Their great Commander; God-like shapes and forms  
 Excelling human, Princely Dignities, 359  
 And Pow'rs! that earst in heaven sat on thrones;  
 Tho' of their names in heav'nly records now  
 Be no memorial; blotted out and ras'd,  
 By their rebellion, from the books of life.  
 Nor had they yet among the sons of EVE 364  
 Got them new names; 'till wand'ring o'er the earth,  
 Thro' God's high sufferance for the tryal of man,  
 By falsities and lies the greatest part  
 Of mankind they corrupted, to forsake

GOD their Creator, and th'invisible  
 Glory of Him that made them, to transform 370  
 Oft to the image of a brute, adorn'd  
 With gay religions full of pomp and gold,  
 And Devils to adore for Deities:  
 Then were they known to men by various names,  
 And various idols thro' the heathen world. 375

[who last,  
 Say, Muse, their names then known; who first,  
 Rouz'd from the slumber, on that fiery couch,  
 At their great Emperor's call, as next in worth  
 Came singly where he stood, on the bare strand,  
 While the promiscuous crowd stood yet aloof?  
 The chief were those who, from the pit of hell!  
 Roaming to seek their prey on earth, durst fix  
 Their seats long after next the seat of GOD,  
 Their altars by His altar, Gods ador'd  
 Among the nations round, and durst abide 385  
 JEHOVAH thund'ring out of SION, thron'd  
 Between the Cherubim; yea, often plac'd  
 Within His sanctuary it self their shrines,  
 Abominations! and with curfed things  
 His holy rites and solemn feasts profan'd, 390

And



And with their darkneſs durſt affront his light.  
Firſt MOLOCH, horrid King, beſmear'd with blood  
Of human ſacrifice, and parents tears ;  
Tho', for the noiſe of drums and timbrels loud,  
Their childrens cries unheard, that paſt thro' fire  
To his grim idol. Him the AMMONITE 396  
Worſhip'd in RABBA, and her wat'ry plain,  
In ARGOB, and in BASAN, to the ſtream  
Of utmoſt ARNON. Nor content with ſuch  
Audacious neighbourhood, the wiſeſt heart 400  
Of SOLOMON he led by fraud, to build  
His temple right againſt the temple of GOD,  
On the opprobrious hill ; and made his grove  
The pleaſant valley of HINNON, TOPHET thence  
And black GEHENNA call'd, the type of hell. 405  
Next CHEMOS, th'obſcene dread of MOAB's ſons,  
From AROAR to NEBO, and the Wild  
Of ſouthmoſt ABARIM ; in HESEBON  
And HORONAIM, SEON's realm, beyond  
The flow'ry dale of SIBMA, clad with vines ; 410  
And ELEALE, to th'ASPHALTIC pool:  
PEOR his other name, when he entic'd  
ISRAEL in SITTIM, on their march from NILE,

To do him wanton rites, which cost them woe.  
 Yet thence his lustful Orgies he enlarg'd 415  
 Even to that hill of scandal, by the grove  
 Of MOLOCH homicide; lust hard by hate;  
 'Till good JOSIAH drove them thence to hell.  
 With these came they, who from the bord'ring flood  
 Of old EUPHRATES, to the brook that parts 420  
 ÆGYPT from SYRIAN ground, had general names  
 Of BAALIM, and ASHTAROTH; those male,  
 These feminine: (For spirits when they please  
 Can either sex assume, or both; so soft  
 And uncompounded is their essence pure; 425  
 Not ty'd or manacled with joint or limb,  
 Nor founded on the brittle strength of bones,  
 Like cumbrous flesh; but in what shape they chuse,  
 Dilated or condens'd, bright or obscure,  
 Can execute their airy purposes, 430  
 And works of love or enmity fulfil.)  
 For those the race of ISRAEL oft forsook  
 Their living strength, and unfrequented left  
 His righteous altar, bowing lowly down  
 To bestial Gods; for which their heads as low  
 Bow'd down in battel, sunk before the spear 436  
 Of



Of despicable foes. With these in troop  
 Came *ASTORETH*, whom the *PHOENICIANS* call'd  
*ASTARTE*, Queen of heaven, with crescent horns:  
 To whose bright image nightly by the moon, 440  
*SIDONIAN* virgins paid their vows and songs;  
 In *SION* also not unfung, where stood  
 Her temple on th' offensive mountain, built  
 By that uxorious King, whose heart, tho' large,  
 Beguil'd by fair idolatresses, fell 445  
 To idols foul. *THAMMUZ* came next behind,  
 Whose annual wound in *LEBANON* allur'd  
 The *SYRIAN* damsels, to lament his fate  
 In am'rous ditties all a summer's day;  
 While smooth *ADONIS* from his native rock 450  
 Ran purple to the sea, suppos'd with blood  
 Of *THAMMUZ* yearly wounded: the love-tale  
 Infected *SION*'s daughters with like heat;  
 Whose wanton passions in the sacred porch  
*EZEKIEL* saw, when, by the vision led, 455  
 His eyes survey'd the dark idolatries  
 Of alienated *JUDAH*. Next came one  
 Who mourn'd in earnest, when the captive Ark  
 Maim'd his brute image, head and hands lop'd off

In his own temple, on the grunsel edge 460  
 Where he fell flat, and sham'd his worshippers,  
 DAGON his Name; sea-monster! upward man  
 And downward fish: yet had his temple high  
 Rear'd in AZOTUS, dreaded through the coast  
 Of PALÆSTINE, in GATH, and ASCALON, 465  
 And ACCARON, and GAZA's frontier bounds.  
 Him follow'd RIMMON, whose delightful seat  
 Was fair DAMASCUS, on the fertil banks  
 Of ABBANA, and PHARPHAR, lucid streams!  
 He also against the house of GOD was bold: 470  
 A leper once he lost, and gain'd a King,  
 AHAZ, his sottish conqueror, whom he drew  
 GOD's altar to disparage, and displace,  
 For one of SYRIAN mode, whereon to burn  
 His odious off'rings, and adore the Gods 475  
 Whom he had vanquish'd. After these appear'd  
 A crew, who under names of old renown,  
 OSIRIS, ISIS, ORUS, and their train,  
 With monstrous shapes and sorceries abus'd  
 Fanatic ÆGYPT, and her priests, to seek 480  
 Their wandring Gods disguis'd in brutish forms,  
 Rather than human. Nor did ISRAEL 'scape  
 Th' in-



Th' infection, when their borrow'd gold compos'd  
 The calf in OREB; and the rebel King  
 Doubled that sin in BETHEL, and in DAN, 48  
 Lik'ning his Maker to the grazed ox,  
 JEHOVAH! Who in one night when He pass'd  
 From ÆGYPT marching, equal'd with one stroke  
 Both her first-born and all her bleating Gods.  
 BELIAL came last, than whom a spirit more lewd  
 Fell not from heaven, or more gross to love 49  
 Vice for it self: to him no temple stood,  
 Or altar smok'd; yet who more oft than he  
 In temples, and at altars, when the priest  
 Turns atheist, as did ELY's sons, who fill'd 495  
 With lust and violence the house of GOD?  
 In courts and palaces he also reigns,  
 And in luxurious cities, where the noise  
 Of riot ascends above their loftiest tow'rs,  
 And injury, and outrage: and when night 500  
 Darkens the streets, then wander forth the sons  
 Of BELIAL, flown with insolence and wine:  
 Witness the streets of SODOM, and that night  
 In GIBEAH, when the hospitable door  
 Expos'd a matron, to avoid worse rape. 505

These

These were the prime, in order and in might;  
 The rest were long to tell, tho' far renown'd,  
 Th'IONIAN Gods, of JAVAN's issue, held  
 Gods, yet confess'd later than heav'n and earth,  
 Their boasted parents. TITAN, (heav'n's first-born,)  
 With his enormous brood, and birthright seiz'd  
 By younger SATURN: he from mightier JOVE,  
 (His own and RHEA's son,) like measure found;  
 So JOVE usurping reign'd: these first in CRETE,  
 And IDA known; thence on the snowy top 515  
 Of cold OLYMPUS rul'd the middle air,  
 Their highest heav'n; or on the DELPHIAN cliff,  
 Or in DODONA, and thro' all the bounds  
 Of DORIC land; or who with SATURN old  
 Fled over ADRIA to th' HESPERIAN fields, 520  
 And o'er the CELTIC roam'd the utmost isles.

All these and more came flocking, but with looks  
 Down-cast and damp; yet such wherein appear'd  
 Obscure some glimpse of joy, to have found their

Chief

524

Not in despair, to have found themselves not lost  
 In loss it self; which on his count'nance cast

Like



Like doubtful hue: but he his wonted pride  
 Soon recollecting, with high words, that bore  
 Semblance of worth, not substance, gently rais'd  
 Their fainting courage, and dispell'd their fears. 530  
 Then strait commands that at the warlike sound  
 Of trumpets loud, and clarions, be uprear'd  
 His mighty standard: that proud honor claim'd  
 AZAZEL as his right, a Cherub tall; 534  
 Who forthwith from the glittering staff unfurl'd  
 Th' imperial ensign; which, full high advanc'd,  
 Shone like a meteor streaming to the wind,  
 With gems and golden lustre rich imblaz'd,  
 Seraphic arms and trophies, all the while  
 Sonorous metal blowing martial sounds: 540  
 At which the universal host up sent  
 A shout that tore hell's concave; and beyond  
 Frighted the reign of CHAOS and old NIGHT.  
 All in a moment thro' the gloom were seen  
 Ten thousand banners rise into the air, 545  
 With orient Colors waving: with them rose  
 A forest huge of spears; and thronging helms  
 Appear'd, and ferried shields in thick array,  
 Of depth immeasurable: anon they move

In

In perfect Phalanx, to the DORIAN mood 550  
 Of flutes, and soft recorders; such as rais'd  
 To height of noblest temper Heroes old  
 Arming to battel; and instead of rage,  
 Deliberate valor breath'd, firm, and unmov'd  
 With dread of death to flight, or foul retreat;  
 Nor wanting pow'r to mitigate and swage, 556  
 With solemn touches, troubled thoughts, and chase  
 Anguish, and doubt, and fear, and sorrow, and pain,  
 From mortal or immortal minds. Thus they  
 Breathing united force, with fixed thought 560  
 Mov'd on in silence to soft pipes, that charm'd  
 Their painful steps o'er the burnt soil: and now  
 Advanc'd in view, they stand, a horrid front  
 Of dreadful length, and dazzling arms, in guise  
 Of warriors old with order'd spear and shield, 565  
 Awaiting what command their mighty Chief  
 Had to impose: he thro' the armed files  
 Darts his experienc'd eye, and soon traverse  
 The whole battalion views their order due;  
 Their visages and stature as of Gods; 570  
 Their number last he sums. And now his heart  
 Distends with pride, and hard'ning in his strength  
 Glories:



Glories: for never since created man  
Met such imbodyed force, as nam'd with these  
Could merit more than that small infantry 575  
Warr'd on by cranes; tho' all the Giant brood  
Of PHLEGRA with th' Heroic race were join'd,  
That fought at THEBES and ILIUM, on each side  
Mix'd with auxiliar Gods: and what resounds  
In fable or romance of U<sup>T</sup>HER's son, 580  
Begirt with BRITISH and ARMORIC Knights;  
And all who since, baptiz'd or infidel,  
Jousted in ASPRAMONT, or MONTALBAN,  
DAMASCO, or MOROCCO, or TREBISOND;  
Or whom BISERTA sent from AFRIC shoar, 585  
When CHARLEMAIN with all his Peerage fell  
By FONTARABBIA. Thus far these beyond  
Compare of mortal prowess, yet observ'd  
Their dread commander: he, above the rest  
In shape and gesture proudly eminent, 590  
Stood like a tow'r: his form had yet not lost  
All her original brightness, nor appear'd  
Less than Arch-Angel ruin'd, and th' excess  
Of glory obscur'd: as when the sun new-ris'n  
Looks thro' the horizontal misty air, 595  
Shorn

Shorn of his beams; or from behind the moon,  
In dim eclipse, disastrous twilight sheds  
On half the nations, and with fear of change  
Perplexes monarchs; darken'd so, yet shone  
Above them all th'Arch-Angel: but his face 600  
Deep scars of thunder had intrench'd, and care  
Sat on his faded cheek, but under brows  
Of dauntless courage, and confid'rate pride  
Waiting revenge: cruel his eye, but cast  
Signs of remorse and passion, to behold 605  
The fellows of his crime, the followers rather,  
(Far other once beheld in bliss!) condemn'd  
For ever now to have their lot in pain;  
Millions of spirits, for his fault amerc'd  
Of heav'n, and from eternal splendors flung 610  
For his revolt; yet faithful how they stood,  
Their glory wither'd: as when heaven's fire  
Hath scath'd the forest oaks, or mountain pines,  
With singed top their stately growth, tho' bare,  
Stands on the blasted heath. He now prepar'd 615  
To speak, whereat their doubled ranks they bend  
From wing to wing, and half inclose him round  
With all his Peers: attention held them mute:

Thrice



Thrice he assay'd, and thrice in spight of scorn,  
Tears, such as Angels weep, burst forth ; at last 620  
Words interwove with sighs found out their way.

O myriads of immortal spirits ! O Pow'rs  
Matchless, but with th'Almighty ! and that strife  
Was not inglorious, tho' th'event was dire,  
As this place testifies, and this dire change, 625  
Hateful to utter : but what pow'r of mind,  
Foreseeing, or presaging, from the depth  
Of knowledge past or present, could have fear'd,  
How such united force of Gods, how such  
As stood like these, could ever know repulse ?  
For who can yet believe, tho' after loss, 631  
That all these puissant legions, whose exile  
Hath emptied heav'n, shall fail to re-ascend,  
Self-rais'd, and re-possess their native seat ?  
For me be witness all the host of heav'n, 635  
If counsels different, or danger shun'd  
By me, have lost our hopes : but He who reigns  
Monarch in heav'n, 'till then as one secure  
Sat on His throne, upheld by old repute,  
Consent, or custom, and His regal state 640  
Put

Put forth at full, but still His strength conceal'd,  
Which tempted our attempt, and wrought our fall.  
Henceforth His might we know, and know our  
So as not either to provoke, or dread [own;  
New war, provok'd. Our better part remains 645  
To work in close design, by fraud or guile,  
What force effected not: that He no less  
At length from us may find, who overcomes  
By force, hath overcome but half his foe.  
Space may produce new worlds; whereof so rife  
There went a fame in heav'n, that He ere-long 651  
Intended to create; and therein plant  
A generation, whom His choice regard  
Should favor equal to the sons of heav'n:  
Thither, if but to pry, shall be perhaps 655  
Our first eruption, thither or elsewhere:  
For this infernal pit shall never hold  
Coelestial spirits in bondage, nor th'Abyss  
Long under darkness cover.—But these thoughts  
Full counsel must mature: peace is despair'd, 660  
For who can think submission? War then, war,  
Open or understood, must be resolv'd.

He



He spake: and to confirm his words out-flew  
 Millions of flaming swords, drawn from the thighs  
 Of mighty Cherubim: the sudden blaze 665  
 Far round illumin'd hell; highly they rag'd  
 Against the Highest, and fierce with grasped arms  
 Clash'd on their sounding shields the din of war,  
 Hurling defiance toward the vault of heav'n.

There stood a hill not far, whose grisly top 670  
 Belch'd fire and rowling smoke; the rest entire,  
 Shone with a glossy scurf; (undoubted sign  
 That in his womb was hid metallic ore,  
 The work of sulphur) thither wing'd with speed  
 A numerous brigad hasten'd: as when bands 675  
 Of pioneers, with spade and pickax arm'd,  
 Forerun the royal camp, to trench a field,  
 Or cast a rampart: MAMMON led them on,  
 MAMMON, the least erected spirit that fell [thoughts,  
 From heav'n; for ev'n in heav'n his looks, and  
 Were always downward bent; admiring more 681  
 The riches of heav'n's pavement, trodden gold,  
 Than ought divine or holy else, enjoy'd  
 In vision beatific: by him first

D

Mer

Men also, and by his suggestion taught, 685  
Ransack'd the centre, and with impious hands  
Rifled the bowels of their mother earth,  
For treasures better hid. Soon had his crew  
Open'd into the hill a spacious wound,  
And dig'd out ribs of gold. (Let none admire 690  
That riches grow in hell; that soil may best  
Deserve the precious bane.) And here let those  
Who boast in mortal things, and wond'ring tell  
Of BABEL, and the works of MEMPHIAN Kings,  
Learn how their greatest monuments of fame, 695  
And strength, and art, are easily out-done  
By spirits reprobate, and in an hour,  
What in an age they with incessant toil,  
And hands innumerable, scarce perform.  
Nigh on the plain in many cells prepar'd, 700  
That underneath had veins of liquid fire  
Sluc'd from the lake, a second multitude  
With wondrous art found out the massy ore;  
Severing each kind, and scumm'd the bullion dross:  
A third as soon had form'd within the ground 705  
A various mold; and from the boiling cells  
By strange conveyance fill'd each hollow nook:

As



Book I. *PARADISE LOST.* 35

As in an Organ, from one blast of wind,  
To many a row of pipes the found-board breaths.  
Anon out of the earth a fabric huge 710  
Rose like an exhalation, with the found  
Of dulcet symphonies, and voices sweet;  
Built like a temple, where pilasters round  
Were set, and Doric pillars, overlaid  
With golden architrave: nor did there want 715  
Cornice, or freeze, with bossy sculptures grav'n;  
The roof was fretted gold. Not BABYLON,  
Nor great ALCAIRO, such magnificence  
Equall'd in all their glories, to inshrine  
BELUS, or SERAPIS, their Gods; or seat 720  
Their Kings, when ÆGYPT with ASSYRIA strove  
In wealth and luxury. Th' ascending pile  
Stood fixt her stately height: and strait the doors  
Op'ning their brazen folds, discover wide  
Within, her ample spaces, o'er the smooth 725  
And level pavement: from the arched roof,  
Pendent by subtle magic, many a row  
Of starry lamps, and blazing cressets, fed  
With Naphtha and Asphaltus, yielded light  
As from a sky. The hasty multitude 730

Admiring enter'd, and the work some praise,  
And some the architect: his hand was known  
In heav'n by many a towred structure high,  
Where sceptred angels held their residence,  
And sat as Princes; whom the supreme King 735  
Exalted to such pow'r, and gave to rule,  
Each in his Hierarchy, the Orders bright:  
Nor was his name unheard, or unador'd,  
In ancient GREECE; and in AUSONIAN land  
Men call'd him MULCIBER; and how he fell 740  
From heav'n they fabled, thrown by angry Jove  
Sheer o'er the chrystal battlements; from morn  
To noon he fell, from noon to dewy eve,  
A summer's day; and with the setting sun  
Drop'd from the Zenith like a falling star, 745  
On LEMNOS th' ÆGEAN isle: thus they relate,  
Erring; for he with this rebellious rout  
Fell long before; nor ought avail'd him now  
'T' have built in heav'n high tow'rs; nor did he scape  
By all his engins, but was headlong sent 750  
With his industrious crew to build in hell.

Mean while the winged heralds by command  
Of sov'reign pow'r, with awful ceremony



And trumpets found, throughout the host proclaim  
A solemn council forthwith to be held 755  
At PANDÆMONIUM, the high Capital  
Of SATAN and his Peers: their summons call'd,  
From every band and squared regiment,  
By place or choice the worthiest, they anon  
With hundreds, and with thousands, trooping came  
Attended: all access was throng'd, the gates 761  
And porches wide, but chief the spacious hall  
(Though like a cover'd field, where champions bold  
Wont ride in arm'd, and at the SOLDAN's Chair  
Defi'd the best of PANIM chivalry 765  
To mortal combat, or carriere with lance)  
Thick swarm'd, both on the ground, and in the air,  
Brush'd with the hiss of rustling wings. As bees  
In spring time, when the sun with TAURUS rides,  
Pour forth their populous youth about the hive 770  
In clusters; they among fresh dews, and flow'rs,  
Fly to and fro, or on the smoothed plank,  
(The suburb of their straw-built cittadel,)  
New rub'd with baulm, expatiate, and confer  
Their state affairs: so thick the aery crowd 775  
Swarm'd, and were streighten'd, till the signal giv'n:

Behold a wonder! they but now who seem'd  
 In bigness to surpass Earth's Giant sons,  
 Now less than smallest dwarfs, in narrow room  
 Throng numberless, like that PYGMEAN race 780  
 Beyond the INDIAN mount; or Fairy Elves;  
 Whose midnight revels, by a forest side,  
 Or fountain, some belated peasant sees,  
 Or dreams he sees; while over-head the moon  
 Sits arbitress, and nearer to the earth 785  
 Wheels her pale course: they, on their mirth and  
 Intent, with jocund music charm his ear: [dance  
 At once with joy, and fear, his heart rebounds.  
 Thus incorporeal spirits to smallest forms  
 Reduc'd their shapes immense; and were at large,  
 Though without number still, amidst the hall 791  
 Of that infernal court. But far within,  
 And in their own dimensions like themselves,  
 The great Seraphic Lords, and Cherubim,  
 In close recess, and secret conclave sat; 795  
 A thousand Demi-Gods on golden seats,  
 Frequent and full! After short silence then,  
 And summons read, the great consult began.

20 JY 63

*The end of the first Book.*



I.

80

85

nd  
nce

ge,

91

95







---

THE  
SECOND BOOK  
OF  
PARADISE LOST.



---

D 4

## The ARGUMENT.

*The consultation begun, Satan debates whether another bat-  
tel be to be hazarded for the recovery of heaven: some  
advise it, others dissuade. A third proposal is prefer'd,  
mentioned before by Satan, to search the truth of that  
prophecy or tradition in heaven concerning another world,  
and another kind of creature, equal, or not much inferior  
to themselves, about this time to be created: their doubt  
who shall be sent on this difficult search: Satan their  
Chief undertakes alone the voyage; is honor'd and ap-  
plauded. The council thus ended, the rest betake them  
several ways, and to several employments, as their in-  
clinations lead them, to entertain the time 'till Satan  
return. He passes on his journey to hell gates, finds them  
shut, and who sat there to guard them, by whom at  
length they are open'd, and discover to him the great gulf  
between hell and heaven: with what difficulty he passes  
through, directed by Chaos, the Power of that place, to  
the sight of this new world which he sought.*



---

---

# PARADISE LOST.

---



---

## B O O K II.

---

**H**IGH on a throne of royal state, which far  
 Outshone the wealth of ORMUS, and of IND;  
 Or where the gorgeous east with richest hand  
 Showrs on her Kings BARBARIC pearl, and gold,  
 SATAN exalted sat, by merit rais'd 5  
 To that bad eminence: and from despair  
 Thus high uplifted beyond hope, aspires  
 Beyond thus high; insatiate to pursue  
 Vain war with heav'n; and by successuntaught,  
 His proud imaginations thus display'd. 10

Pow'rs, and Dominions, Deities of heav'n!  
 (For since no Deep within her gulph can hold  
 Im-

Immortal vigor, though oppress'd and fall'n,  
I give not heav'n for lost: from this descent  
Cœlestial virtues rising, will appear 15  
More glorious and more dread than from no fall,  
And trust themselves to fear no second fate.)  
Me though just right, and the fix'd laws of heav'n  
Did first create your Leader; next, free choice;  
With what besides, in council or in fight, 20  
Hath been atchiev'd of merit: yet this loss  
Thus far at least recover'd, hath much more  
Establish'd in a safe unenvied throne,  
Yielded with full consent. The happier state  
In heav'n, which follows dignity, might draw 25  
Envy from each inferior: but who here  
Will envy whom the highest place exposes  
Foremost to stand against the Thunderer's aim,  
Your bulwark; and condemns to greatest share  
Of endless pain? Where there is then no good 30  
For which to strive, no strife can grow up there  
From faction: for none sure will claim in hell  
Precedence; none, whose portion is so small  
Of present pain, that with ambitious mind  
Will covet more! With this advantage then 35



To union, and firm faith, and firm accord,  
 More than can be in heav'n, we now return  
 To claim our just inheritance of old,  
 Surer to prosper than prosperity  
 Could have assur'd us: and by what best way, 40  
 Whether of open war, or covert guile,  
 We now debate: who can advise may speak.

He ceas'd; and next him *MoLoc*, sceptred King,  
 Stood up, the strongest and the fiercest spirit  
 That fought in heav'n, now fiercer by despair: 45  
 His trust was with th' Eternal to be deem'd  
 Equal in strength; and rather than be less,  
 Car'd not to be at all; with that care lost  
 Went all his fear: of *GoD*, or hell, or worse, 50  
 He reck'd not; and these words thereafter spake:

My sentence is for open war: of wiles,  
 More inexpert, I boast not: them let those  
 Contrive who need; or when they need, not now:  
 For while they sit contriving, shall the rest,  
 Millions that stand in arms, and longing wait 55  
 The signal to ascend, sit ling'ring here

Heav'n's

Heav'n's fugitives, and for their dwelling-place  
Accept this dark opprobrious den of shame,  
The prison of His tyranny who reigns  
By our delay? No! let us rather chuse, 60  
Arm'd with hell flames and fury, all at once  
O'er heav'n's high tow'rs to force resistless way,  
Turning our tortures into horrid arms  
Against the torturer: when to meet the noise  
Of His Almighty engin He shall hear 65  
Infernal thunder; and for lightning, see  
Black fire, and horror, shot with equal rage  
Among His Angels: and His throne itself  
Mix'd with TARTAREAN sulphur, and strange fire,  
His own invented torments. — But perhaps 70  
The way seems difficult, and steep, to scale  
With upright wing against a higher foe. —  
Let such bethink them, (if the sleepy drench  
Of that forgetful lake benumb not still)  
That in our proper motion we ascend 75  
Up to our native seat: descent and fall  
To us is adverse. Who but felt of late,  
When the fierce foe hung on our broken Rere  
Insulting, and persu'd us thro' the Deep,

With



Book II. *PARADISE LOST.* 45

With what compulsion, and laborious flight, 80

We sunk thus low? Th' ascent is easie then;

Th' event is fear'd; should we again provoke

Our stronger, some worse way His wrath may find

To our destruction: (if there be in hell

Fear to be worse destroy'd) What can be worse 85

Than to dwell here, driv'n out from blifs, condemn'd

In this abhorred deep to utter woe!

Where pain of inextinguishable fire

Must exercise us, without hope of end,

The vassals of His anger, when the scourge 90

Inexorable, and the torturing hour,

Calls us to penance? more destroy'd than thus,

We should be quite abolish'd, and expire.

What fear we then? what doubt we to incense

His utmost ire? which to the height enrag'd, 95

Will either quite consume us, and reduce

To nothing this essential; happier far,

Than miserable to have eternal Being.

Or if our substance be indeed divine,

And cannot cease to be, we are at worst 100

On this side nothing: and by proof we feel

Our pow'r sufficient to disturb His heav'n,

And

And with perpetual inrodes to alarm,  
 Though inaccessible, His fatal throne:  
 Which, if not victory, is yet revenge. 105

He ended frowning, and his look denounc'd  
 Desperate revenge, and battel dangerous  
 To less than Gods. On th' other side uprose  
*BELIAL*, in act more graceful and humane:  
 A fairer person lost not heav'n; he seem'd 110  
 For dignity compos'd, and high exploit:  
 But all was false and hollow: though his tongue  
 Drop'd Manna, and cou'd make the worse appear  
 The better reason, to perplex and dash  
 Maturest counfels; for his thoughts were low: 115  
 To vice industrious, but to nobler deeds  
 Timorous, and slothful: yet he pleas'd the ear,  
 And with persuasive accent thus began.

I should be much for open war, O Peers,  
 As not behind in hate, if what was urg'd 120  
 Main reason to persuade immediate war,  
 Did not dissuade me most; and seem to cast  
 Ominous conjecture on the whole success;

When



Book II. *PARADISE LOST.* 147

When he who most excels in fact of arms,  
In what he counfels, and in what excels, 125  
Mistrustful, grounds his courage on despair,  
And utter dissolution, as the scope  
Of all his aim, after some dire revenge.

First, what revenge? The tow'rs of heav'n are fill'd  
With armed watch, that render all access 130

Impregnable: oft on the bordering Deep  
Encamp their legions; or with obscure wing,  
Scout far and wide into the realm of night,  
Scorning surprize. Or could we break our way  
By force, and at our heels all hell should rise 135

With blackest insurrection, to confound  
Heav'n's purest light; yet our great enemy,  
All incorruptible, would on His throne  
Sit unpolluted; and th' ethereal mold  
Incapable of stain, would soon expel 140

Her mischief, and purge off the baser fire,  
Victorious. Thus repuls'd, our final hope  
Is flat despair: we must exasperate  
Th' Almighty Victor to spend all His rage,  
And that must end us; that must be our cure, 145

To be no more. --- Sad cure! for who would lose,  
Though

Though full of pain, this intellectual Being;  
 Those thoughts, that wander through eternity;  
 To perish rather, swallow'd up and lost  
 In the wide womb of uncreated night,  
 Devoid of sense and motion? And who knows,  
 (Let this be good) whether our angry foe  
 Can give it, or will ever: how He can,  
 Is doubtful; that He never will, is sure.  
 Will He, so wise, let loose at once His ire,  
 Belike thro' impotence, or unaware,  
 To give His enemies their wish, and end  
 Them in His anger, whom His anger saves  
 To punish endless? — Wherefore cease we then,  
 Say they who counsel war? We are decreed,  
 Reserv'd, and destin'd to eternal woe:  
 Whatever doing, what can we suffer more;  
 What can we suffer worse? — Is this then worst,  
 Thus sitting, thus consulting, thus in arms?  
 What! when we fled amain, persu'd, and strook  
 With heav'n's afflicting thunder, and besought  
 The Deep to shelter us? This hell then seem'd  
 A refuge from those wounds. Or, when we lay  
 Chain'd on the burning lake? That sure was worse.

What



What if the breath that kindled those grim fires,  
 Awak'd, should blow them into sevenfold rage, 171  
 And plunge us in the flames? Or, from above,  
 Should intermitted vengeance arm again  
 His red right hand to plague us? What if all  
 Her stores were open'd, and this firmament 175  
 Of hell should spout her cataracts of fire?  
 Impendent horrors! threatning hideous fall  
 One day upon our heads: while we perhaps  
 Designing or exhorting glorious war,  
 Caught in a fiery tempest shall be hurl'd 180  
 Each on his rock transfix'd, the sport and prey  
 Of racking whirlwinds: or for ever sunk  
 Under yon boiling ocean, wrap'd in chains;  
 There to converse with everlasting groans,  
 Unrespited, unpitied, unrepriev'd, 185  
 Ages of hopeless end? This would be worse.  
 War therefore, open or conceal'd, alike  
 My voice dissuades: for what can force or guile  
 With Him, or who deceive His mind, whose eye  
 Views all things at one view? He from heav'n's  
 height 190  
 All these our motions vain sees, and derides:

E

Not

Not more almighty to resist our might,  
 Than wise to frustrate all our plots and wiles.  
 Shall we then live thus vile, the race of heav'n  
 Thus trampled, thus expell'd, to suffer here 195  
 Chains and these torments? Better these than worse,  
 By my advice; since fate inevitable  
 Subdues us, and omnipotent decree;  
 The victor's will. To suffer, as to do,  
 Our strength is equal, nor the law unjust 200  
 That so ordains: this was at first resolv'd  
 If we were wise, against so great a foe  
 Contending, and so doubtful what might fall.  
 I laugh, when those who at the spear are bold  
 And vent'rous, if that fail them, shrink, and fear  
 What yet they know must follow, to indure 206  
 Exile, or ignominy, or bonds, or pain,  
 The sentence of their conqu'ror: This is now  
 Our doom! which if we can sustain and bear,  
 Our supreme foe, in time, may much remit 210  
 His anger: and perhaps thus far remov'd,  
 Not mind us not offending, satisfy'd  
 With what is punish'd: whence these raging fires  
 Will slacken, if his breath stir not their flames.



Book II. *PARADISE LOST.* 51

Our purer essence then will overcome 215  
Their noxious vapor; or enur'd, not feel;  
Or chang'd at length, and to the place conform'd  
In temper, and in nature, will receive  
Familiar the fierce heat, and void of pain.  
This horror will grow mild, this darkness, light:  
Besides what hope the never-ending flight 221  
Of future days may bring, what chance, what change  
Worth waiting, since our present lot appears  
For happy, though but ill; for ill, not worst;  
If we procure not to our selves more woe. 225

Thus BELIAL with words cloath'd in reason's garb  
Counsel'd ignoble ease, and peaceful sloth,  
Not peace: and after him thus MAMMON spake.

Either to disenthronè the King of heav'n  
We war, if war be best, or to regain 230  
Our own right lost: Him to unthronè we then  
May hope, when everlasting Fate shall yield  
To fickle Chance, and CHAOS judge the strife:  
The former vain to hope, argues as vain  
The latter: for what place can be for us 235

E 2

Within

Within heav'n's bound, unless heav'n's Lord supreme  
We over-power? Suppose He should relent  
And publish grace to all, on promise made  
Of new subjection: with what eyes could we  
Stand in His presence humble, and receive 240  
Strict laws impos'd, to celebrate His throne  
With warbled hymns, and to His Godhead sing  
Forc'd Hallelujahs? while He lordly sits  
Our envy'd Sov'reign, and His altar breathes  
Ambrosial odors, and Ambrosial flow'rs, 245  
Our servile offerings! This must be our task  
In heav'n, this our delight; how wearisome  
Eternity so spent, in worship paid  
To whom we hate! Let us not then pursue  
By force impossible, by leave obtain'd 250  
Unacceptable, though in heav'n, our state  
Of splendid vassalage: but rather seek  
Our own good from ourselves, and from our own  
Live to ourselves; though in this vast recess,  
Free, and to none accountable; preferring 255  
Hard liberty before the easie yoke  
Of servile pomp. Our greatness will appear  
Then most conspicuous, when great things of small

Useful



Book II. *PARADISE LOST.* 53

Useful of hurtful, prosperous of adverse  
We can create ; and in what place foe'er 260  
Thrive under evil, and work ease out of pain,  
Through, labor and indurance. This deep world  
Of darkness do we dread ? how oft amidst  
Thick clouds and dark, doth heav'n's all-ruling Sire  
Chuse to reside, His glory unobscur'd ? 265  
And with the majesty of darkness round [roar  
Covers His throne ; from whence deep thunders  
Must'ring their rage, and heav'n resembles hell ?  
As He our darkness, cannot we His light  
Imitate when we please ? This desert soil 270  
Wants not her hidden lustre, gems, and gold :  
Nor want we skill or art, from whence to raise  
Magnificence ; and what can heav'n shew more ?  
Our torments also may in length of time  
Become our elements ; these piercing fires 275  
As soft as now severe, our temper chang'd  
Into their temper ; which must needs remove  
The sensible of pain. All things invite  
To peaceful counsels, and the settled state  
Of order, how in safety best we may 280  
Compose our present evils, with regard

Of what we are, and where; dismissing quite  
All thoughts of war. — Ye have what I advise.

He scarce had finish'd, when such murmur fill'd  
Th' assembly, as when hollow rocks retain 285  
The sound of blust'ring winds, which all night long  
Had rouz'd the sea, now with hoarse cadence lull  
Sea-faring men o'erwatch'd, whose bark by chance  
Or pinnace, anchors in a craggy bay  
After the tempest: such applause was heard 290  
As MAMMON ended, and his sentence pleas'd,  
Advising peace. For, such another field  
They dreaded worse than hell: so much the fear  
Of thunder, and the sword of MICHAEL,  
Wrought still within them; and no less desire 295  
To found this nether empire, which might rise,  
By policy, and long process of time,  
In emulation opposite to heav'n.  
Which when BEELZEBUB perceiv'd (than whom,  
SATAN except, none higher sat) with grave 300  
Aspect he rose, and in his rising seem'd  
A pillar of state: deep on his front engraven,  
Deliberation sat, and public care;

And



Book II. *PARADISE LOST.* 55

And princely counsel in his face yet shone,  
Majestic though in ruin! sage he stood, 305  
With ATLANTÉAN shoulders fit to bear  
The weight of mightiest monarchies; his look  
Drew audience, and attention still as night,  
Or summer's noon-tide air; while thus he spake.

Thrones, and Imperial Pow'rs, offspring of heav'n,  
Ethereal Virtues! or these titles now 311  
Must we renounce, and changing style, be call'd  
Princes of Hell? For, so the popular vote  
Inclines, here to continue, and build up here 314  
A growing empire: doubtless! while we dream,  
And know not that the King of heav'n hath doom'd  
This place our dungeon; not our safe retreat  
Beyond His potent arm, to live exempt  
From heav'n's high jurisdiction, in new league  
Banded against His throne: but to remain 320  
In strictest bondage, though thus far remov'd,  
Under th' inevitable curb, reserv'd  
His captive multitude: for He, be sure,  
In height, or depth, still first and last will reign  
Sole King, and of His kingdom lose no part 325

By our revolt ; but over hell extend  
 His empire, and with iron sceptre rule  
 Us here, as with His golden those in heav'n.  
 What fit we then projecting peace and war?  
 War hath determin'd us, and foil'd with loss 330  
 Irreparable ; terms of peace yet none  
 Vouchsaf'd, or sought : for what peace will be giv'n  
 To us enslav'd, but custody severe,  
 And stripes, and arbitrary punishment  
 Inflicted ? and what peace can we return ? 335  
 But, to our pow'r, hostility, and hate,  
 Untam'd reluctance, and revenge ; though slow,  
 Yet ever plotting how the conqueror least  
 May reap His conquest ; and may least rejoice  
 In doing ; what we most in suffering feel ? 340  
 Nor will occasion want, nor shall we need  
 With dangerous expedition, to invade  
 Heav'n, whose high walls fear no assault or siege,  
 Or ambush from the Deep : what if we find  
 Some easier enterprize ? There is a place, 345  
 (If antient and prophetic fame in heav'n  
 Err not) another world, the happy seat  
 Of some new race call'd MAN ; about this time



Book II. *PARADISE LOST.* 5

To be created like to us, though less  
In pow'r and excellence, but favor'd more 350  
Of Him who rules above: so was His will  
Pronounc'd among the Gods, and by an oath,  
That shook heav'n's whole circumference, con-  
firm'd.

Thither let us bend all our thoughts, to learn  
What creatures there inhabit, of what mold, 355  
Or substance, how endu'd, and what their pow'r,  
And where their weakness, how attempted best,  
By force, or subtilty. Though heav'n be shut,  
And heav'n's high arbitrator sit secure  
In His own strength, this place may lie expos'd,  
The utmost border of His kingdom, left 361  
To their defence who hold it: here perhaps  
Some advantageous act may be atchiev'd  
By sudden onset, either with hell fire  
To waste His whole creation; or possess 365  
All as our own, and drive (as we are driv'n)  
The puny habitants; or if not drive,  
Seduce them to our party, that their God  
May prove their foe, and with repenting hand  
Abolish His own works. This would surpass 370  
Com-

Common revenge, and interrupt His joy  
 In our confusion, and our joy upraise  
 In His disturbance; when His darling sons,  
 Hurl'd headlong to partake with us, shall curse  
 Their frail original, and faded blifs: 375  
 Faded so soon! Advise if this be worth  
 Attempting, or to sit in darkness here  
 Hatching vain empires.—Thus *BEELEZEBUB*  
 Pleaded his devilish counsel, first devis'd  
 By *SATAN*, and in part propos'd: from whence, 380  
 But from the author of all ill, could spring  
 So deep a malice, to confound the race  
 Of mankind in one root, and earth with hell  
 To mingle and involve, done all to spite  
 The great Creator? But their spite still serves 385  
 His glory to augment. The bold design  
 Pleas'd highly those infernal States, and joy  
 Sparkled in all their eyes; with full assent  
 They vote: whereat his speech he thus renews.

Well have ye judg'd, well ended long debate,  
 Synod of Gods! and, like to what ye are, 391  
 Great things resolv'd: which from the lowest deep  
 Will



Will once more lift us up, in spight of Fate,  
 Nearer our ancient seat; perhaps in view 394  
 Of those bright confines, whence with neighbouring  
 And opportune excursion, we may chance [arms,  
 Re-enter heav'n: or else, in some mild Zone  
 Dwell not unvisited of heav'n's fair light,  
 Secure, and at the bright'ning orient beam  
 Purge off this gloom: the soft delicious air, 400  
 To heal the scar of these corrosive fires, send  
 Shall breathe her balm. — But first whom shall we  
 In search of this new world; whom shall we find  
 Sufficient? Who shall tempt with wand'ring feet  
 The dark, unbottom'd, infinite Abyfs, 405  
 And through the palpable obscure find out  
 His uncouth way; or spread his aery flight,  
 Up-born with indefatigable wings  
 Over the vast abrupt, e'er he arrive  
 The happy isle? What strength, what art can then  
 Suffice, or what evasion bear him safe 411  
 Through the strict senteries, and stations thick  
 Of angels watching round? Here he had need  
 All circumspection; and we now no less  
 Choice in our suffrage: for, on whom we send, 415  
 The weight of all, and our last hope, relies.

This said, he sat; and expectation held  
 His look suspense, awaiting who appear'd  
 To second or oppose, or undertake  
 The perilous attempt: but all sat mute, 420  
 Pondering the danger with deep thoughts; and each  
 In others count'nance read his own dismay,  
 Astonish'd! None, among the choice and prime  
 Of those heav'n-warring champions, could be found  
 So hardy, as to proffer, or accept 425  
 Alone, the dreadful voyage: till at last  
 SATAN, whom now transcendent glory rais'd  
 Above his fellows, with monarchal pride  
 (Conscious of highest worth) unmov'd thus spake.

O Progeny of heav'n, empyreal Thrones! 430  
 With reason hath deep silence, and demur,  
 Seiz'd us, though undismay'd: long is the way  
 And hard, that out of hell leads up to light.  
 Our prison strong; this huge convex of fire,  
 Outragious to devour, immures us round 435  
 Ninefold: and gates of burning adamant  
 Barr'd over us, prohibit all egress.  
 These pass'd (if any pass) the void profound  
 Of unessential night receives him next



Book II. *PARADISE LOST.* 61

Wide gaping! and with utter loss of Being 440  
Threatens him, plung'd in that abortive gulf.  
If thence he scape into whatever world,  
Or unknown region, what remains him less  
Than unknown dangers, and as hard escape?  
But I should ill become this throne, O Peers! 445  
And this imperial sov'reignty, adorn'd  
With splendor, arm'd with pow'r, if ought propos'd  
And judg'd of public moment, in the shape  
Of difficulty, or danger, could deter  
Me from attempting. Wherefore do I assume 450  
These Royalties, and not refuse to reign,  
Refusing to accept as great a share  
Of hazard, as of honor, due alike  
To him who reigns, and so much to him due  
Of hazard more, as he above the rest 455  
High-honor'd sits? Go therefore, mighty Pow'rs!  
Terror of heav'n, though fall'n! intend at home,  
(While here shall be our home) what best may ease  
The present misery, and render hell 435  
More tolerable; if there be cure, or charm, 460  
To respite, or deceive, or slack the pain  
Of this ill mansion. Intermit no watch

Against

Against a wakeful foe, while I abroad,  
Through all the coasts of dark destruction, seek  
Deliverance for us all: this enterprize 465  
None shall partake with me. — Thus saying rose  
The Monarch, and prevented all reply:  
Prudent, lest, from his resolution rais'd,  
Others among the chief might offer now  
(Certain to be refus'd) what erst they fear'd; 470  
And so refus'd, might in opinion stand  
His rivals; winning cheap the high repute,  
Which he through hazard huge must earn. But they  
Dreaded not more th' adventure, than his voice  
Forbidding; and at once with him they rose: 475  
Their rising all at once was as the sound  
Of thunder heard remote. Tow'rd's him they bend  
With awful reverence prone; and as a God  
Extol him equal to the highest in heav'n:  
Nor fail'd they to express how much they prais'd,  
That for the general safety he despis'd 481  
His own: (for neither do the spirits damn'd  
Lose all their virtue; lest bad men should boast  
Their specious deeds on earth, which glory excites;  
Or close ambition varnish'd o'er with zeal.) 485  
Thus



Thus they their doubtful consultations dark  
 Ended, rejoicing in their matchless Chief:  
 As when from mountain-tops the dusky clouds  
 Ascending, while the north-wind sleeps, o'er-spread  
 Heav'n's chearful face, the low'ring element 490  
 Scowls o'er the darken'd landschape snow, or showr:  
 If chance the radiant sun with farewell sweet  
 Extend his ev'ning beam, the fields revive,  
 The birds their notes renew, and bleating herds  
 Attest their joy, that hill and valley rings. 495  
 O shame to men! Devil with Devil damn'd  
 Firm concord holds, men only disagree  
 Of creatures rational, though under hope  
 Of heav'nly grace: and, GOD proclaiming peace,  
 Yet live in hatred, enmity and strife 500  
 Among themselves, and levy cruel wars,  
 Wasting the earth, each other to destroy:  
 As if (which might induce us to accord)  
 Man had not hellish foes enow besides,  
 That, day and night, for his destruction wait. 505

The STYGIAN council thus dissolv'd; and forth  
 In order came the grand infernal Peers:

'Midst

'Midst came their mighty Paramount, and seem'd  
 Alone th' antagonist of heav'n, nor less  
 Than hell's dread Emperor, with pomp supreme,  
 And God-like imitated state. Him round 511  
 A globe of fiery Seraphim inclos'd,  
 With bright imblazonry, and horrent arms.  
 Then, of their session ended they bid cry  
 With trumpets regal sound the great result: 515  
 Tow'rds the four winds four speedy Cherubim  
 Put to their mouths the founding alchymy,  
 By herald's voice explain'd: the hollow Abyss  
 Heard far and wide, and all the host of hell 519  
 With deaf'ning shout return'd them loud acclaim.

[rais'd]

Thence more at ease their minds, and somewhat  
 By false presumptuous hope, the ranged Pow'rs  
 Disband, and wand'ring, each his several way  
 Pursues, as inclination or sad choice  
 Leads him perplex'd, where he may likeliest find  
 Truce to his restless thoughts, and entertain 526  
 The irksome hours, till his great Chief return.  
 Part on the plain, or in the air sublime  
 Upon the wing, or in swift race contend,

As



Book II. *PARADISE LOST.* 65

As at th' *OLYMPIAN* games, or *PYTHIAN* fields :  
Part curb their fiery steeds, or shun the goal 531  
With rapid wheels, or fronted brigads form.  
As when; to warn proud cities, war appears  
Wag'd in the troubl'd sky, and armies rush  
To battel in the clouds ; before each van 535  
Prick forth the aery Knights, and couch their spears  
Till thickest legions close ; with feats of arms  
From either end of heav'n the welkin burns.  
Others, with vast *TYPHÆAN* rage, more fell !  
Rend up both rocks and hills, and ride the air 540  
In whirlwind : hell scarce holds the wild uproar.  
As when *ALCIDES* from *OECHALIA* crown'd  
With conquest, felt th' invenom'd robe, and tore  
Through pain up by the roots *THESSALIAN* pines ;  
And *LICHAS* from the top of *OEṬA* threw 545  
Into th' *EUBOIC* Sea. Others more mild,  
Retreated in a silent valley, sing  
With notes Angelical to many a harp  
Their own heroic deeds, and hapless fall  
By doom of battel : and complain that fate 550  
Free virtue should inthrall to force, or chance.  
Their song was partial ; but the harmony

F

(What

(What could it less when spirits immortal sing?)  
 Suspended hell, and took with ravishment  
 The thronging audience. In discourse more sweet,  
 (For eloquence the soul, song charms the sense) 556  
 Others apart sat on a hill retir'd,  
 In thoughts more elevate, and reason'd high,  
 Of providence, foreknowledge, will, and fate;  
 Fix'd fate, free will, foreknowledge absolute; 560  
 And found no end, in wandring mazes lost.  
 Of good, and evil, much they argu'd then,  
 Of happiness, and final misery,  
 Passion, and apathy, and glory, and shame:  
 Vain wisdom all, and false philosophy! 565  
 Yet, with a pleasing forcery, could charm  
 Pain for a while, or anguish; and excite  
 Fallacious hope, or arm th' obdurate breast  
 With stubborn patience, as with triple steel.  
 Another part, in squadrons and gross bands, 570  
 On bold adventure to discover wide  
 That dismal world (if any clime perhaps  
 Might yield them easier habitation) bend  
 Four ways their flying march, along the banks  
 Of four infernal rivers, that disgorge



Into the burning lake their baleful streams:  
 Abhorred STYX, the flood of deadly hate;  
 Sad ACHERON, of sorrow; black and deep!  
 COCYTUS, nam'd of lamentation loud 579  
 Heard on the rueful stream: fierce PHLEGETON,  
 Whose waves of torrent fire inflame with rage.  
 Far off from these, a flow and silent stream,  
 LETHE, the river of oblivion, rolls  
 Her wat'ry labyrinth; whereof who drinks,  
 Forthwith his former state and Being forgets, 585  
 Forgets both joy, and grief, pleasure, and pain.  
 Beyond this flood a frozen continent  
 Lies dark, and wild; beat with perpetual storms  
 Of whirlwind, and dire hail; which on firm land  
 Thaws not, but gathers heap, and ruin seems 590  
 Of ancient pile: all else, deep snow and ice:  
 A gulf profound! as that SERBONIAN bog  
 Betwixt DAMIATA, and mount CASIUS old,  
 Where armies whole have sunk: the parching air  
 Burns fre, and cold performs th' effect of fire.  
 Thither by harpy-footed Furies hal'd, 596  
 At certain revolutions, all the damn'd  
 Are brought; and feel by turns the bitter change

Of fierce extremes, extremes by change more fierce!  
 From beds of raging fire to starve in ice 600  
 Their soft ethereal warmth, and there to pine  
 Immoveable, infix'd, and frozen round,  
 Periods of time; thence hurried back to fire.  
 They ferry over this *LETHEAN* Sound  
 Both to and fro, their sorrow to augment, 605  
 And wish, and struggle as they pass, to reach  
 The tempting stream, with one small drop to lose  
 In sweet forgetfulness all pain and woe,  
 All in one moment, and so near the brink:  
 But Fate withstands, and to oppose th' attempt 610  
*MEDUSA* with *GORGONIAN* terror guards  
 The ford, and of itself the water flies  
 All taste of living wight; as once it fled  
 The lip of *TANTALUS*. Thus roving on  
 In confus'd march forlorn th' advent'rous bands, 615  
 With shudd'ring horror pale, and eyes agast,  
 View'd first their lamentable lot, and found  
 No rest: through many a dark and dreary vale  
 They pass'd, and many a region dolorous,  
 O'er many a frozen, many a fiery Alp, 620  
 Rocks, caves, lakes, fens, bogs, dens, and shades of  
 death; A



Book II. *PARADISE LOST.* 69

A universe of death! which GOD by curse  
Created evil; for evil only good,  
Where all life dies, death lives, and nature breeds  
Perverse, all monstrous, all prodigious things, 625  
Abominable, inutterable; and worse  
Than Fables yet have feign'd, or fear conceiv'd,  
GORGONS, and HYDRAS, and CHIMERAS dire.

Mean while the adversary of GOD and man, 629  
SATAN, with thoughts inflam'd of highest design,  
Puts on swift wings, and tow'rd the gates of hell  
Explores his solitary flight: sometimes  
He scours the right-hand coast, sometimes the left;  
Now shaves with level wing the Deep; then soars  
Up to the fiery concave tow'ring high. 635  
As when far off at sea a fleet descry'd,  
Hangs in the clouds, by Æquinoctial winds  
Close sailing from BENGALA, or the isles [bring  
Of TERNATE, and TIDORE, whence merchants  
Their spicy drugs: they on the trading flood 640  
Through the wide ÆTHIOPIAN, to the Cape  
Ply, stemming nightly tow'rd the Pole: so seem'd  
Far off the flying Fiend. At last appear

Hell bounds, high-reaching to the horrid roof; 645  
And thrice threefold the gates: three folds were  
Three iron, three of adamantine rock; [brass,  
Impenetrable, impal'd with circling fire,  
Yet unconsum'd. Before the gates there sat  
On either side a formidable shape;  
The one seem'd woman to the waist, and fair; 650  
But ended foul in many a scaly fold,  
Voluminous and vast! a serpent arm'd  
With mortal sting: about her middle round  
A cry of hell-hounds never ceasing bark'd 654  
With wide CERBERIAN mouths full loud, and rung  
A hideous peal: yet, when they list, would creep,  
If ought disturb'd their noise, into her womb,  
And kennel there; yet there still bark'd, and howl'd  
Within, unseen. Far less abhor'd than these  
Vex'd SCYLLA, bathing in the sea that parts 660  
CALABRIA from the hoarse TRINACRIAN shore:  
Nor uglier follow the Night-hag, when call'd  
In secret, riding through the air she comes  
Lur'd with the smell of infant-blood, to dance  
With LAPLAND witches, while the lab'ring Moon  
Eclipses at their charms. The other shape 666



(If shape it might be call'd, that shape had none  
 Distinguishable in member, joint, or limb ;  
 Or substance might be call'd that shadow seem'd,  
 For each seem'd either :) black it stood as night,  
 Fierce as ten Furies, terrible as hell, 671  
 And shook a dreadful dart: what seem'd his head,  
 The likeness of a Kingly crown had on.  
 SATAN was now at hand, and from his seat  
 The monster moving, onward came as fast 675  
 With horrid strides: hell trembled as he strode.  
 Th' undaunted fiend what this might be admir'd ;  
 Admir'd, not fear'd ; GOD and his SON except,  
 Created thing not valued he, nor shun'd ;  
 And with disdainful look thus first began. 680

Whence, and what, art thou ! execrable shape !  
 That dar'st, though grim and terrible, advance  
 Thy mis-created front athwart my way  
 To yonder gates ? through them I mean to pass,  
 That be assur'd, without leave ask'd of thee. 685  
 Retire, or taste thy folly, and learn by proof,  
 Hell-born ! not to contend with spirits of heav'n.

To whom the Goblin full of wrath reply'd ;  
 Art thou that Traitor-Angel, art thou He,  
 Who first broke peace in heav'n, and faith, till then  
 Unbroken ; and in proud rebellious arms 691  
 Drew after him the third part of heav'n's sons,  
 Conjur'd against the Highest ; for which both thou  
 And they, outcast from God, are here condemn'd  
 To waste eternal days in woe and pain ? 695  
 And reckon'st thou thy self with spirits of heav'n,  
 Hell-doom'd ! and breath'st defiance here and scorn,  
 Where I reign King, and to enrage thee more,  
 Thy King, and Lord ? Back to thy punishment,  
 False fugitive ! and to thy speed add wings ; 700  
 Left with a whip of scorpions I pursue  
 Thy ling'ring ; or with one stroke of this dart  
 Strange horror seize thee, and pangs unfelt before.

So spake the grievly Terror, and in shape,  
 (So speaking, and so threatning) grew tenfold 705  
 More dreadful and deform. On th' other side  
 Incens'd with indignation SATAN stood  
 Unterrify'd ; and like a Comet burn'd,  
 That fires the length of OPHIUCUS huge



Book II. *PARADISE LOST.* 73

In th' artie sky, and from his horrid hair 710  
Shakes pestilence and war. Each at the head  
Level'd his deadly aim; their fatal hands  
No second stroke intend: and such a frown  
Each cast at th' other, as when two black clouds  
With heav'n's artill'ry fraught, come rattling on 715  
Over the CASPIAN; then stand front to front,  
Hov'ring a space, till winds the signal blow  
To join their dark encounter in mid air:  
So frown'd the mighty combatants, that hell  
Grew darker at their frown: so match'd they stood:  
For never but once more was either like 721  
To meet so great a foe. And now great deeds  
Had been atchiev'd, whereof all hell had rung,  
Had not the snaky forcerers that sat  
Fast by hell-gate, and kept the fatal key, 725  
Ris'n, and with hideous outcry rush'd between.

O father! what intends thy hand, she cry'd,  
Against thy only son? What fury, O son,  
Possesses thee, to bend that mortal dart  
Against thy father's head? and know'st for whom;  
For Him who sits above, and laughs the while 731

At thee, ordain'd his drudge, to execute  
Whate'er his wrath, which He calls justice, bids;  
His wrath, which one day will destroy ye both!

She spake, and at her words the hellish pest 735  
Forbore; then these to her SATAN return'd.

So strange thy outcry, and thy words so strange  
Thou interposest, that my sudden hand  
Prevented, spares to tell thee yet by deeds  
What it intends; till first I know of thee, 740  
What thing thou art, thus double-form'd; and why  
In this infernal vale first met, thou call'st  
Me father, and that phanta'm call'st my son:  
I know thee not, nor ever saw till now  
Sight more detestable than him, and thee. 745

T'whom thus the portress of hell-gate reply'd;  
Hast thou forgot me then, and do I seem  
Now in thine eye so foul? once deem'd so fair  
In heav'n! when at th'assembly, and in fight  
Of all the Seraphim, with thee combin'd 750  
In bold conspiracy against heav'n's King,



All on a sudden miserable pain  
 Surpriz'd thee, dim thine eyes, and dizzy swum  
 In darkness; while thy head flames thick and fast  
 Threw forth; till on the left side op'ning wide, 755  
 Likest to thee in shape, and count'nance bright,  
 Then shining heav'nly fair, a Goddess arm'd,  
 Out of thy head I sprung: amazement seiz'd  
 All th' host of heav'n; back they recoil'd, afraid  
 At first, and call'd me SIN; and for a sign 760  
 Portentous held me: but familiar grown,  
 I pleas'd, and with attractive graces won  
 The most averse, thee chiefly, who full oft  
 (Thy self in me thy perfect image viewing)  
 Becam'st inamor'd, and such joy thou took'st 765  
 With me in secret, that my womb conceiv'd  
 A growing burthen. Mean while war arose,  
 And fields were fought in heav'n; wherein remain'd  
 (For what could else?) to our Almighty foe  
 Clear victory; to our part loss, and rout, 770  
 Through all the empyrean: down they fell  
 Driv'n headlong from the pitch of heav'n, down  
 Into this Deep; and in the gen'ral fall  
 Also: at which time this pow'rful key

Into

Into my hand was giv'n, with charge to keep 775  
 These gates for ever shut, which none can pass  
 Without my op'ning. Pensive here I sat  
 Alone, but long I sat not, till my womb  
 Pregnant by thee, and now excessive grown,  
 Prodigious motion felt, and rueful throes! 780  
 At last this odious offspring whom thou seest,  
 Thine own begotten, breaking violent way  
 Tore through my intrails; that with fear, and pain  
 Distorted, all my nether shape thus grew  
 Transform'd. But he, my inbred enemy 785  
 Forth-issu'd, brandishing his fatal dart,  
 Made to destroy: I fled, and cry'd out **DEATH!**  
 Hell trembl'd at the hideous name, and sigh'd  
 From all her caves, and back resounded, **DEATH!**  
 I fled, but he persw'd (though more, it seems, 790  
 Inflam'd with lust than rage) and, swifter far!  
 Me overtook his mother, all dismay'd:  
 And in embraces forcible, and foul,  
 Ingendring with me, of that rape begot  
 These yelling monsters; that with ceaseless cry 795  
 Surround me, as thou saw'st; hourly conceiv'd,  
 And hourly born, with sorrow infinite



To me! For, when they list, into the womb  
That bred them they return; and howl, and gnaw  
My bowels, their repast: then bursting forth, 800  
Afresh with conscious terrors vex me round,  
That rest, or intermission none I find.

Before mine eyes in opposition sits  
Grim DEATH, my son and foe: who sets them on,  
And me his parent would full soon devour 805  
For want of other prey, but that he knows  
His end with mine involv'd: and knows that I  
Should prove a bitter morsel, and his bane,  
Whenever that shall be; so Fate pronounc'd.

But thou O father! I forewarn thee, shun 810  
His deadly arrow; neither vainly hope  
To be invuln'able in those bright arms,  
Though temper'd heav'nly; for that mortal dint,  
799 e'ne He who reigns above, none can resist!

She finish'd, and the subtle fiend his lore 815  
Soon learn'd, now milder, and thus answer'd smooth.

799 Dear daughter! since thou claim'st me for thy fire,  
'd, and my fair son here show'st me (the dear pledge  
T Of

Of dalliance had with thee in heav'n, and joys  
Then sweet, now sad to mention, thro' dire change  
Befall'n us, unforeseen, unthought of!) know 821  
I come no enemy, but to set free  
From out this dark and dismal house of pain,  
Both him, and thee, and all the heav'nly host  
Of spirits that (in our just pretences arm'd,) 825  
Fell with us from on high: from them I go  
This uncouth errand sole; and one for all  
My self expose, with lonely steps to tread  
Th' unfounded Deep, and through the void immense  
To search with wandring quest a place foretold 830  
Should be, and, by concurring signs, e'er-now  
Created, vast and round; a place of bliss  
In the pourlieues of heav'n, and therein plac'd  
A race of upstart creatures, to supply  
Perhaps our vacant room; though more remov'd,  
Lest heav'n surcharg'd with potent multitude 835  
Might hap to move new broils. Be this, or ought  
Than this more secret, now design'd, I haste  
To know: and this once known, shall soon return  
And bring ye to the place where Thou, and DEATH  
Shall dwell at ease, and up and down unseen 840

Win



Wing silently the buxom air, imbalm'd  
With odors: there ye shall be fed, and fill'd  
Immeasurably, all things shall be your prey.

He ceas'd, for both seem'd highly pleas'd, and  
Grinn'd horrible a ghastly smile, to hear 846  
His famine should be fill'd; and blest his maw  
Destin'd to that good hour: no less rejoic'd  
His mother bad, and thus bespake her fire:

The key of this infernal pit by due, 850  
And by command of heav'n's all-pow'rful King,  
I keep; by Him forbidden to unlock  
These adamant gates; against all force  
DEATH ready stands to interpose his dart,  
Fearless to be o'ermatch'd by living might. 855

But what owe I to His commands above  
Who hates me, and hath hither thrust me down  
Into this gloom of TARTARUS profound,  
To sit in hateful office here confin'd,  
Inhabitant of heav'n, and heav'nly-born, 860  
Here in perpetual agony, and pain,  
With terrors, and with clamors compass'd round,  
Of

*PARADISE LOST.* Book II.

Of mine own brood, that on my bowels feed?  
Thou art my father, thou my author, thou  
My Being gav'st me; whom should I obey 865  
But thee? whom follow? thou wilt bring me soon  
To that new world of light and bliss, among  
The Gods who live at ease, where I shall reign  
At thy right hand voluptuous, as beseems  
Thy daughter, and thy darling, without end. 870

Thus saying, from her side the fatal key,  
Sad instrument of all our woe! she took;  
And tow'rs the gate rolling her bestial train,  
Forthwith the huge portcullis high up-drew;  
Which but her self, not all the *STRYGIAN* Pow'rs 875  
Could once have mov'd; then in the key-hole turns  
Th' intricate wards, and every bolt and bar  
Of massy iron, or solid rock, with ease  
Unfastens: on a sudden open fly,  
With impetuous recoil, and jarring sound, 880  
Th' infernal doors, and on their hinges grate  
Harsh thunder, that the lowest bottom shook  
Of *EREBUS*. She open'd, but to shut  
Excell'd her pow'r; the gates wide open stood,

That



That with extended wings a banner'd host, 885  
Under spread ensigns marching, might pass through  
With horse, and chariots, rank'd in loose array,  
So wide they stood! and, like a furnace mouth,  
Cast forth redounding smoke, and ruddy flame.

Before their eyes in sudden view appear 890

The secrets of the hoary Deep; a dark  
Illimitable ocean! without bound,

[height,  
Without dimension; where length, breadth, and

And time, and place are lost; where eldest NIGHT

And CHAOS, ancestors of Nature, hold 895

Eternal anarchy, amidst the noise

Of endless wars, and by confusion stand:

For, hot, cold, moist, and dry, four champions fierce,

Strive here for mastery, and to battle bring

Their embryon atoms; they around the flag 900

Of each his faction, in their several clans,

Light-arm'd, or heavy, sharp, smooth, swift, or slow,

Swarm populous, un-number'd as the sands

Of BARCA, or CYRENE's torrid soil,

Levy'd to side with warring winds, and poise 905

Their lighter wings. To whom these most adhere,

He rules a moment: CHAOS umpire sits,

G

And

And by decision more embroils the fray,  
 By which he reigns: next him high arbiter  
 CHANCE governs all. Into this wild abyfs, 91  
 (The womb of nature, and perhaps her grave)  
 Of neither sea, nor shoar, nor air, nor fire,  
 But all these in their pregnant causes mix'd,  
 Confus'dly, and which thus must ever fight,  
 (Unless th' Almighty Maker them ordain 92  
 His dark materials to create more worlds)  
 Into this wild abyfs the wary fiend  
 Stood on the brink of hell, and look'd a-while,  
 Pond'ring his voyage; (for no narrow frith  
 He had to cross): nor was his ear less peal'd 93  
 With noises loud, and ruinous, (to compare  
 Great things with small) than when BELLONA storm'd  
 With all her batt'ring engines bent to rase  
 Some capital city; or less than if this frame  
 Of heav'n were falling, and these elements 94  
 In mutiny had from her axle torn  
 The steadfast earth. At last his sail-broad vans  
 He spreads for flight, and in the furling smoke  
 Up-lifted spurns the ground: thence many a leagu 95  
 As in a cloudy chair, ascending rides



Audacious; but that feat soon failing, meets  
A vast vacuity : all unawares  
91 Flutt'ring his pennons vain, plumb down he drops  
Ten thousand fathom deep: and to this hour  
Down had been falling, had not by ill chance 935  
The strong rebuff of some tumultuous cloud,  
Instinct with fire and nitre, hurried him  
91 As many miles aloft: that fury stay'd,  
Quench'd in a boggy Syrtis, neither sea, 939  
Nor good dry land, nigh founder'd on he fares,  
e, Treading the crude consistence, half on foot,  
Half flying; behooves him now both oar and sail.  
91 As when a gryfon, through the wilderness  
With winged course o'er hill, or moory dale,  
orms Pursues the ARIMASPIAN, who by stealth 945  
Had from his wakeful custody purloin'd  
The guarded gold: so eagerly the fiend [rare,  
91 O'er bog or steep, through strait, rough, dense, or  
With head, hands, wings, or feet, pursues his way;  
s And swims, or sinks, or wades, or creeps, or flies.  
oke At length a universal hubbub wild 951  
eagu Of stunning sounds, and voices all confus'd,  
93 Born through the hollow dark assaults his ear

With loudest vehemence: thither he plies,  
 Undaunted to meet there whatever Pow'r, 955  
 Or spirit, of the nethermost abyfs,  
 Might in that noise reside, of whom to ask  
 Which way the nearest coast of darknes lies,  
 Bordering on light: when strait behold the throne  
 Of CHAOS, and his dark pavilion spread 960  
 Wide on the wasteful Deep: with him inthron'd  
 Sat fable-vested NIGHT, eldest of things,  
 The consort of his reign: and by them stood  
 ORCHUS, and ADES, and the dreaded name  
 Of DEMOGORGON: RUMOR next, and CHANCE, 965  
 And TUMULT, and CONFUSION all imbroid'd,  
 And DISCORD with a thousand various mouths,  
 T' whom SATAN turning boldly, thus—Ye Pow'rs,  
 And spirits, of this nethermost abyfs,  
 CHAOS, and ANTIENT NIGHT! I come no spy  
 With purpose to explore, or to disturb, 970  
 The secrets of your realm; but by constraint  
 Wand'ring this darksome desert, as my way  
 Lies through your spacious empire up to light,  
 Alone, and without guide, half lost, I seek 975  
 What readiest path leads where your gloomy bound



Confine with heav'n : or if some other place  
 From your dominion won, th' ethereal King  
 Possesses lately, thither to arrive  
 I travel this Profound : direct my course; 980  
 Directed, no mean recompense it brings  
 To your behoof : if I that region lost,  
 All usurpation thence expell'd, reduce  
 To her original darkness, and your sway, 984  
 (Which is my present journey) and once more  
 Erect the standard there of ANTIENT NIGHT;  
 Yours be th' advantage all, mine the revenge!

Thus SATAN; and him thus the anarch old,  
 With fault'ring speech, and visage incompos'd,  
 Answer'd. I know thee, stranger, who thou art,  
 That mighty leading Angel, who of late 991  
 Made head against heav'n's King, tho' overthrown.  
 I saw, and heard ; for such a num'rous host  
 Fled not in silence through the frighted Deep,  
 With ruin upon ruin, rout on rout, 995  
 Confusion worse confounded; and heav'n-gates  
 Pour'd out by millions her victorious bands  
 Pursuing. I upon my frontiers here

Keep residence; if all I can will serve,  
That little which is left so to defend, 1000  
Encroach'd on still through our intestine broiles,  
Weak'ning the sceptre of old NIGHT: first hell,  
Your dungeon, stretching far and wide beneath:  
Now lately heav'n, and earth, another world  
Hung o'er my realm, link'd in a golden chain, 1005  
To that side heav'n from whence your legions fell.  
If that way be your walk, you have not far;  
So much the nearer danger: go, and speed!  
Havoc, and spoil, and ruin are my gain.

He ceas'd, and SATAN staid not to reply, 1010  
But glad that now his sea should find a shore,  
With fresh alacrity, and force renew'd,  
Springs upward, like a pyramid of fire,  
Into the wild expanse; and through the shock  
Of fighting elements, on all sides round 1015  
Environ'd, wins his way: harder beset,  
And more endanger'd, than when ARGO pass'd  
Through BOSPHORUS, betwixt the jostling rocks:  
Or when ULYSSES on the Larboard shunn'd  
CHARYBDIS and by th' other whirlpool steer'd. 1020



So he with difficulty, and labor hard  
 Mov'd on: with difficulty and labor he ;  
 But he once past, soon after, when man fell,  
 Strange alteration! *SIN*, and *DEATH*, a-main  
 Following his track (such was the will of heav'n!)  
 Pav'd after him a broad and beaten way 1026  
 Over the dark abyss, whose boiling gulf  
 Tamely endur'd a bridge of wond'rous length,  
 From hell continu'd, reaching th' utmost orb  
 Of this frail world; by which the spirits perverse  
 With easie intercourse pass to and fro, 1031  
 To tempt or punish mortals, except whom  
 God and good Angels guard by special grace.

But now at last the sacred influence  
 Of light appears, and from the walls of heav'n  
 Shoots far into the bosom of dim night 1036  
 A glimmering dawn: here Nature first begins  
 Her farthest verge, and *CHAOS* to retire,  
 As from her outmost works a broken foe,  
 With tumult less, and with less hostile din; 1040  
 That *SATAN* with less toil, and now with ease,  
 Wafts on the calmer wave by dubious light;

And like a weather-beaten vessel holds  
Gladly the port, though shrouds and tackle torn:  
Or in the emptier waste, resembling air, 1045  
Weighs his spread wings, at leisure to behold  
Far off th'empyrean heav'n, extended wide  
In circuit, undetermin'd square or round:  
With opal tow'rs, and battlements adorn'd  
Of living saphir, (once his native seat!) 1050  
And fast by, hanging in a golden chain,  
This pendent world, in bigness as a star  
Of smallest magnitude, close by the moon.  
Thither full fraught with mischievous revenge,  
Accurs'd, and in a curst hour he hies. 1055

*The end of the second Book.*



20 JY 63

THE



THE  
THIRD BOOK  
OF  
PARADISE LOST.



## The ARGUMENT.

**GOD** sitting on his throne sees Satan flying towards this world, then newly created; shews him to the **SON** who sat at his right hand; foretells the success of Satan in perverting mankind: clears his own justice and wisdom from all imputation, having created Man free, and able enough to have withstood his tempter; yet declares his purpose of grace towards him, in regard he fell not of his own malice, as did Satan, but by him seduc'd. The **SON** of **GOD** renders praises to his **FATHER** for the manifestation of his gracious purpose towards Man; but **GOD** again declares, that grace cannot be extended towards Man without the satisfaction of divine justice; Man hath offended the majesty of **GOD** by aspiring to Godhead, and therefore with all his progeny devoted to death must die, unless some one can be found sufficient to answer for his offense, and undergo his punishment. The **SON** of **GOD** freely offers himself a ransom for Man: the **FATHER** accepts him, ordains his incarnation, pronounces his exaltation above all names in heav'n and earth; commands all the Angels to adore him; they obey, and hymning to their harps in full choir, celebrate the **FATHER** and the **SON**. Mean while **SATAN** alights upon the bare convex of this world's outermost orb; where wandring he first finds a place, since call'd the Limbo of Vanity; what persons and things fly up thither; thence comes to the gate of heaven, describ'd ascending by stairs, and the waters above the firmament that flow about it: his passage thence to the orb of the sun: he finds there Uriel the regent of that orb; but first changes himself into the shape of a meaner Angel; and pretending a zealous desire to behold the new creation, and Man whom **GOD** hath plac'd here, inquires of him the place of his habitation, and is directed; alights first on mount Niphates.



ld,  
his  
ing  
m-  
to  
of  
ea-  
D  
ion  
in  
an  
of-  
nd  
ie,  
his  
D  
R  
al-  
eds  
to  
nd  
n-  
rft  
at  
he  
he  
af-  
iel  
he  
ire  
th  
m,







---

---

# PARADISE LOST.

---



---

## B O O K III.

---

**H**Ail holy light, offspring of heav'n first-born!  
 Or of th' eternal co-eternal beam!  
 May I express thee unblam'd? since **GOD** is light,  
 And never but in unapproach'd light  
 Dwelt from eternity; dwelt then in thee, 5  
 Bright effluence of bright essence increate!  
 Or hear'ft thou rather pure ethereal stream,  
 Whose fountain who shall tell? Before the sun,  
 Before the heav'ns thou wert, and at the voice  
 Of **GOD**, as with a mantle didst invest 10  
 The rising world of waters dark and deep,  
 Won from the void and formless Infinite.  
 Thee

Thee I re-visit now with bolder wing,  
 Escap'd the STRYGIAN pool, tho' long detain'd  
 In that obscure sojourn; while in my flight 15  
 Through utter and through middle darkness born,  
 With other notes than to th' ORPHEAN lyre,  
 I sung of CHAOS, and eternal NIGHT;  
 Taught by the heav'nly Muse to venture down  
 The dark descent, and up to re-ascend, 20  
 Tho' hard, and rare! Thee I re-visit safe,  
 And feel thy sov'reign vital lamp: but thou  
 Re-visit'ft not these eyes, that rowl in vain  
 To find thy piercing ray, and find no dawn;  
 So thick a *Drop Serene* hath quench'd their orbs,  
 Or dim suffusion veil'd! Yet not the more 26  
 Cease I to wander, where the Muses haunt  
 Clear spring, or shady grove, or sunny hill,  
 Smit with the love of sacred song: but chief  
 Thee SION, and the flow'ry brooks beneath, 30  
 That wash thy hallow'd feet, and warbling flow,  
 Nightly I visit: nor sometimes forget  
 Those other two equal'd with me in fate,  
 (So were I equal'd with them in renown!)  
 Blind THAMYRIS, and blind MÆONIDES: 35

And



And *TIRESIAS*, and *PHINEUS*, Prophets old.  
Then feed on thoughts, that voluntary move  
Harmonious Numbers; as the wakeful bird  
Sings darkling, and in shadieſt covert hid  
Tunes her nocturnal note. Thus with the year  
Seasons return; but not to me returns 41  
Day, or the ſweet approach of ev'n or morn,  
Or ſight of vernal bloom, or ſummer's roſe,  
Or flocks, or herds, or human face divine:  
But cloud inſtead, and ever-during dark 45  
Surrounds me! from the chearful ways of men  
Cut off; and for the book of knowledge fair,  
Preſented with a univerſal blank  
Of nature's works, to me expung'd and raſ'd,  
And wiſdom at one entrance quite ſhut out! 50  
So much the rather thou, coeleſtial light!  
Shine inward, and the mind through all her pow'rs  
Irradiate; there plant eyes; all miſt from thence  
Purge, and diſperſe; that I may ſee and tell  
Of things inviſible to mortal ſight. 55

Now had th' Almighty *FATHER* from above,  
From the pure empyrean where He ſits

High

High thron'd above all height) bent down His eye,  
 His own works and their works at once to view.  
 About Him all the Sanctities of heav'n 60  
 Stood thick as stars, and from His sight receiv'd  
 Beatitude past utterance: on His right  
 The radiant image of His glory sat,  
 His only SON. On earth He first beheld  
 Our two first parents (yet the only two 65  
 Of mankind) in the happy garden plac'd,  
 Reaping immortal fruits of joy and love;  
 Uninterrupted joy, unrival'd love,  
 In blissful solitude. He then survey'd  
 Hell, and the gulf between, and SATAN there 70  
 Coasting the wall of heav'n on this side night,  
 In the dun air sublime; and ready now  
 To stoop with wearied wings, and willing feet,  
 On the bare outside of this world, that seem'd  
 Firm land imbosom'd without firmament; 75  
 Uncertain which, in ocean, or in air.  
 Him GOD beholding from His prospect high,  
 Wherein past, present, future He beholds,  
 Thus to his only SON foreseeing spake.



Book III. *PARADISE LOST.* 95

Only begotten SON ! see'st thou what rage 80  
Transports our adversary, whom no bounds  
Prescrib'd, no bars of hell, nor all the chains  
Heap'd on him there, nor yet the main abyss  
Wide-interrupt, can hold ? So bent he seems  
On desperate revenge, that shall redound 85  
Upon his own rebellious head. And now  
Through all restraint broke loose, he wings his way  
Not far off heav'n, in the precincts of light,  
Directly towards the new-created world,  
And man there plac'd ; with purpose to assay 90  
If him by force he can destroy, or worse,  
By some false guile pervert : and shall pervert ;  
For man will heark'n to his glozing lies,  
And easily transgress the sole command,  
Sole pledge of his obedience : so will fall, 95  
He, and his faithless progeny. Whose fault ?  
Whose but his own ? Ingrate ! he had of me  
All he could have : I made him just, and right ;  
Sufficient to have stood, though free to fall. 99  
Such I created all th' ethereal Pow'rs, [fail'd :  
And spirits, both them who stood, and them who  
Freely they stood who stood, and fell who fell.  
Not

Not free, what proof could they have giv'n sincere  
 Of true allegiance, constant faith, or love, 104  
 Where only what they needs must do, appear'd;  
 Not, what they would? What praise could they re-  
 What pleasure I from such obedience paid, [ceive?  
 When will and reason (reason also is choice)  
 Useless and vain, of freedom both despoil'd,  
 Made passive both, and serv'd necessity, 110  
 Not Me? They therefore, as to right belong'd,  
 So were created, nor can justly accuse  
 Their Maker, or their making, or their fate:  
 As if predestination over-rul'd  
 Their will, dispos'd by absolute decree, 115  
 Or high fore-knowledge. They themselves decreed  
 Their own revolt, not I: if I fore-knew,  
 Fore-knowledge had no influence on their fault,  
 Which had no less prov'd certain unforeknown.  
 So without least impulse, or shadow of fate, 120  
 Or ought by Me immutably foreseen,  
 They trespass; authors to themselves in all,  
 Both what they judge, and what they choose; for so  
 I form'd them free, and free they must remain,  
 'Till they inthrall themselves; I else must change  
 Their



Their nature, and revoke the high decree 126  
 Unchangeable, eternal, which ordain'd  
 Their freedom; they themselves ordain'd their fall.  
 The first sort by their own suggestion fell,  
 Self-tempted, self-deprav'd: man falls, deceiv'd 130  
 By th' other first: Man therefore shall find grace;  
 The other none: in mercy and justice both,  
 Through heav'n and earth, so shall my glory excel;  
 But mercy, first and last, shall brightest shine.

Thus while GOD spake, ambrosial fragrance fill'd  
 All heav'n, and in the blessed spirits elect 136  
 Sense of new joy ineffable diffus'd.  
 Beyond compare the SON of GOD was seen  
 Most glorious; in Him all His FATHER shon  
 Substantially express'd; and in His Face 140  
 Divine compassion visibly appear'd,  
 Love without end, and without measure grace;  
 Which uttering, thus He to His FATHER spake.

O FATHER! gracious was that word which clos'd  
 Thy sov'reign sentence, that man should find grace;  
 For which both heav'n and earth shall high extol 146

H

Thy

Thy praises, with th' innumerable sound  
 Of hymns, and sacred songs, wherewith thy throne  
 Encompass'd shall resound thee ever blest.  
 For should man finally be lost, should man 150  
 Thy creature late so lov'd, thy youngest son,  
 Fall circumvented thus by fraud, tho' join'd  
 With his own folly? That be from thee far,  
 That far be from thee, FATHER, who art judge  
 Of all things made, and judgest only right. 155  
 Or shall the adversary thus obtain  
 His end, and frustrate thine; shall he fulfil  
 His malice, and thy goodness bring to nought,  
 Or proud return (though to his heavier doom,)  
 Yet, with revenge accomplish'd, and to hell 160  
 Draw after him the whole race of mankind,  
 By him corrupted? Or wilt thou thy self  
 Abolish thy creation, and unmake  
 For him, what for thy glory thou hast made?  
 So should thy goodness, and thy greatness, both 165  
 Be question'd, and blasphem'd without defense.

To whom the great Creator thus reply'd.  
 O SON, in whom my soul hath chief delight,

SON



SON of my bosom, SON who art alone  
 My word, my wisdom, and effectual might! 170  
 All hast thou spoken as My thoughts are, all  
 As My eternal purpose hath decreed.  
 Man shall not quite be lost, but sav'd who will;  
 Yet not of will in him, but grace in Me  
 Freely vouchsaf'd: once more I will renew 175  
 His lapsed pow'rs, though forfeit, and inthrall'd  
 By sin to foul exorbitant desires:  
 Upheld by Me, yet once more he shall stand  
 On even ground against his mortal foe:  
 By Me upheld, that he may know how frail 180  
 His fall'n condition is, and to Me owe  
 All his deliv'rance, and to none but Me.  
 Some I have chosen of peculiar grace  
 Elect above the rest: so is My will:  
 The rest shall hear Me call, and oft be warn'd 185  
 Their sinful state, and to appease betimes  
 Th' incens'd Deity, while offer'd grace  
 Invites: for I will clear their senses dark,  
 What may suffice, and soften stony hearts  
 To pray, repent, and bring obedience due. 190  
 To pray'r, repentance, and obedience due,

H 2

Though

(Though but endeavour'd with sincere intent)  
 Mine ear shall not be slow, Mine eye not shut,  
 And I will place within them as a guide 194  
 My umpire CONSCIENCE; whom if they will hear,  
 Light after light well us'd they shall attain,  
 And to the end persisting, safe arrive.  
 This My long sufferance, and My day of grace,  
 They who neglect and scorn, shall never taste;  
 But hard be harden'd, blind be blinded more; 200  
 That they may stumble on, and deeper fall:  
 And none but such from mercy I exclude.  
 But yet all is not done: Man disobeying,  
 Disloyal breaks his fealty, and sins  
 Against the high supremacy of heav'n, 205  
 Affecting God-head, and so losing all,  
 To expiate his treason hath nought left:  
 But to destruction sacred, and devote,  
 He with his whole posterity must die;  
 Die he or Justice must; unless for him 210  
 Some other able, and as willing, pay  
 The rigid satisfaction, death for death.  
 Say, heav'nly Pow'rs, where shall we find such love?  
 Which of ye will be mortal to redeem

Man's



Man's mortal crime: and just, th' unjust to save?  
Dwells in all heaven charity so dear? 216

He ask'd, but all the heav'nly choir stood mute,  
And silence was in heav'n: on man's behalf  
Patron, or intercessor, none appear'd ;  
Much less that durst upon his own head draw 220  
The deadly forfeiture, and ransom set.  
And now, without redemption all mankind  
Must have been lost, adjudg'd to death and hell  
By doom severe, had not the SON of GOD,  
(In whom the fulness dwells of love divine,) 225  
His dearest mediation thus renew'd.

FATHER! thy word is past, Man shall find grace:  
And shall grace not find means, that finds her way,  
The speediest of thy winged messengers,  
To visit all thy creatures, and to all 230  
Comes unprevented, unimplor'd, unfought?  
Happy for Man, so coming! He her aid  
Can never seek, (once dead in sins, and lost)  
Attonement for himself, or offering meet,  
(Indebted, and undone!) hath none to bring. 235

Behold Me then! Me for him, life for life  
 I offer, on Me let thine anger fall;  
 Account Me Man: I for his sake will leave  
 Thy bosom, and this glory next to Thee  
 Freely put off, and for him lastly die 240  
 Well pleas'd, on Me let DEATH wreak all his rage,  
 Under his gloomy pow'r I shall not long  
 Lie vanquish'd; Thou hast giv'n me to possess  
 Life in My self for ever; by Thee I live,  
 Though now to DEATH I yield, and am his due 245  
 All that of Me can die; yet that debt paid,  
 Thou wilt not leave Me in the loathsome grave  
 His prey, nor suffer My unspotted soul  
 For ever with corruption there to dwell:  
 But I shall rise victorious, and subdue 250  
 My vanquisher, spoil'd of his vaunted spoil:  
 Death his death's wound shall then receive, and  
 Inglorious, of his mortal sting disarm'd. [stoop  
 I through the ample air in triumph high  
 Shall lead hell captive, maugre hell! and show 255  
 The Pow'rs of darkness bound. Thou at the sight  
 Pleas'd, out of heaven shalt look down, and smile;  
 While by Thee rais'd I ruin all My foes,

DEATH



DEATH last, and with his carcase glut the grave;  
 Then, with the multitude of My redeem'd 260  
 Shall enter heav'n long absent, and return,  
 FATHER! to see Thy face, wherein no cloud  
 Of anger shall remain; but peace assur'd  
 And reconcilment: wrath shall be no more  
 Thenceforth, but in Thy presence joy entire. 265

His words here ended, but His meek aspect  
 Silent yet spake, and breath'd immortal love  
 To mortal men, above which only shon  
 Filial obedience: as a sacrifice  
 Glad to be offer'd, he attends the will 270  
 Of His great FATHER. Admiration seiz'd  
 All heav'n, what this might mean, and whither tend  
 Wond'ring; but soon th' Almighty thus reply'd:

O Thou in heav'n and earth the only peace  
 Found out for mankind under wrath! O Thou 275  
 My sole complacence! well Thou know'st how dear  
 To Me are all My works, nor Man the least  
 Though last created; that for him I spare  
 Thee from My bosom, and right hand, to save

(By losing Thee a-while) the whole race lost. 280  
 Thou therefore whom thou only canst redeem,  
 Their nature also to Thy nature join;  
 And be Thy self Man among men on earth,  
 Made flesh, when time shall be, of virgin-feed,  
 By wond'rous birth: be Thou in ADAM's room 285  
 The head of all mankind, though ADAM's son.  
 As in him perish all men, so in Thee,  
 As from a second root, shall be restor'd  
 As many as are restor'd, without Thee none.  
 His crime makes guilty all his sons; Thy merit  
 Imputed shall absolve them who renounce 291  
 Their own both righteous, and unrighteous, deeds:  
 And live in Thee transplanted, and from Thee  
 Receive new life. So man, as is most just,  
 Shall satisfy for man, be judg'd, and die; 295  
 And dying rise, and rising with Him raise  
 His brethren, ransom'd with His own dear life.  
 So, heav'nly love shall outdo hellish hate  
 Giving to death, and dying to redeem,  
 So dearly to redeem what hellish hate 300  
 So easily destroy'd, and still destroys  
 In those who, when they may, accept not grace.

Nor



Nor shalt Thou by descending to assume  
 Man's nature, lessen or degrade Thine own.  
 Because Thou hast (tho' thron'd in highest bliss  
 Equal to GOD, and equally enjoying 306  
 God-like fruition) quitted all, to save  
 A world from utter loss, and hast been found  
 By merit more than birthright SON of GOD:  
 Found worthiest to be so by being good, 310  
 Far more than great, or high; because in Thee  
 Love hath abounded more than glory abounds;  
 Therefore Thy humiliation shall exalt  
 With Thee Thy manhood also to this throne:  
 Here shalt Thou sit incarnate, here shalt reign 315  
 Both GOD and MAN, SON both of GOD and MAN,  
 Anointed Universal King; all pow'r  
 I give Thee, reign for ever, and assume  
 Thy merits: under Thee, as head supreme 319  
 Thrones, Princedoms, Pow'rs, Dominions I reduce:  
 All knees to Thee shall bow, of them that 'bide  
 In heav'n, or earth, or under earth in hell;  
 When Thou attended gloriously from heav'n  
 Shalt in the sky appear, and from Thee send  
 The summoning Arch-Angels to proclaim 325  
 Thy

Thy dread tribunal: forthwith from all winds  
 The living, and forthwith the cited dead  
 Of all past ages, to the general doom  
 Shall hasten, such a peal shall rouse their sleep!  
 Then all thy saints assembled, thou shalt judge 330  
 Bad men, and Angels; they arraign'd shall sink  
 Beneath Thy sentence; hell (her numbers full)  
 Thenceforth shall be for ever shut. Mean-while  
 The world shall burn, and from her ashes spring  
 New heav'n and earth, wherein the just shall dwell;  
 And after all their tribulations long 336  
 See golden days, fruitful of golden deeds,  
 With joy and love triumphing, and fair truth:  
 Then Thou Thy regal sceptre shalt lay by,  
 For, regal sceptre then no more shall need; 340  
 GOD shall be All in All. But all ye Gods,  
 Adore Him, who to compass all this dies;  
 Adore the SON, and honour Him as Me.

No sooner had th' Almighty ceas'd, but all  
 The multitude of Angels with a shout 345  
 (Loud, as from numbers without number; sweet  
 As from blest voices) utt'ring joy, heav'n rung  
 With



With jubilee, and loud hosanna's fill'd  
 Th' eternal regions. Lowly reverent  
 Tow'rd either throne they bow, and to the ground  
 With solemn adoration down they cast 351  
 Their crowns, inwove with amarant, and gold,  
 Immortal amarant! a flow'r which once  
 In Paradise fast by the Tree of Life  
 Began to bloom; but soon for man's offense 355  
 To heav'n remov'd, where first it grew, there grows,  
 And flow'rs aloft shading the fount of life;  
 And where the river of bliss thro' midst of heav'n  
 Rowls o'er ELYSIAN flow'rs her amber stream:  
 With these, that never fade, the spirits elect 360  
 Bind their resplendent locks, inwreath'd with beams;  
 Now in loose garlands thick thrown off the bright  
 Pavement, that like a sea of jasper shon,  
 Impurpled with coelestial roses smil'd.  
 Then crown'd again, their golden harps they took;  
 Harps ever tun'd, that glitt'ring by their side 366  
 Like quivers hung, and with preamble sweet  
 Of charming symphony they introduce  
 Their sacred song, and waken raptures high,  
 No voice exempt; no voice but well could join  
 Melodious part, such concord is in heav'n. 371

Thee FATHER first they sung, Omnipotent,  
 Immutable, Immortal, Infinite,  
 Eternal King! Thee Author of all Being,  
 Fountain of Light, Thy self invisible  
 Amidst the glorious brightness where thou sit'st  
 Thron'd inaccessible, but when thou shad'st  
 The full blaze of thy beams, and thro' a cloud  
 Drawn round about thee like a radiant shrine,  
 Dark with excessive bright, thy skirts appear: 38  
 Yet dazle heav'n, that brightest Seraphim  
 Approach not, but with both wings veil their eyes  
 Thee next they sung of all creation first,  
 Begotten SON, Divine Similitude!  
 In whose conspicuous count'nance, without cloud  
 Made visible, th' Almighty FATHER shines, 39  
 Whom else no creature can behold: on Thee  
 Impress'd, th' effulgence of his glory abides;  
 Transfus'd on Thee his ample SPIRIT rests.  
 He heav'n of heav'ns, and all the pow'rs therein,  
 By Thee created; and by Thee threw down 39  
 Th' aspiring Dominations. Thou that day  
 Thy FATHER's dreadful thunder did'st not spare  
 Nor stop thy flaming chariot wheels, that shook  
 Heav'n's everlasting frame, while o'er the necks  
 He



Book III. *PARADISE LOST.* 109

Thou drov'st of warring Angels disarraid. 396

Back from perfuit thy Pow'rs with loud acclaim

Thee only extoll'd, SON of Thy FATHER's might,

To execute fierce vengeance on His foes ;

Not so on Man : him thro' their malice fall'n, 400

FATHER of mercy and grace ! Thou didst not doom

To strictly, but much more to pity incline.

No sooner did Thy dear and only SON,

Perceive Thee purpos'd not to doom frail man

To strictly, but much more to pity inclin'd, 405

He to appease Thy wrath, and end the strife

Of mercy and justice in Thy face discern'd,

Regardless of the blifs wherein he sat

Second to Thee, offer'd Himself to die

For Man's offense. O unexampl'd love ! 410

Love no where to be found less than Divine !

hail SON of GOD, Saviour of men ! Thy name

Shall be the copious matter of my song

Henceforth, and never shall my harp Thy praise

Forget, nor from Thy FATHER's praise disjoin. 415

Thus they in heav'n, above the starry sphear,

Their happy hours in joy and hymning spent.

Mean-

Mean-while upon the firm opacous globe  
 Of this round world, whose first convex divides  
 The luminous inferior orbs, inclos'd  
 From CHAOS, and th' inroad of darkness old,  
 SATAN alighted walks. A globe far off  
 It seem'd, now seems a boundless continent  
 Dark, waste, and wild, under the frown of night  
 Starless expos'd, and ever-threat'ning storms  
 Of CHAOS blustering round, inclement sky!  
 Save on that side which from the wall of heav'n  
 (Tho' distant far) some small reflection gains  
 Of glimm'ring air, less vex'd with tempest loud.  
 Here walk'd the fiend at large in spacious field.  
 As when a vultur on IMAUS bred,  
 (Whose snowy ridge the roving TARTAR bounds)  
 Dislodging from a region scarce of prey,  
 To gorge the flesh of lambs, and weanling kids,  
 On hills where flocks are fed, flies tow'rd the spring  
 Of GANGES, or HYDASPES, (INDIAN streams)  
 But in his way lights on the barren plains  
 Of SERICANA, where CHINESES drive  
 With sails and wind their cany waggons light:  
 So on this windy sea of land, the fiend

Walk



Book III. *PARADISE LOST.* III

Walk'd up and down alone, bent on his prey ;  
Alone, for other creature in this place  
Living, or liveless, to be found was none ;  
None yet, but store hereafter from the earth  
Up hither like aëreal vapors flew, 445  
Of all things transitory and vain, when sin  
With vanity had fill'd the works of men :  
Both all things vain, and all who in vain things  
Built their fond hopes of glory, or lasting fame,  
Or happiness in this or th' other life : 450  
All who have their reward on earth, the fruits  
Of painful superstition, and blind zeal,  
Nought seeking but the praise of men, here find  
Fit retribution, empty as their deeds :  
All th' unaccomplish'd works of nature's hand, 455  
Abortive, monstrous, or unkindly mix'd,  
Dissolv'd on earth, fleet hither, and in vain,  
Till final dissolution, wander here :  
Not in the neighb'ring moon, as some have dream'd ;  
Those argent fields more likely habitants, 460  
Translated faints, or middle spirits hold,  
(Betwixt th' angelical and human kind)  
Hither, of ill-join'd sons and daughters born,

First

First from the antient world those giants came,  
With many a vain exploit, tho' then renown'd:  
The builders next of BABEL on the plain 466  
Of SENNAAR, and still with vain design  
New BABELS, had they wherewithal, would build:  
Others came single; he who to be deem'd  
A God, leap'd fondly into ÆTNA flames, 470  
EMPEDOCLES: and he who to enjoy  
PLATO'S ELYSIUM, leap'd into the sea,  
CLEOMBROTUS: and many more too long,  
Embryoes, and idiots, eremits, and friars 474  
*White, Black, and Grey*, with all their trumpery:  
Here Pilgrims roam, that stray'd so far to seek  
In GOLGOTHA Him dead, Who lives in heav'n:  
And they who to be sure of Paradise,  
Dying put on the weeds of DOMINIC,  
Or in FRANCISCAN think to pass disguis'd; 480  
They pass the Planets sev'n, and pass the Fix'd,  
And that chrySTALLINE sphere whose ballance weigh  
The Trepidation talk'd, and that First-mov'd:  
And now saint PETER at heav'n's wicket seems  
To wait them with his keys, and now at foot 485  
Of heav'n's ascent they lift their feet: when lo!



A violent cross-wind from either coast  
 Blows them transverse, ten thousand leagues awry  
 Into the devious Air: then might ye see  
 Cowles, hoods, and habits, with their wearers, tost,  
 And flutter'd into rags: then Reliques, Beads, 491  
 Indulgences, Dispenses, Pardons, Bulls,  
 The sport of winds! All these up-whirl'd aloft  
 Fly o'er the backside of the world far off,  
 Into a Limbo large, and broad, since call'd 495  
 The Paradise of Fools; to few unknown  
 Long after: now unpeopl'd, and untrod.  
 All this dark globe the fiend found as he pass'd;  
 And long he wander'd, till at last a gleam  
 Of dawning light turn'd thither-ward in haste 500  
 His travel'd steps: far distant he descries,  
 Ascending by degrees magnificent  
 Up to the wall of heav'n, a structure high;  
 At top whereof, but far more rich, appear'd  
 The work as of a kingly palace-gate, 505  
 With frontispiece of diamond, and gold,  
 Embellish'd; thick with sparkling orient gems  
 The portal shon, inimitable on earth,  
 By model, or by shading pencil, drawn.

The stairs were such as whereon J A C O B saw 510  
 Angels, ascending and descending, bands  
 Of guardians bright, when he from E S A U fled  
 To P A D A N-A R A M in the field of L U Z,  
 Dreaming by night under the open sky,  
 And waking cry'd, *This is the gate of heav'n.* 515  
 Each stair mysteriously was meant, nor stood  
 There always, but drawn up to heav'n sometimes  
 Viewless, and, underneath, a bright sea flow'd  
 Of jasper, or of liquid pearl, whereon  
 Who after came from earth, sailing arriv'd, 520  
 Wafted by Angels, or flew o'er the lake  
 Rap'd in a chariot drawn by fiery steeds.  
 The stairs were then let down, whether to dare  
 The fiend by easie ascent, or aggravate  
 His sad exclusion from the doors of bliss: 525  
 Direct against which open'd from beneath,  
 Just o'er the blissful seat of Paradise,  
 A passage down to th' earth, a passage wide,  
 (Wider by far than that of after-times  
 Over mount S I O N, and, though that were large,  
 Over the P R O M I S' D L A N D to G O D so dear, 531  
 By which, to visit oft those happy tribes,



On high behests his Angels to and fro  
 Pass'd frequent, and his eye with choice regard,  
 From PANEAS, the fount of JORDAN'S flood, 535  
 To BEERSABA, where the HOLY LAND  
 Borders on ÆGYPT, and th' ARABIAN shore)  
 So wide the opening seem'd, where bounds were  
 To darkness, such as bound the ocean wave. [set  
 SATAN from hence, now on the lower stair, 540  
 That scal'd by steps of gold to heaven-gate,  
 Looks down with wonder at the sudden view  
 Of all this world at once. As when a scout,  
 Thro' dark and desert ways with peril gone  
 All night, at last by break of chearful dawn 545  
 Obtains the brow of some high-climbing hill,  
 Which to his eye discovers un-aware  
 The goodly prospect of some foreign land,  
 First seen; or some renown'd metropolis,  
 With glistering spires and pinnacles adorn'd, 550  
 Which now the rising sun gilds with his beams:  
 Such wonder seiz'd, though after heaven seen,  
 The spirit malign; but much more envy feis'd  
 At sight of all this world beheld so fair.  
 Round he surveys (and well might, where he stood

So high above the circling canopy  
 Of night's extended shade) from eastern point  
 Of *LIBRA*, to the fleecy star, that bears  
*ANDROMEDA* far off *ATLANTIC* seas,  
 Beyond th' horizon: then, from Pole to Pole 560  
 He views in breadth; and without longer pause  
 Down right into the world's first region throws  
 His flight precipitant, and winds with ease  
 Through the pure marble air his oblique way,  
 Amongst innumerable stars, that shon! 565  
 Stars distant, but nigh hand seem'd other worlds:  
 Or other worlds they seem'd, or happy isles,  
 Like those *HESPERIAN* gardens fam'd of old,  
 Fortunate fields, and groves, and flow'ry vales;  
 Thrice happy isles! But who dwelt happy there  
 He stay'd not to inquire. Above them all 571  
 The golden sun, in splendor likest heav'n,  
 Allur'd his eye: thither his course he bends  
 Through the calm firmament: but, up or down,  
 By centre or eccentric, hard to tell; 575  
 Or longitude, where the great luminary  
 Aloft the vulgar constellations thick,  
 That from his lordly eye keep distance due,



Dispenses light from far; they as they move 579  
 Their starry dance in numbers that compute [Lamp  
 Days, months and years, tow'rd his all-cheering  
 Turn swift their various motions, or are turn'd  
 By his magnetic beam, that gently warms  
 The universe, and to each inward part  
 With gentle penetration, though unseen, 585  
 Shoots invisible virtue even to the Deep;  
 So wondrously was set his station bright!  
 There lands the fiend, a spot like which perhaps  
 Astronomer in the sun's lucent orb 589  
 Through his glaz'd optic tube yet never saw.  
 The place he found beyond expression bright,  
 Compar'd with ought on earth, metal, or stone:  
 Not all parts like, but all alike inform'd  
 With radiant light, as glowing iron with fire;  
 If metal, part seem'd gold, part silver clear: 595  
 If stone, carbuncle most, or chrysolite,  
 Ruby, or topaz; or the twelve that shon  
 In AARON's breast-plate: and a stone besides  
 (Imagin'd rather oft than elsewhere seen)  
 That stone, or like to that, which here below 600  
 Philosophers in vain so long have sought,

In vain, though by their pow'rful art they bind  
 Volatil HERMES, and call up unbound  
 In various shapes old PROTEUS from the sea,  
 Drain'd through a limbec to his naked form. 605  
 What wonder then if fields, and regions, here  
 Breathe forth elixir pure, and rivers run  
 Potable gold, when with one virtuous touch  
 Th'arch-chimic fun, so far from us remote,  
 Produces, with terrestrial humor mix'd, 610  
 Here in the dark so many pretious things  
 Of color glorious, and effect so rare?  
 Here matter new to gaze the devil met  
 Undazled; far and wide his eye commands,  
 For sight no obstacle found here, or shade, 615  
 But all sun-shine; as when his beams at noon  
 Culminate from th' Æquator; as they now  
 Shot upward still direct, whence no way round  
 Shadow from body opaque can fall, and th' air,  
 (No where so clear,) sharpen'd his visual ray 620  
 To objects distant far, whereby he soon  
 Saw within ken a glorious Angel stand,  
 The same whom JOHN saw also in the sun:  
 His back was turn'd, but not his brightness hid:



Book III. *PARADISE LOST.* 119

Of beaming sunny rays a golden tiar 625

Circl'd his head, nor less his locks behind

Illustrious on his shoulders, fledge with wings,

Lay waving round: on some great charge employ'd

He seem'd, or fixt in cogitation deep.

Glad was the spirit impure, as now in hope 630

To find who might direct his wand'ring flight

To Paradise, the happy seat of man,

His journey's end, and our beginning woe.

But first he casts to change his proper shape,

Which else might work him danger, or delay: 635

And now a stripling Cherub he appears,

Not of the prime, yet such as in his face

Youth smil'd coelestial, and to ev'ry limb

Suitable grace diffus'd, so well he feign'd.

Under a coronet his flowing hair 640

In curls on either cheek play'd; wings he wore

Of many a color'd plume, sprinkled with gold:

His habit fit for speed succinct, and held

Before his decent steps a silver wand.

He drew not high unheard, the Angel bright, 645

E'er he drew nigh, his radiant visage turn'd,

Admonish'd by his ear; and strait was known

Th' Arch-Angel *URIEL*, one of the sev'n  
 Who in *GOD*'s presence, nearest to His throne,  
 Stand ready at command, and are His eyes 650  
 That run thro' all the heav'ns, or down to th' earth  
 Bear His swift errands, over moist and dry,  
 O'er sea and land: him *SATAN* thus accosts.

*URIEL*! for thou of those sev'n spirits that stand  
 In sight of *GOD*'s high throne, gloriously bright,  
 The first art wont His great authentic will 656  
 Interpreter through highest heav'n to bring,  
 Where all His sons thy embassie attend:  
 And here art likeliest by supreme decree  
 Like honor to obtain; and as His eye, 660  
 To visit oft this new creation round:  
 Unspeakable desire to see, and know  
 All these His wondrous works, but chiefly man,  
 His chief delight, and favor; him, for whom  
 All these His works so wondrous He ordain'd, 665  
 Hath brought me from the choirs of Cherubim  
 Alone thus wandring: brightest Seraph! tell  
 In which of all these shinings orb hath man  
 His fixed seat, or fixed seat hath none,

But



But all these shining orbs his choice to dwell : 670  
 That I may find him, and with secret gaze,  
 Or open admiration, him behold  
 On whom the great Creator hath bestow'd  
 Worlds, and on whom hath all these graces pour'd :  
 That both in him, and all things, as is meet, 675  
 The universal Maker we may praise ;  
 Who justly hath driven out His rebel foes  
 To deepest hell ; and, to repair their loss,  
 Created this new happy race of men,  
 To serve Him better : wise are all His ways! 680

So spake the false dissembler unperceiv'd ;  
 For neither man, nor Angel, can discern  
 Hypocrisy (the only evil that walks  
 Invisible, except to GOD alone, 684  
 By His permissive will, through heav'n and earth :  
 And oft though wisdom wake, suspicion sleeps  
 At wisdom's gate, and to simplicity  
 Resigns her charge, while goodness thinks no ill  
 Where no ill seems) which now for once beguil'd  
 URIEL, though regent of the sun, and held 690  
 The sharpest-sighted spirit of all in heav'n :

Who to the fraudulent impostor foul,  
In his uprightness answer thus return'd.

Fair Angel! thy desire, which tends to know  
The works of GOD, thereby to glorify 695  
The great work-master, leads to no excess  
That reaches blame, but rather merits praise  
The more it seems excess, that led thee hither  
From thy empyreal mansion thus alone,  
To witness with thine eyes what some perhaps,  
Contented with report, hear only in heav'n: 701  
For wonderful indeed are all His works!  
Pleasant to know, and worthiest to be all  
Had in remembrance always with delight.  
But, what created mind can comprehend 705  
Their number, or the wisdom infinite  
That brought them forth, but hid their causes deep?  
I saw when at His word the formless mass,  
This world's material mold, came to a heap:  
Confusion heard His voice, and wild uproar 710  
Stood rul'd, stood vast infinitude confin'd:  
Till at His second bidding darkness fled,  
Light shon, and order from disorder sprung.

Swift



Swift to their several quarters hasted then  
 The cumbrous elements, earth, flood, air, fire,  
 And the ethereal quintessence of heav'n 716  
 Flew upward, spirited with various forms,  
 That rowl'd orbicular, and turn'd to stars,  
 Numberless, as thou seest, and how they move;  
 Each had his place appointed, each his course; 720  
 The rest in circuit walls this universe.  
 Look downward on that globe whose hither side  
 With light from hence, tho' but reflected, shines:  
 That place is earth, the seat of man; that light  
 His day, which else, as th' other hemisphere, 725  
 Night would invade; but there the neighb'ring moon  
 (So call that opposite fair star) her aid  
 Timely interposes, and her monthly round  
 Still ending, still renewing through mid heav'n,  
 With borrow'd light her countenance triform 730  
 Hence fills, and empties, to enlighten th' earth,  
 And in her pale dominion checks the night.  
 That spot to which I point is Paradise,  
 ADAM's abode, those lofty shades his bow'r; 734  
 Thy way thou can'st not miss, me mine requires.

Thus

Thus said, he turn'd ; and SATAN bowing low  
(As to superior spirits is wont in heav'n,  
Where honor due, and reverence, none neglects)  
Took leave, and tow'rd the coast of earth beneath  
Down from th' ecliptic, sped with hop'd success,  
Throws his steep flight in many an aery wheel;  
Nor staid, till on NIPHATES' top he lights.

*The end of the third Book.*



20 JY63

THE



---

THE  
FOURTH BOOK  
OF  
PARADISE LOST.

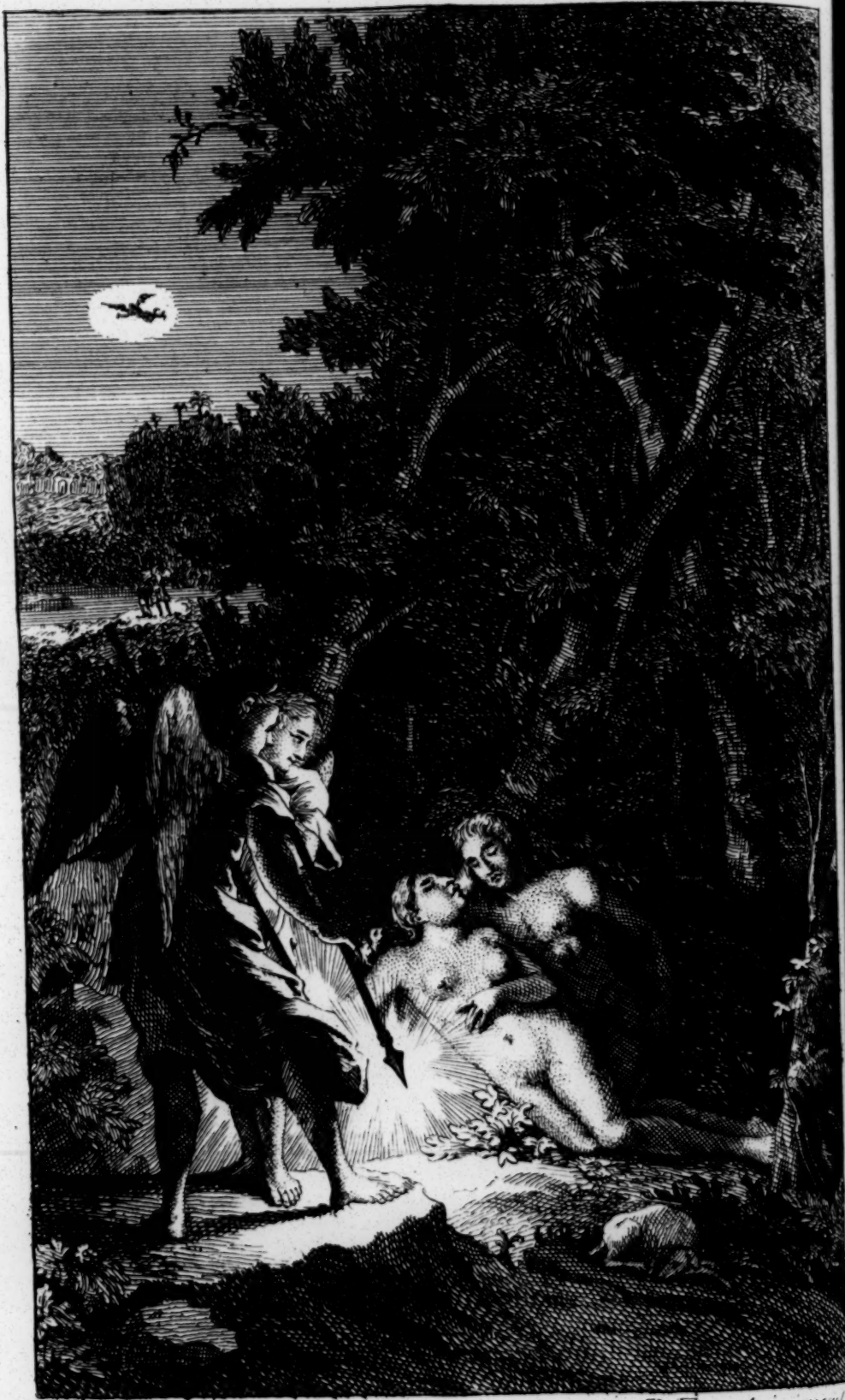


## The ARGUMENT.

Satan, now in prospect of Eden, and nigh the place where he must now attempt the bold enterprize which he undertook alone against GOD, and Man, falls into many doubts with himself, and many passions, fear, envy, and despair: but at length confirms himself in evil, journeys on to Paradise, whose outward prospect and situation is described, overleaps the bounds, sits in the shape of a cormorant on the Tree of Life, as the highest in the garden, to look about him. The garden described; Satan's first sight of Adam and Eve; his wonder at their excellent form and happy state, but with resolution to work their fall; overhears their discourse; thence gathers that the Tree of Knowledge was forbidden them to eat of, under penalty of death; and thereon intends to found his temptation, by seducing them to transgress: then leaves them a-while to know further of their state by some other means. Meanwhile Uriel descending on a sun-beam warns Gabriel (who had in charge the gate of Paradise) that some evil spirit had escaped the Deep, and past at noon by his sphere in the shape of a good Angel down to Paradise, discovered afterwards by his furious gestures in the mount: Gabriel promises to find him out e'er morning. Night comes on, Adam and Eve discourse of going to their rest: their bower described; their evening worship. Gabriel drawing forth his bands of night-watch to walk the round of Paradise, appoints two strong Angels to Adam's bower, lest the evil spirit should be there doing some harm to Adam or Eve sleeping; there they find him at the ear of Eve, tempting her in a dream, and bring him, tho' unwilling, to Gabriel; by whom question'd, he scornfully answers, prepares resistance, but, hinder'd by a sign from heav'n, flies out of Paradise.









---

---

# PARADISE LOST.

---



---

## B O O K IV.

---

O For that warning voice, which he who saw  
 Th' Apocalyps heard cry in heav'n aloud,  
 Then when the Dragon, put to second rout,  
 Came furious down to be reveng'd on men,  
*Wo to th' inhabitants on earth!* that now 5  
 While time was, our first parents had been warn'd  
 The coming of their secret foe, and scap'd  
 Haply so scap'd, his mortal snare: for now  
 SATAN, now first inflam'd with rage, came down,  
 The tempter, e'er th' accuser, of mankind,) 10  
 To wreak on innocent frail man his loss  
 Of that first battel, and his flight to hell.

Yet

Yet not rejoycing in his speed, though bold,  
 Far off and fearless, nor with cause to boast,  
 Begins his dire attempt; which nigh the birth 15  
 Now rowling, boils in his tumultuous breast,  
 And like a devilish engine back recoils  
 Upon himself: horror and doubt distract  
 His troubled thoughts; and from the bottom stir  
 The hell within him, (for within him hell 20  
 He brings, and round about him, nor from hell  
 One step, no more than from himself, can fly  
 By change of place:) now conscience wakes despair,  
 That slumber'd; wakes the bitter memory  
 Of what he was, what is, and what must be, 25  
 Worse! of worse deeds worse sufferings must ensue.  
 Sometimes tow'rds EDEN, which now in his view  
 Lay pleasant, his griev'd look he fixes sad:  
 Sometimes tow'rds heav'n, and the full blazing sun,  
 Which now sat high in his meridian tow'r: 30  
 Then much revolving, thus in sighs began.

O thou! that, with surpassing glory crown'd,  
 Look'st from thy sole dominion like the God  
 Of this new world; at whose sight all the stars

Hide



Hide their diminish'd heads; to thee I call, 35

But with no friendly voice, and add thy name,

O Sun! to tell thee how I hate thy beams,

That bring to my remembrance from what state

I fell: how glorious once above thy sphere!

Till pride, and worse ambition, threw me down, 40

Warring in heav'n against heav'n's matchless King.

Ah wherefore! He deserv'd no such return

From me, whom He created what I was,

In that bright eminence; and with his good

Upbraided none; nor was his service hard. 45

What could be less! than to afford him praise,

(The easiest recompense,) and pay him thanks:

How due! yet all his good prov'd ill in me,

And wrought but malice: lifted up so high

I disdain'd subjection, and thought one step higher

Would set me highest; and in a moment quit 51

The debt immense of endless gratitude;

So burthensome, still paying, still to owe;

Forgetful what from Him I still receiv'd:

And understood not that a grateful mind 55

By owing owes not, but still pays, at once

Indebted, and discharg'd: what burden then?

K

O

O had His pow'rful destiny ordain'd  
 Me some inferior Angel! I had stood  
 Then happy; no unbounded hope had rais'd 60  
 Ambition! Yet why not? some other Pow'r  
 As great might have aspir'd, and me though mean  
 Drawn to his part: but other Pow'rs as great  
 Fell not, but stand unshaken; from within,  
 Or from without, to all temptations arm'd. 65  
 Hadst thou the same free will, and pow'r, to stand?  
 Thou hadst! Whom hast thou then, or what, t'ac-  
 But heav'n's free love, dealt equally to all? [cuse,  
 Be then His love accurst, since love, or hate,  
 To me alike, it deals eternal woe: 70  
 Nay, curst be thou! since against His thy will  
 Chose freely what it now so justly rues.  
 Me miserable! which way shall I fly  
 Infinite wrath, and infinite despair?  
 Which way I fly is hell; my self am hell; 75  
 And, in the lowest deep, a lower deep  
 Still threat'ning to devour me opens wide;  
 To which the hell I suffer seems a heav'n.  
 O then at last relent! Is there no place  
 Left for repentance? none for pardon left? 80

None



None left, but by submission ; and that word  
*Disdain* forbids me, and my dread of shame  
 Among the spirits beneath, whom I seduc'd  
 With other promises, and other vaunts  
 Than to submit, boasting I could subdue 85  
 Th' Omnipotent. Ah me ! they little know  
 How dearly I abide that boast so vain ;  
 Under what torments inwardly I groan,  
 While they adore me on the throne of hell.  
 With diadem, and sceptre, high advanc'd, 90  
 The lower still I fall, only supreme  
 In misery ; such joy ambition finds !  
 But say I could repent, and could obtain,  
 My act of grace, my former state ; how soon 94  
 Would height recall high thoughts, how soon un-say  
 What feign'd submission swore ! ease would recant  
 Shows made in pain, as violent and void ;  
 For never can true reconcilment grow  
 Where wounds of deadly hate have pierc'd so deep)  
 Which would but lead me to a worse relapse, 100  
 And heavier fall : so should I purchase dear  
 Short intermission, bought with doubl'd smart.  
 This knows my punisher ; therefore as far

From granting He, as I from begging peace.  
 All hope excluded thus, behold! in stead 105  
 Of us out-cast, exil'd, his new delight  
 Mankind created, and for him this world.  
 So farewell hope! and with hope, farewell fear!  
 Farewell remorse! all good to me is lost:  
 Evil be thou my good! By thee at least 110  
 Divided empire with heav'n's King I hold;  
 By thee, and more than half perhaps, will reign:  
 As man e'er-long, and this new world, shall know.

Thus while he spake, each passion dimm'd his face,  
 Thrice chang'd with pale, ire, envy, and despair, 115  
 Which marr'd his borrow'd visage, and betray'd  
 Him counterfeit, if any eye beheld.  
 (For, heav'nly minds from such distempers foul  
 Are ever clear.) Whereof he soon aware, 119  
 Each perturbation smooth'd with outward calm,  
 Artificer of fraud! and was the first  
 That practis'd falshood, under faintly shew  
 Deep malice to conceal, couch'd with revenge.  
 Yet not enough had practis'd, to deceive 124  
 URIEL once warn'd; whose eye persu'd him down

The



Book IV. *PARADISE LOST.* 133

The way he went, and on th' *ASSYRIAN* mount  
Saw him disfigur'd, more than could befall  
Spirit of happy sort: his gestures fierce  
He mark'd, and mad demeanor, then alone,  
As he suppos'd, all un-observ'd, un-seen. 130

So, on he fares; and to the border comes  
Of *EDEN*, where delicious *Paradise*,  
Now nearer, crowns with her enclosure green,  
As with a rural mound, the champain head  
Of a steep wilderness; whose hairy sides 135

With thicket overgrown, grotesque, and wild,  
Access deny'd: and over head up-grew  
Insuperable height of loftiest shade,  
Cedar, and pine, and fir, and branching palm,  
A sylvan scene! and as the ranks ascend 140

Shade above shade, a woody theatre  
Of stateliest view. Yet higher than their tops  
The verdurous wall of *Paradise* up-sprung:  
Which to our general sight gave prospect large  
Into his neather empire, neighb'ring round. 145

And higher than that wall a circling row  
Of goodliest trees, loaden with fairest fruit,  
Blossoms, and fruits at once of golden hue,

K 3

Appear'd

Appear'd, with gay enamel'd colors mix'd:  
 On which the sun more glad impress'd his beams,  
 Than in fair evening cloud, or humid bow, 151  
 When God hath show'rd the earth; so lovely seem'd  
 That landscape! and of pure now purer air  
 Meets his approach; and to the heart inspires  
 Vernal delight, and joy, able to drive 155  
 All sadness, but despair: now gentle gales,  
 Fanning their odoriferous wings, dispense  
 Native perfumes, and whisper whence they stole  
 Those balmy spoils. As when to them who sail  
 Beyond the CAPE OF HOPE, and now are past  
 MOZAMBIK, off at sea north-east winds blow 160  
 SABÆAN odor, from the spicy shore  
 Of ARABY THE BLEST, with such delay [league  
 Well-pleas'd they slack their course, and many a  
 Chear'd with the grateful smell old OCEAN smiles  
 So entertain'd those odorous sweets the fiend, 165  
 Who came their bane; though with them better  
 Than ASMDEUS with the fishy fume [pleas'd  
 That drove him, though enamour'd, from the spouse  
 Of TOBIT's son, and with a vengeance sent 170  
 From MEDIA post to ÆGYPT, there fast bound

Now



Now to th' ascent of that steep savage hill  
 SATAN had journied on, pensive, and slow;  
 But further way found none, so thick entwin'd,  
 As one continu'd brake, the undergrowth 175  
 Of shrubs, and tangling bushes, had perplex'd  
 All path of man, or beast, that pass'd that way.  
 One gate there only was, and that look'd east  
 On th' other side: which when th' arch-fellon saw,  
 Due entrance he disdain'd, and in contempt 180  
 At one flight bound high over-leap'd all bound  
 Of hill, or highest wall, and sheer within  
 Lights on his feet. As when a prowling wolf,  
 Whom hunger drives to seek new haunt for prey,  
 Watching where shepherds pen their flocks at eve  
 In hurdled cotes, amid the field secure, 186  
 Leaps o'er the fence with ease into the fold:  
 Or as a thief, bent to un-hoard the cash  
 Of some rich burgher, whose substantial doors,  
 Cross-barr'd, and bolted fast, fear no assault, 190  
 In at the window climbs, or o'er the tiles:  
 So clomb this first grand thief into GOD's fold;  
 (So since into his Church lewd hirelings climb.)  
 Thence up he flew, and on the Tree of Life,

(The middle tree, and highest there that grew)  
 Sat like a cormorant ; yet not true life  
 Thereby regain'd, but sat devising death  
 To them who liv'd : nor on the virtue thought  
 Of that life-giving plant, but only us'd  
 For prospect, what well-us'd had been the pledge  
 Of immortality. (So little knows  
 Any, but GOD alone, to value right  
 The good before him, but perverts best things  
 To worst abuse, or to their meanest use.)  
 Beneath him, with new wonder, now he views,  
 To all delight of human sense expos'd  
 In narrow room, nature's whole wealth, yea more  
 A heav'n on earth ! for blissful Paradise  
 Of GOD the garden was, by him in th' east  
 Of EDEN planted ; EDEN stretch'd her line  
 From AURAN eastward to the royal tow'rs  
 Of great SELEUCIA, built by GRECIAN Kings  
 Or where the sons of EDEN long before  
 Dwelt in TELASSAR. In this pleasant soil  
 His far more pleasant garden GOD ordain'd.  
 Out of the fertile ground he caus'd to grow  
 All trees of noblest kind, for sight, smell, taste ;

And



Book IV. *PARADISE LOST.* 137

And all amid them stood the Tree of Life,  
High eminent, blooming ambrosial fruit  
Of vegetable gold: and next to life, 220  
Our death, the Tree of Knowledge, grew fast by;  
Knowledge of good bought dear by knowing ill!  
Southward through EDEN went a river large,  
Nor chang'd his course, but through the shaggy hill  
Pass'd underneath ingulf'd; for God had thrown 225  
That mountain as His garden mound, high rais'd  
Upon the rapid current, which through veins  
Of porous earth with kindly thirst up drawn,  
Rose a fresh fountain, and with many a rill  
Water'd the garden; thence united fell 230  
Down the steep glade, and met the neather flood,  
Which from his darksome passage now appears:  
And now divided into four main streams,  
Runs diverse, wandring many a famous realm  
And country, whereof here needs no account:  
But rather to tell how, (if art could tell 236  
How) from that saphire fount the crisped brooks  
Rowling on orient pearl, and sands of gold,  
With mazy error under pendent shades  
Ran Nectar, visiting each plant, and fed 240  
Flow'rs

Flow'rs worthy of Paradise, which not nice art  
 In beds, and curious knots, but nature boon  
 Pour'd forth profuse on hill, and dale, and plains  
 Both where the morning sun first warmly smote  
 The open field, and where the un-pierc'd shade 245  
 Imbrown'd the noon-tide bow'rs. Thus was this  
 A happy rural seat of various view: [place,  
 Groves whose rich trees wept od'rous gums, and  
 balm;

Others whose fruit, burnish'd with golden rind,  
 Hung amiable: *HESPERIAN* fables true, 250  
 If true, here only, and of delicious taste.  
 Betwixt them lawns, or level downs, and flocks  
 Grazing the tender herb, were interpos'd:  
 Or palmy hilloc, or the flow'ry lap  
 Of some irriguous valley spread her store; 255  
 Flow'rs of all hue, and without thorn the rose.  
 Another side, umbrageous grots, and caves  
 Of cool recess, o'er which the mantling vine  
 Lays forth her purple grape, and gently creeps  
 Luxuriant: mean-while murm'ring waters fall  
 Down the slope hills, dispers'd, or in a lake, 261  
 (That to the fringed bank with myrtle crown'd  
 Her chrystal mirror holds,) unite their streams.



The birds their choire apply: airs, vernal airs,  
 Breathing the smell of field and grove, attune  
 The trembling leaves, while universal PAN, 266  
 Knit with the GRACES, and the HOURS, in dance,  
 Led on th' eternal spring. Not that fair field  
 Of ENNA, where PROSERPINE gathering flow'rs,  
 Herself a fairer flow'r, by gloomy DIS 270  
 Was gather'd; which cost CERES all that pain  
 To seek her thro' the world: nor that sweet grove  
 Of DAPHNE by ORONTES, and th' inspir'd  
 CASTALIAN spring, might with this Paradise  
 Of EDEN strive: nor that NYSEIAN isle 275  
 Girt with the river TRITON, where old CHAM,  
 (Whom Gentiles AMMON call, and LIBYAN JOVE)  
 Hid AMALTHEA, and her florid son  
 Young BACCHUS, from his stepdame RHEA's eye:  
 Nor where ABASSIN Kings their issue guard, 280  
 Mount AMARA (though this by some suppos'd  
 True Paradise) under the ÆTHIOP Line  
 By NILUS' head, inclos'd with shining rock,  
 A whole day's journey high; but wide remote  
 From this ASSYRIAN garden; where the fiend  
 Saw un-delighted all delight, all kind 286  
 Of living creatures, new to fight, and strange

Two of far nobler shape, erect and tall,  
 Godlike erect! with native honor clad  
 In naked majesty, seem'd Lords of all: 290  
 And worthy seem'd: for in their looks divine  
 The image of their glorious Maker shon,  
 Truth, wisdom, sanctitude severe, and pure;  
 Severe, but in true filial freedom plac'd,  
 Whence true authority in men: though both 295  
 Not equal, as their sex not equal seem'd:  
 For contemplation he, and valor form'd;  
 For softness she, and sweet attractive grace;  
 He, for GOD only; she, for GOD in him.  
 His fair large front, and eye sublime, declar'd 300  
 Absolute rule; and hyacinthin locks  
 Round from his parted forelock manly hung  
 Clustering, but not beneath his shoulders broad.  
 She, as a veil, down to the slender waist  
 Her un-adorned golden tresses wore, 305  
 Dishevel'd; but in wanton ringlets wav'd,  
 As the vine curls her tendrils, which imply'd  
 Subjection, but requir'd with gentle sway;  
 And by her yielded, by him best receiv'd:  
 Yielded with coy submission, modest pride, 310  
 And sweet reluctant amorous delay.



Book IV. *PARADISE LOST.* 141

Nor those mysterious parts were then conceal'd ;  
Then was not guilty shame, dishonest shame  
Of nature's works : honor dishonorable !

Sin-bred ! how have ye troubled all mankind 315  
With shews instead, mere shews, of seeming pure ;  
And banish'd from man's life his happiest life,  
Simplicity, and spotless innocence ?

So pass'd they naked on, nor shun'd the sight  
Of GOD, or Angel, for they thought no ill. 320  
So hand in hand they pass'd, the loveliest pair  
That ever since in love's embraces met ;

ADAM the goodliest man of men since born

His sons ; the fairest of her daughters EVE.

Under a tuft of shade, that on a green 325

Stood whisp'ring soft, by a fresh fountain-side

They sat them down ; and after no more toil

Of their sweet gard'ning labor, than suffic'd

To recommend cool ZEPHYR, and made ease

More easy ; wholesome thirst, and appetite 330

More grateful, to their supper-fruits they fell,

Nectarine fruits ! which the compliant boughs

Yielded them, side-long as they sat recline

On the soft downy bank damask'd with flow'rs,

The

The favoury pulp they chew, and in the rind, 335  
 Still as they thirsted, scoop the brimming stream:  
 Nor gentle purpose, nor endearing smiles  
 Wanted, nor youthful dalliance, as beseems  
 Fair couple, link'd in happy nuptial league,  
 Alone as they. About them frisking plaid 340  
 All beasts of th' earth, (since wild,) and of all chase,  
 In wood, or wilderness, forest, or den;  
 Sporting the lion ramp'd, and in his paw  
 Dandled the kid; bears, tigers, ounces, pards,  
 Gambol'd before them; th' unwieldy elephant, 345  
 To make them mirth, us'd all his might, and  
 His lithe proboscis: close the serpent fly [wreath'd  
 Insinuating, wove with Gordian twine  
 His braided train, and of his fatal guile  
 Gave proof unheeded: others on the grass 350  
 Couch'd, and now fill'd with pasture gazing fat,  
 Or bed-ward ruminating: for the sun,  
 Declin'd, was hasting now with prone career  
 To th' ocean isles, and in th' ascending scale  
 Of heav'n the stars, that usher evening, rose: 355  
 When SATAN still in gaze, as first he stood,  
 Scarcely thus at length fail'd speech recover'd sad.



O Hell what do mine eyes with grief behold!  
 Into our room of blifs thus high advanc'd  
 Creatures of other mold; earth-born perhaps,  
 Not spirits; yet to heav'nly spirits bright 361  
 Little inferior; whom my thoughts perfue  
 With wonder, and could love, so lively shines  
 In them divine refemblance, and fuch grace  
 The hand that form'd 'em on their fhape hath pour'd.  
 Ah gentle pair! ye little think how nigh 366  
 Your change approaches; when all thefe delights  
 Will vanifh, and deliver ye to woe;  
 More woe, the more your tafte is now of joy:  
 Happy! but for fo happy ill fecur'd 370  
 Long to continue; and this high feat your heav'n,  
 Ill-fenc'd for heav'n, to keep out fuch a foe  
 As now is enter'd: yet no purpos'd foe  
 To you, whom I could pity thus forlorn,  
 Though I unpitied. League with you I feek, 375  
 And mutual amity, fo ftrait, fo clofe,  
 That I with you muft dwell, or you with me  
 Henceforth: my dwelling haply may not please,  
 Like this fair Paradife, your fenfe; yet fuch  
 Accept, your Maker's work; He gave it me, 380  
 Which

Which I as freely give: hell shall unfold,  
 To entertain you two, her widest gates,  
 And send forth all her kings: there will be room,  
 (Not like these narrow limits,) to receive  
 Your numerous offspring: if no better place, 385  
 Thank Him who puts me loth to this revenge  
 On you, who wrong me not, for Him who wrong'd.  
 And should I at your harmless innocence  
 Melt, (as I do) yet public reason just,  
 Honor, and empire with revenge enlarg'd, 390  
 By conqu'ring this new world, compels me now  
 To do, what else (though damn'd) I should abhor.

So spake the fiend, and with necessity,  
 (The tyrant's plea,) excus'd his devilish deeds.  
 Then from his lofty stand on that high tree, 395  
 Down he alights among the sportful herd  
 Of those four-footed kinds; himself now one,  
 Now other, as their shape best serv'd his end  
 Nearer to view his prey, and un-espied 399  
 To mark what of their state he more might learn  
 By word, or action mark'd: about them round,  
 A lion now he stalks with fiery glare;

The



Book IV. *PARADISE LOST.* 145

Then, as a tiger, who by chance hath spy'd,  
In some purlieu, two gentle fawns at play,  
Strait couches close, then rising changes oft 405  
His couchant watch, as one who chose his ground,  
Whence rushing he might surest seize them both,  
Grip'd in each paw: when ADAM, first of men,  
To first of women, EVE, thus moving speech, 409  
Turn'd him, all ear, to hear new utterance flow.

Sole partner, and sole part of all these joys!  
Dearer thy self than all! needs must the Pow'r  
That made us, and for us this ample world,  
Be infinitely good, and of His good  
As liberal, and free, as infinite; 415  
That rais'd us from the dust, and plac'd us here  
In all this happiness, who at His hand  
Have nothing merited, nor can perform  
Ought whereof He hath need: He! who requires  
From us no other service than to keep 420  
This one, this easie charge, of all the trees  
In Paradise, that bear delicious fruit  
So various, not to taste that only Tree  
Of Knowledge, planted by the Tree of Life:

L

So

So near grows death to life !whate'er death is: 425  
 Some dreadful thing, no doubt: for well thou know'st  
 G O D hath pronounc'd it death to taste that tree,  
 The only sign of our obedience left,  
 Among so many signs of pow'r, and rule,  
 Confer'd upon us; and dominion giv'n 430  
 Over all other creatures that possess  
 Earth, air, and sea. Then, let us not think hard  
 One easie prohibition, who enjoy  
 Free leave so large to all things else, and choice  
 Unlimited of manifold delights: 435  
 But let us ever praise Him, and extol  
 His bounty, following our delightful task, [flow'rs;  
 To prune these growing plants, and tend these  
 Which were it toisome, yet with thee were sweet.

Towhom thus E V E reply'd. O thou! for whom,  
 And from whom I was form'd; flesh of thy flesh; 441  
 And without whom am to no end; my guide,  
 And head! what thou hast said is just, and right.  
 For, we to Him indeed all praises owe,  
 And daily thanks; I chiefly, who enjoy 445  
 So far the happier lot, enjoying thee



Præ-eminent by so much odds; while thou  
 Like consort to thy self canst no where find.  
 That day I oft remember, when from sleep  
 I first awak'd, and found my self repos'd 450  
 Under a shade, on flow'rs; much wond'ring where  
 And what I was, whence thither brought, and how.  
 Not distant far from thence, a murmuring sound  
 Of waters issu'd from a cave, and spread  
 Into a liquid plain, then stood unmov'd, 455  
 Pure as th' expanse of heav'n: I thither went,  
 With in-experienc'd thought, and laid me down  
 On the green bank, to look into the clear  
 Smooth lake, that to me seem'd another sky.  
 As I bent down to look, just opposite 460  
 A shape within the watry gleam appear'd,  
 Bending to look on me: I started back;  
 It started back: but pleas'd I soon return'd;  
 Pleas'd it return'd as soon; with answering looks  
 Of sympathy, and love: there I had fix'd 465  
 Mine eyes till now, and pin'd with vain desire,  
 Had not a voice thus warn'd me, "What thou seest,  
 "What there thou seest, fair Creature, is thy self;  
 "With thee it came, and goes: but, follow me,

“ And I will bring thee where no shadow stays  
 “ Thy coming, and thy soft embraces ; he 471  
 “ Whose image thou art : him thou shalt enjoy  
 “ Inseparably thine, to him shalt bear  
 “ Multitudes like thy self, and thence be call’d  
 “ Mother of human race. ” What could I do,  
 But follow strait, invisibly thus led, 476  
 Till I espy’d thee? fair indeed, and tall,  
 Under a plantan ; yet, methought, less fair,  
 Less winning soft, less amiably mild,  
 Than that smooth watry image : back I turn’d ; 480  
 Thou following cryd’st aloud, return fair EVE,  
 Whom fly’st thou? whom thou fly’st, of him thou art,  
 His flesh, his bone ; to give thee Being I lent  
 Out of my side to thee, nearest my heart,  
 Substantial life, to have thee by my side 485  
 Henceforth an individual solace dear :  
 Part of my soul, I seek thee ; and thee claim,  
 My other half! — With that, thy gentle hand  
 Seis’d mine ; I yielded ; and from that time see  
 How beauty is excell’d by manly grace, 490  
 And wisdom, which alone is truly fair.



So spake our general mother ; and with eyes  
 Of conjugal attraction unprov'd,  
 And meek surrender, half embracing lean'd  
 On our first father: half her swelling breast 495  
 Naked met his, under the flowing gold  
 Of her loose tresses hid: he (in delight  
 Both of her beauty, and submissive charms,)  
 Smil'd with superior love ; as JUPITER  
 On JUNO smiles, when he impregns the clouds, 500  
 That shed May-flow'rs ; and press'd her matron-lip  
 With kisses pure : — aside the devil turn'd  
 For envy, yet with jealous leer malign  
 Ey'd them askance ; and to himself thus plain'd.

Sight hateful, sight tormenting ! thus these two,  
 Imparadis'd in one another's arms, 506  
 (The happier EDEN !) shall enjoy their fill  
 Of bliss on bliss : while I to hell am thrust,  
 Where neither joy, nor love, but fierce desire,  
 (Among our other torments not the least) 510  
 Still unfulfill'd with pain of longing, pines.  
 Yet let me not forget what I have gain'd  
 From their own mouths : all is not theirs, it seems :

One fatal Tree there stands, of Knowledge call'd,  
 Forbidden them to taste. Knowledge forbidden?  
 Suspicious, reasonless. Why should their Lord 516  
 Envy them that? can it be sin to know?  
 Can it be death? and do they only stand  
 By ignorance? is that their happy state,  
 The proof of their obedience, and their faith?  
 O fair foundation laid whereon to build 521  
 Their ruin! hence I will excite their minds  
 With more desire to know, and to reject  
 Envious commands, invented with design  
 To keep them low, whom knowledge might exalt  
 Equal with Gods: aspiring to be such, 526  
 They taste, and die: what likelier can ensue?  
 But first, with narrow search I must walk round  
 This garden, and no corner leave un-spy'd;  
 A chance but chance may lead where I may meet  
 Some wandering spirit of heav'n, by fountain-side, 531  
 Or in thick shade retir'd, from him to draw  
 What further would be learn'd. Live while ye may,  
 Yet happy pair! enjoy, till I return,  
 Short pleasures; for, long woes are to succeed! 535



So saying, his proud step he scornful turn'd,  
 But with fly circumspection; and began [roam.  
 Through wood, through waste, o'er hill, o'er dale his  
 Mean-while in utmost longitude, where heav'n  
 With earth and ocean meets, the setting sun 540  
 Slowly descended; and with right aspect  
 Against the eastern gate of Paradise  
 Level'd his ev'ning rays: it was a rock  
 Of alabaster, pil'd up to the clouds,  
 Conspicuous far; winding with one ascent 545  
 Accessible from earth, one entrance high:  
 The rest was craggy cliff, that over-hung  
 Still as it rose, impossible to climb.  
 Betwixt these rocky pillars GABRIEL sat,  
 Chief of th' Angelic guards, awaiting night: 550  
 About him exercis'd heroic games  
 Th' unarmed youth of heav'n; but nigh at hand  
 Cœlestial armory, shields, helms, and spears,  
 Hung high, with diamond flaming, and with gold.  
 Thither came URIEL, gliding through the ev'n  
 On a sun-beam, swift as a shooting star 556  
 In autumn thwarts the night, when vapors fir'd  
 Impress the air, and shew the mariner

From what point of his Compass to beware  
Impetuous winds: he thus began in haste. 560

GABRIEL! to thee thy course by lot hath giv'n  
Charge, and strict watch, that to this happy place  
No evil thing approach, or enter in:

This day, at height of noon, came to my sphere  
A spirit; zealous, as he seem'd, to know 565  
More of th' Almighty's works; and chiefly man,  
God's latest image: I describ'd his way,  
Bent all on speed, and mark'd his aery gait:  
But, in the mount that lies from EDEN north,  
Where he first lighted, soon discern'd his looks 570  
Alien from heav'n, with passions foul obscur'd:  
Mine eye persu'd him still, but under shade  
Lost sight of him: one of the banish'd crew,  
I fear, hath ventur'd from the Deep, to raise  
New troubles; him thy care must be to find. 575

To whom the winged warrior thus return'd:  
URIEL! no wonder if thy perfect sight,  
Amid the sun's bright circle, where thou sit'st,  
See far, and wide: in at this gate none pass

The



The vigilance here plac'd, but such as come 580  
 Well-known from heav'n; and since meridian hour  
 No creature thence. If spirit of other sort,  
 So minded, have o'er-leap'd these earthy bounds  
 On purpose, hard thou know'st it to exclude  
 Spiritual substance with corporeal bar. 585  
 But, if within the circuit of these walks,  
 In whatsoever shape, he lurk, of whom  
 Thou tell'st, by morrow dawning I shall know.

So promis'd he; and URIEL to his charge 590  
 Return'd, on that bright beam, whose point now  
 Bore him slope downward to the sun, now fall'n<sup>[rais'd]</sup>  
 Beneath th' AZORES: whether the prime orb,  
 Incredible how swift, had thither rowl'd  
 Diurnal; or this less volubil earth,  
 By shorter flight to th' east, had left him there,  
 Arraying with reflected purple, and gold, 596  
 The clouds that on his western throne attend.

Now came still evening on, and twilight gray  
 Had in her sober livery all things clad:  
 Silence accompany'd; for beast, and bird, 600  
 They

They to their grassy couch, these to their nests,  
 Were flunk; all but the wakeful nightingale;  
 She all night long her amorous descant sung;  
 Silence was pleas'd: now glow'd the firmament  
 With living saphirs; *HESPERUS*, that led 605  
 The starry host, rode brightest; till the moon,  
 Rising in clouded majesty at length,  
 Apparent Queen, unveil'd her peerless light,  
 And o'er the dark her silver mantle threw;  
 When *ADAM* thus to *EVE*: fair consort! th' hour  
 Of night, and all things now retir'd to rest, 611  
 Mind us of like repose; since *GOD* hath set  
 Labor and rest, as day and night, to men  
 Successive; and the timely dew of sleep,  
 Now falling with soft slumbrous weight, inclines  
 Our eye-lids. Other creatures all day long 616  
 Rove idle, un-employ'd, and less need rest:  
 Man hath his daily work of body, or mind,  
 Appointed, which declares his dignity,  
 And the regard of heav'n on all his ways: 620  
 While other animals un-active range;  
 And of their doings *GOD* takes no account.  
 To-morrow, e'er fresh morning streak the east

With



With first approach of light, we must be ris'n,  
 And at our pleasant labor, to reform 625  
 Yon flow'ry arbors; yonder allies green,  
 Our walk at noon, with branches overgrown;  
 That mock our scant manuring, and require  
 More hands than ours to lop their wanton growth.  
 Those blossoms also, and those dropping gums,  
 That lie bestrown, unsightly, and unsmooth, 631  
 Ask riddance, if we mean to tread with ease:  
 Mean-while, as nature wills, night bids us rest.

To whom thus EVE, with perfect beauty adorn'd.  
 My author, and disposer! what thou bidst 635  
 Un-argu'd I obey; so GOD ordains:  
 GOD is thy law, thou mine: to know no more  
 Is woman's happiest knowledge, and her praise.  
 With thee conversing I forget all time;  
 All seasons, and their change, all please alike: 640  
 Sweet is the breath of morn, her rising sweet,  
 With charm of earliest birds; pleasant the sun,  
 When first on this delightful land he spreads  
 His orient beams, on herb, tree, fruit, and flow'r,  
 Glist'ring with dew: fragrant the fertile earth 645  
 After

After soft show'rs: and sweet the coming on  
 Of grateful ev'ning mild: then, silent night,  
 With this her solemn bird, and this fair moon,  
 And these the gems of heav'n, her starry train.  
 But neither breath of morn, when she ascends 650  
 With charm of earliest birds: nor rising sun  
 On this delightful land: nor herb, fruit, flow'rs,  
 Glitt'ring with dew: nor fragrance after show'rs:  
 Nor grateful evening mild: nor silent night,  
 With this her solemn bird: nor walk by moon: 655  
 Or glittering star-light, without thee is sweet.  
 But wherefore all night long shine these? for whom  
 This glorious sight, when sleep hath shut all eyes?

To whom our general ancestor reply'd. 659  
 Daughter of GOD and man, accomplish'd EVE!  
 These have their course to finish, round the earth,  
 By morrow ev'ning; and from land to land  
 In order, though to nations yet unborn,  
 Ministring light prepar'd, they set, and rise:  
 Lest total darkness should by night regain ... 665  
 Her old possession, and extinguish life  
 In nature, and all things; which these soft fires

Not



Not only enlighten, but with kindly heat,  
Of various influence, foment, and warm,  
Temper, or nourish; or in part shed down 670  
Their stellar virtue, on all kinds that grow  
On earth; made hereby apter to receive  
Perfection from the sun's more potent ray.  
These then, though un-beheld in deep of night, 674  
Shine not in vain: nor think, though men were none,  
That heav'n would want spectators, God want praise:  
Millions of spiritual creatures walk the earth  
Un-seen, both when we wake, and when we sleep:  
All these, with ceaseless praise, his works behold  
Both day, and night: how often, from the steep 680  
Of echoing hill, or thicket, have we heard  
Celestial voices, to the midnight air  
(Sole, or responsive each to other's note)  
Singing their great Creator? oft in bands  
While they keep watch, or nightly rounding walk,  
With heav'nly touch of instrumental sounds, 686  
In full harmonic number join'd, their songs  
Divide the night, and lift our thoughts to heaven.

Thus talking, hand in hand, alone they pass'd  
On to their blissful bow'r: it was a place 690

Chos'n by the Sov'reign Planter, when He fram'd  
 All things to man's delightful use: the roof,  
 Of thickest covert, was inwoven shade,  
 Laurel, and myrtle; and what higher grew,  
 Of firm, and fragrant leaf: on either side 695  
 Acanthus, and each od'rous bushy shrub,  
 Fenc'd up the verdant wall: each beauteous flow'r,  
 Iris all hues, roses, and jessamin,  
 Rear'd high their flourish'd heads between, and [wrought  
 Mosaic: underfoot the violet, 700  
 Crocus, and hyacinth, with rich in-lay  
 Broider'd the ground; more color'd, than with stone  
 Of costliest emblem: other creature here,  
 Beast, bird, insect, or worm, durst enter none;  
 Such was their awe of man! In shady bow'r 705  
 More sacred, and sequester'd, though but feign'd,  
 PAN, or SYLVANUS, never slept; nor Nymph,  
 Nor FAUNUS, haunted. Here, in close recess,  
 With flowers, garlands, and sweet-smelling herbs,  
 Espoused EVE deckt'd first her nuptial bed: 710  
 And heav'nly Choirs the Hymenæan sung,  
 What day the genial Angel to our fire  
 Brought her, in naked beauty more adorn'd,

More



More lovely, than PANDORA ; whom the Gods  
 Endow'd with all their gifts, (and O, too like 715  
 In sad event!) when to th' un-wiser son  
 Of JAPHET brought by HERMES, she insnar'd  
 Mankind with her fair looks, to be aveng'd  
 On him who had stole Jove's authentic fire.

Thus at their shady Lodge arriv'd, both stood,  
 Both turn'd, and under open sky ador'd 721  
 The GOD that made both sky, air, earth, and heav'n,  
 Which they beheld; the moon's resplendent globe,  
 And starry Pole: Thou also mad'st the night,  
 Maker Omnipotent! and Thou the day, 725  
 Which we in our appointed work employ'd  
 Have finish'd, happy in our mutual help,  
 And mutual love, the crown of all our bliss  
 Ordain'd by Thee; and this delicious place,  
 For us too large; where Thy abundance wants 730  
 Partakers, and un-crop'd falls to the ground.  
 But Thou hast promis'd from us two a race  
 To fill the earth, who shall with us extol  
 Thy goodness infinite, both when we wake,  
 And when we seek, as now, Thy gift of sleep. 735  
 This

This said unanimous, and other rites  
 Observing none, but adoration pure,  
 Which GOD likes best, into their inmost bow'r  
 Handed they went; and (eas'd the putting off  
 These troublesome disguises which we wear,) 740  
 Strait side by side were laid: nor turn'd, I ween,  
 ADAM from his fair spouse; nor EVE the rites  
 Mysterious of connubial love refus'd:  
 Whatever hypocrites austerely talk  
 Of purity, and place, and innocence; 745  
 Defaming as impure what GOD declares  
 Pure; and commands to some, leaves free to all.  
 Our Maker bids increase; who bids abstain,  
 But our destroyer, foe to GOD, and man?  
 Hail wedded love! mysterious law, true source  
 Of human offspring, sole propriety 750  
 In Paradise! of all things common else.  
 By thee adult'rous lust was driv'n from men,  
 Among the bestial herds to range; by thee,  
 (Founded in reason, loyal, just, and pure) 755  
 Relations dear, and all the charities  
 Of father, son, and brother, first were known.  
 Far be it, that I should write thee sin, or blame!



Or think thee un-befitting holiest place;  
 Perpetual fountain of domestic sweets! 760  
 Whose bed is undefil'd, and chaste, pronounc'd,  
 Present, or past; as saints, and patriarchs us'd.  
 Here, Love his golden shafts employs; here lights  
 His constant lamp; and waves his purple wings;  
 Reigns here, and revels: not in the bought smile  
 Of harlots, loveless, joyless, un-endeared; 766  
 Casual fruition! nor in Court-amours,  
 Mix'd dance, or wanton mask, or midnight ball,  
 Or serenate, which the starv'd lover sings  
 To his proud Fair; best quitted with disdain. 770  
 These, lull'd by nightingales, embracing slept;  
 And on their naked limbs the flow'ry roof  
 Shower'd roses, which the morn repair'd. Sleep on,  
 Blest pair! and O! yet happiest, if ye seek 774  
 No happier state, and know to know no more.

Now had night measur'd, with her shadowy cone,  
 Half-way up hill this vast sublunar vault:  
 And from their ivory port the Cherubim  
 Forth issuing at th' accustom'd hour, stood arm'd

M

To

To their night watches in warlike parade, 780  
 When GABRIEL to his next in pow'r thus spake.

UZZIEL! half these draw off, and coast the south  
 With strictest watch: these other wheel the north:  
 Our circuit meets full west. As flame they part,  
 Half wheeling to the shield, half to the spear. 785  
 From these, two strong and subtle spirits he call'd,  
 That near him stood, and gave them thus in charge.

ITHURIEL, and ZEPHON! with wing'd speed  
 Search thro' this garden, leave unsearch'd no nook;  
 But chiefly where those two fair creatures lodge,  
 Now laid perhaps asleep, secure of harm. 791  
 This evening from the sun's decline arriv'd,  
 Who tells of some infernal spirit, seen  
 Hitherward bent (who could have thought?) escap'd  
 The bars of hell; on errand bad, no doubt: 795  
 Such, where ye find, seize fast, and hither bring.

So saying, on he led his radiant files,  
 Dazling the moon: these to the bow'r direct,



In search of whom they fought: him there they found,  
 Squat like a toad, close at the ear of EVE; 800  
 Assaying, by his devilish art, to reach  
 The organs of her fancy, and with them forge  
 Illusions, as he list, phantasms, and dreams:  
 Or if, inspiring venom, he might taint  
 Th' animal spirits, that from pure blood arise, 805  
 Like gentle breaths from rivers pure; thence raise  
 At last distemper'd, discontented thoughts;  
 Vain hopes, vain aims, inordinate desires,  
 Blow up with high conceits ingendring pride.  
 Him thus intent ITHURIEL with his spear 810  
 Touch'd lightly; (for no falsehood can endure  
 Touch of coelestial temper, but returns  
 Of force to its own likeness) up he starts,  
 Discover'd, and surpriz'd. As when a spark  
 Lights on a heap of nitrous powder, laid 815  
 Fit for the tun, some magazine to store  
 Against a rumor'd war, the smutty grain  
 With sudden blaze diffus'd, inflames the air:  
 So started up, in his own shape, the fiend.  
 Back step'd those two fair Angels, half amaz'd, 820

So sudden to behold the grisly King;  
Yet thus, unmov'd with fear, accost him soon.

Which of those rebel spirits, adjudg'd to hell,  
Com'st thou, escap'd thy prison? and transform'd  
Why sat'st thou, like an enemy in wait, 825  
Here watching at the head of these that sleep?

Know ye not then, said S A T A N, fill'd with scorn,  
Know ye not Me? ye knew me once no mate  
For you; there sitting where you durst not soar:  
Not to know me argues your selves unknown, 830  
The lowest of your throng: or if ye know,  
Why ask ye, and superfluous begin  
Your message, like to end as much in vain?

To whom thus Z E P H O N, answering scorn with [scorn.  
Think not, revolted spirit! thy shape the same, 835  
Or un-diminish'd brightness, to be known  
As when thou stoodst in heav'n, upright, and pure:  
That glory then, when thou no more wast good,  
Departed from thee; and thou resembl'st now  
Thy



Thy sin, and place of doom, obscure, and foul. 840  
 But come! for thou, be sure, shalt give account  
 To him who sent us, whose charge is to keep  
 This place inviolable, and these from harm.

So spake the Cherub; and his grave rebuke,  
 Severe in youthful beauty, added grace 845  
 Invincible: abash'd the devil stood,  
 And felt how awful goodness is, and saw  
 Virtue in her shape how lovely; saw, and pin'd  
 His loss: but chiefly to find here observ'd  
 His lustre visibly impair'd: yet seem'd 850  
 Undaunted. If I must contend, said he,  
 Best with the best, the sender not the sent,  
 Or all at once; more glory will be won,  
 Or less be lost. Thy fear, said ZEPHON bold,  
 Will save us tryal what the least can do 855  
 Single against thee wicked, and thence weak.

The fiend reply'd not, overcome with rage;  
 But like a proud steed rein'd, went haughty on,  
 Champing his iron curb: to strive, or fly,  
 He held it vain; awe from above had quell'd 860

His heart, not else dismay'd. Now drew they nigh  
 The western point, where those half-rounding  
 Just met, and closing stood in squadron join'd, [guards  
 Awaiting next command ; to whom their Chief,  
 GABRIEL, from the Front thus call'd aloud. 865

O friends ! I hear the tread of nimble feet  
 Hastening this way ; and now by glimps discern  
 ITHURIEL, and ZEPHON, through the shade ;  
 And with them comes a third of regal port,  
 But faded splendor wan ; who by his gait, 870  
 And fierce demeanor, seems the Prince of hell ;  
 Not likely to part hence without contest :  
 Stand firm, for in his look defiance low'rs.

He scarce had ended, when those two approach'd,  
 And brief related whom they brought, where found,  
 How busied, in what form, and posture, couch'd : 876  
 To whom with stern regard thus GABRIEL spake.

Why hast thou, SATAN ! broke the bounds [prescrib'd  
 To thy transgressions, and disturb'd the charge  
 Of others, who approve not to transgress 880

By



By thy exsample? but have pow'r, and right,  
To question thy bold entrance on this place;  
Employ'd, it seems, to violate sleep, and those  
Whose dwelling GOD hath planted here in blifs?

To whom thus SATAN, with contemptuous brow:  
GABRIEL! thou hadst in heav'n th' esteem of wise  
And such I held thee; but this question ask'd 887  
Puts me in doubt. Lives there who loves his pain?  
Who would not, finding way, break loose from hell,  
Tho' thither doom'd? thou wouldst thy self, no doubt,  
And boldly venture to whatever place, 891  
Farthest from pain; where thou might'st hope to  
Torment with ease, and soonest recompense<sup>[change</sup>  
Dole with delight; which in this place I sought:  
To thee no reason, who know'st only good, 895  
But evil hast not try'd. And wilt object  
His will who bound us? let Him surer bar  
His iron gates, if He intends our stay  
In that dark durance! thus much what was ask'd.  
The rest is true: they found me where they say; 900  
But that implies not violence, or harm.

M 4

Thus

Thus he in scorn. The warlike Angel mov'd,  
 Disdainfully half smiling, thus reply'd.  
 O loss of one in heav'n to judge of wise,  
 Since SATAN fell, whom folly overthrew! 905  
 And now returns him, from his prison scap'd,  
 Gravely in doubt whether to hold them wise,  
 Or not, who ask what boldness brought him hither  
 Un-licens'd, from his bounds in hell prescrib'd:  
 So wise he judges it to fly from pain 910  
 However, and to scape his punishment!  
 So judge thou still, presumptuous! till the wrath,  
 Which thou incur'st by flying, meet thy flight  
 Sev'nfold, and scourge that wisdom back to hell,  
 Which taught thee yet no better, that no pain 915  
 Can equal anger infinite provok'd.  
 But wherefore thou alone? wherefore with thee  
 Came not all hell broke loose? is pain to them  
 Less pain, less to be fled? or thou than they  
 Less hardy to indure? courageous Chief! 920  
 The first in flight from pain! Hadst thou alledg'd  
 To thy deserted host this cause of flight,  
 Thou surely hadst not come sole fugitive.

To



Book IV. *PARADISE LOST.* 169

To which the fiend thus answer'd, frowning stern.  
Not that I less indure, or shrink from pain, 925  
Insulting Angel! well thou know'st: I stood  
Thy fiercest, when in battel to thy aid  
The blasting vollied thunder made all speed,  
And seconded thy else not dreaded spear.  
But still thy words at random, as before, 930  
Argue thy in-experience, what behoves,  
(From hard assays, and ill successes past,)  
A faithful Leader, not to hazard all  
Through ways of danger, by himself untry'd:  
I therefore, I alone, first undertook 935  
To wing the desolate abyfs, and spy  
This new-created world, whereof in hell  
Fame is not silent; here in hope to find  
Better abode, and my afflicted Pow'rs  
To settle here on earth, or in mid air; 940  
Though, for possession, put to try once more  
What thou, and thy gay legions, dare against:  
Whose easier business were to serve their Lord  
High up in heav'n, with songs to hymn His throne,  
And practis'd distances to cringe, not fight. 945  
To

To whom the warrior Angel soon reply'd:  
 To say, and strait un-say, pretending first  
 Wise to fly pain, professing next the spy,  
 Argues no Leader, but a liar trac'd,  
 SATAN! and couldst thou *faithful* add? O name,  
 O sacred name of faithfulness profan'd! 951  
 Faithful to whom? to thy rebellious crew,  
 Army of fiends? fit body to fit head!  
 Was this your discipline, and faith engag'd,  
 Your military obedience, to dissolve 955  
 Allegiance to th' acknowledg'd Pow'r supreme?  
 And thou, fly hypocrite! who now wouldst seem  
 Patron of liberty, who more than thou  
 Once fawn'd, and cring'd, and servily ador'd  
 Heav'n's awful Monarch? wherefore? but in hope  
 To dispossess him, and thy self to reign? 961  
 But mark what I aread thee now: avant!  
 Fly thither whence thou fledst! If from this hour  
 Within these hallow'd limits thou appear,  
 Back to th' infernal pit I drag thee chain'd, 965  
 And seal thee so, as henceforth not to scorn  
 The facil gates of hell too slightly barr'd.



Book IV. *PARADISE LOST.* 171

So threaten'd he: but SATAN to no threats  
Gave heed, but waxing more in rage, reply'd.

Then, when I am thy captive, talk of chains, 970  
Proud liminary Cherub! but e'er then  
Far heavier load thy self expect to feel,  
From my prevailing arm; though heaven's King  
Ride on thy wings, and thou with thy compeers,  
Us'd to the yoke, draw'ft his triumphant wheels  
In progress thro' the road of heav'n star-pav'd. 976

While thus he spake, th' Angelic squadron bright  
Turn'd fiery red, sharpening in mooned horns  
Their phalanx, and began to hem him round  
With ported spears; as thick, as when a field 980  
Of CERES, ripe for harvest, waving bends  
Her bearded grove of ears, which way the wind  
Sways them; the careful plowman doubting stands,  
Left on the threshing-floor his hopeful sheaves  
Prove chaff. On th' other side, SATAN alarm'd,  
Collecting all his might, dilated stood 986  
Like TENERIF, or ATLAS, un-remov'd:  
His stature reach'd the sky, and on his crest

Sat

Sat Horror plum'd; nor wanted in his grasp <sup>[deeds</sup>  
 What seem'd both spear, and shield. Now dreadful  
 Might have ensu'd: not only Paradise 991  
 In this commotion, but the starry cope  
 Of heav'n perhaps, or all the elements,  
 At least had gone to wreck, disturb'd, and torn  
 With violence of this conflict, had not soon 995  
 Th' Eternal, to prevent such horrid fray,  
 Hung forth in heav'n his golden scales, yet seen  
 Betwixt *ASTRÆA*, and the Scorpion Sign,  
 (Wherein all things created first he weigh'd,  
 The pendulous round earth, with balanc'd air 1000  
 In counterpoise: now, ponders all events,  
 Battels, and realms :) in these he put two weights,  
 The sequel each of parting, and of fight;  
 The latter quick up flew, and kick'd the beam:  
 Which *GABRIEL* spying, thus bespake the fiend. 1005

[mine:  
 SATAN! I know thy strength, and thou know'st  
 Neither our own, but giv'n: what folly then  
 To boast what arms can do? since thine no more  
 Than heav'n permits; nor mine, tho' doubled now  
 To trample thee as mire: for proof look up, 1010  
And



And read thy lot in yon coelestial Sign; [weak,  
Where thou art weigh'd, and shown how light, how  
If thou resist.— The fiend look'd up, and knew  
His mounted scale aloft: nor more; but fled 1014  
Murm'ring, and with him fled the shades of night.

*The end of the fourth Book.*



T H E

20 JY 63









---

THE  
FIFTH BOOK  
OF  
PARADISE LOST.



## The ARGUMENT.

*Morning approach'd, Eve relates to Adam her troublesome dream; he likes it not, yet comforts her: they come forth to their day-labors: their morning hymn at the door of their bower. GOD, to render Man inexcusable, sends Raphael to admonish him of his obedience, of his free estate, of his enemy near at hand, who he is, and why his enemy, and whatever else may avail Adam to know. Raphael comes down to Paradise; his appearance describ'd, his coming discern'd by Adam afar-off, sitting at the door of his bower; he goes out to meet him, brings him to his lodge, entertains him with the choicest fruits of Paradise got together by Eve; their discourse at table: Raphael performs his message, minds Adam of his state, and of his enemy; relates, at Adam's request, who that enemy is, and how he came to be so; beginning from his first revolt in heaven, and the occasion thereof; how he drew his legions after him to the parts of the north, and there incited them to rebel with him; persuading all but only Abdiel, a Seraph, who in argument dissuades and opposes him, then forsakes him.*



---

---

# PARADISE LOST.

---



---

## B O O K V.

---

**N**OW Morn, her rosy steps in th' eastern clime  
 Advancing, sow'd the earth with orient pearl,  
 When ADAM wak'd: so custom'd; for his sleep  
 Was aery-light, from pure digestion bred,  
 And temperate vapors bland, which th' only sound  
 Of leaves, and fuming rills, (AURORA's fan) 6  
 Lightly dispers'd, and the shrill matin song  
 Of birds on every bough. So much the more  
 His wonder was, to find unwaken'd EVE  
 With tresses discompos'd, and glowing cheek, 10  
 As through unquiet rest: he, on his side

N

Lean-

Leaning half-rai'd, with looks of cordial love  
 Hung over her enamor'd; and beheld  
 Beauty, which, whether waking or asleep,  
 Shot forth peculiar graces: then, with voice  
 Mild as when ZEPHYRUS ON FLORA breathes,  
 Her hand soft-touching, whisper'd thus: Awake  
 My fairest, my espous'd, my latest found,  
 Heav'n's last best gift, my ever-new delight!  
 Awake: the morning shines, and the fresh field  
 Calls us; we lose the prime, to mark how spring  
 Our tended plants, how blows the citron grove,  
 What drops the myrrh, and what the balmy reed  
 How nature paints her colors, how the bee  
 Sits on the bloom extracting liquid sweet.

Such whisp'ring wak'd her, but with startled eye  
 On ADAM; whom embracing, thus she spake.

O sole! in whom my thoughts find all repose,  
 My glory, my perfection! glad I see  
 Thy face, and morn return'd; for I this night,  
 (Such night till this I never pass'd,) have dream'd



(If dream'd) not, as I oft am wont, of thee,  
 Works of day pass'd, or morrow's next design:  
 But, of offense, and trouble ; which my mind  
 Knew never till this irksome night. Methought 35  
 Close at mine ear one call'd me forth to walk  
 With gentle voice ; I thought it thine : it said,  
 Why sleep'st thou EVE ? now is the pleasant time,  
 The cool, the silent, save where silence yields  
 To the night-warbling bird, that now awake 40  
 Tunes sweetest his love-labor'd song ; now reigns  
 Full-orb'd the moon, and with more pleasant light  
 Shadowy sets off the face of things ; in vain,  
 If none regard : heav'n wakes with all his eyes ;  
 Whom to behold but Thee, nature's desire ? 45  
 In whose sight all things joy, with ravishment  
 Attracted by thy beauty still to gaze.  
 I rose, as at thy call ; but found thee not :  
 To find thee I directed then my walk ;  
 And on, methought, alone I pass'd, thro' ways 50  
 That brought me on a sudden to the Tree  
 Of interdicted Knowledge : fair it seem'd,  
 Much fairer, to my fancy, than by day :

And as I wond'ring look'd, beside it stood <sup>[Heav'n,</sup>  
 One shap'd, and wing'd, like one of those from  
 By us oft seen: his dewy locks distill'd 56

AMBROSIA; on that tree he also gaz'd:

And, O fair plant, said he, with fruit furcharg'd!  
 Deigns none to ease thy load, and taste thy sweet?  
 Nor GOD, nor man? Is knowledge so despis'd?  
 Or envy, or what reserve forbids to taste? 61

Forbid who will, none shall from me with-hold  
 Longer thy offer'd good: why else set here?  
 This said, he paus'd not, but with vent'rous arm  
 He pluck'd, he tasted: me damp horror chill'd 65  
 At such bold words, vouch'd with a deed so bold.  
 But he thus, overjoy'd: O fruit divine!

Sweet of thy self, but much more sweet thus crop'd!  
 Forbidden here, it seems, as only fit

For Gods, yet able to make Gods of men: 70  
 And why not Gods of men, since good the more  
 Communicated, more abundant grows,

The author not impair'd, but honor'd more?  
 Here, happy creature, fair Angelic EVE!

Partake thou also: happy though thou art, 75  
 Happier



Happier thou may'ſt be, worthier canſt not be:  
 Taſte this, and be henceforth among the Gods  
 Thy ſelf a Goddeſs ; not to earth confin'd,  
 But ſometimes in the air, as we ; ſometimes  
 Aſcend to heav'n, by merit thine, and ſee 80  
 What life the Gods live there, and ſuch live Thou.  
 So ſaying, he drew nigh, and to me held,  
 Ev'n to my mouth, of that ſame fruit held part  
 Which he had pluck'd: the pleaſant favoury ſmell  
 So quicken'd appetite, that I, methought, 85  
 Could not but taſte! Forthwith up to the clouds  
 With him I flew, and underneath beheld  
 The earth outſtretch'd immense, a proſpect wide,  
 And various: wond'ring at my flight, and change  
 To this high exaltation ; ſuddenly 90  
 My guide was gone, and I, methought, ſunk down,  
 And fell aſleep: but O, how glad I wak'd  
 To find this but a dream! Thus EVE her night  
 Related, and thus ADAM answer'd ſad.

Beſt image of my ſelf, and dearer half! 95  
 The trouble of thy thoughts this night in ſleep  
 Affects me equally: nor can I like

N 3

This

This uncooth dream, of evil sprung, I fear.  
 Yet evil whence? in thee can harbour none,  
 Created pure. But know, that in the soul 100  
 Are many lesser faculties, that serve  
 Reason as chief: among these Fancy next  
 Her office holds: of all external things,  
 Which the five watchful senses represent,  
 She forms imaginations, aery shapes, 105  
 Which Reason joining, or disjoining, frames  
 All what we affirm, or what deny, and call  
 Our knowledge, or opinion; then retires  
 Into her private cell, when nature rests.  
 Oft in her absence mimic Fancy wakes 110  
 To imitate her; but, mis-joining shapes,  
 Wild work produces oft, and most in dreams;  
 Ill matching words, and deeds, long past, or late.  
 Some such resemblances methinks I find  
 Of our last evening's talk, in this thy dream; 115  
 But with addition strange! yet, be not sad:  
 Evil into the mind of GOD, or man,  
 May come, and go, so un-approv'd, and leave  
 No spot or blame behind: which gives me hope  
 That what in sleep thou didst abhor to dream, 120

Waking



Waking thou never wilt consent to do.  
 Be not dis-hearten'd then, nor cloud those looks,  
 That wont to be more chearful, and serene,  
 Than when fair morning first smiles on the world:  
 And let us to our fresh employments rise, 125  
 Among the groves, the fountains, and the flow'rs,  
 That open now their choicest bosom'd smells,  
 Reserv'd from night, and kept for thee in store.

So chear'd he his fair spouse, and she was chear'd;  
 But silently a gentle tear let fall 130  
 From either eye, and wip'd them with her hair :  
 Two other precious drops that ready stood,  
 Each in their crystal fluice, he e'er they fell  
 Kiss'd, as the gracious signs of sweet remorse,  
 And pious awe, that fear'd to have offended. 135  
 So all was clear'd, and to the field they haste:  
 But first, from under shady arborous roof,  
 Soon as they forth were come to open sight  
 Of day-spring, and the sun, (who scarce up-ris'n,  
 With wheels yet hov'ring o'er the ocean-brim, 140  
 Shot paralel to th' earth his dewy ray,  
 Discov'ring in wide landscape all the east

Of Paradise, and EDEN's happy plains.)  
 Lowly they bow'd, adoring, and began  
 Their orisons, each morning duly paid 145  
 In various style; for neither various style,  
 Nor holy rapture, wanted they, to praise  
 Their Maker, in fit strains pronounc'd, or sung  
 Unmeditated; such prompt eloquence  
 Flow'd from their lips, in prose, or numerous verse;  
 More tunable, than needed lute, or harp, 151  
 To add more sweetness; and they thus began.

These are Thy glorious works, Parent of Good!  
 Almighty! Thine this universal frame,  
 Thus wondrous fair; Thy self how wondrous then!  
 Unspeakable! who sitt'st above these heav'ns, 156  
 To us invisible, or dimly seen  
 In these Thy lowest works: yet these declare  
 Thy goodness beyond thought, and pow'r divine.  
 Speak ye who best can tell, ye sons of light, 160  
 Angels! for ye behold Him, and with songs,  
 And choral symphonies, day without night,  
 Circle His throne rejoicing; ye in heav'n:  
 On earth join all ye creatures, to extol

Him



Him first, Him last, Him midst, and without end!  
Fairest of stars! last in the train of night, 166  
If better thou belong not to the dawn,  
Sure pledge of day, that crown'st the smiling morn  
With thy bright circlet, praise Him in thy sphere  
While day arises, that sweet hour of prime. 170  
Thou sun! of this great world both eye and soul,  
Acknowledge Him thy greater; sound His praise  
In thy eternal course, both when thou climb'st,  
And when high noon hast gain'd, and when thou fall'st.  
Moon! that now meet'st the orient sun, now fly'st  
With the fix'd stars, fix'd in their orb that flies; 176  
And ye five other wandring fires! that move  
In mystic dance not without song, resound  
His praise, who out of darkness call'd up light.  
Air, and ye elements! the eldest birth 180  
Of Nature's womb, that in quaternion run  
Perpetual circle, multiform; and mix,  
And nourish all things; let your ceaseless change  
Vary to our Great Maker still new praise.  
Ye mists, and exhalations! that now rise 185  
From hill, or steaming lake, dusky, or grey,  
Till the sun paint your fleecy skirts with gold,

In

In honor to the world's great Author rise:  
 Whether to deck with clouds th' uncolor'd sky,  
 Or wet the thirsty earth with falling show'rs, 190  
 Rising, or falling, still advance His praise.  
 His praise, ye winds! that from four quarters blow,  
 Breathe soft, or loud; and wave your tops, ye pines!  
 With every plant, in sign of worship wave.  
 Fountains! and ye that warble, as ye flow, 195  
 Melodious murmurs! warbling tune His praise.  
 Join voices all ye living souls! ye birds,  
 That singing up to heaven-gate ascend,  
 Bear on your wings, and in your notes, His praise!  
 Ye that in waters glide, and ye that walk 200  
 The earth, and stately tread, or lowly creep!  
 Witness if I be silent, morn or even,  
 To hill, or valley, fountain, or fresh shade,  
 Made vocal by my song, and taught His praise.  
 Hail Universal Lord! be bounteous still 205  
 To give us only good: and if the night  
 Have gather'd ought of evil, or conceal'd,  
 Disperse it, as now light dispels the dark!

So pray'd they innocent, and to their thoughts  
 Firm peace recover'd soon, and wonted calm. 210



On to their morning's rural work they haste,  
 Among sweet dews, and flow'rs; where any row  
 Of fruit-trees, over-woody, reach'd too far  
 Their pamper'd boughs, and needed hands to check  
 Fruitless embraces: or, they led the vine 215  
 To wed her elm; she spous'd, about him twines  
 Her marriageable arms, and with her brings  
 Her dow'r, th' adopted clusters, to adorn  
 His barren leaves. Them thus employ'd beheld  
 With pity heav'n's high King, and to Him call'd 220  
 RAPHAEL, the sociable spirit, that deign'd  
 To travel with TOBIAS, and secur'd  
 His marriage with the seven-times wedded maid.

RAPHAEL, said He, thou hear'st what stir on earth  
 SATAN, from hell scap'd thro' the darksome gulf,  
 Hath rais'd in Paradise, and how disturb'd 226  
 This night the human pair, how he designs  
 In them at once to ruin all mankind:  
 Go therefore, half this day as friend with friend  
 Converse with ADAM, in what bow'r or shade 230  
 Thou find'st him, from the heat of noon retir'd,  
 To respite his day-labor with repast,

Or

Or with repose: and such discourse bring on,  
 As may advise him of his happy state,  
 Happiness in his pow'r left free to will, 235  
 Left to his own free will; his will, though free,  
 Yet mutable: whence warn him to beware  
 He swerve not, too secure. Tell him withal  
 His danger, and from whom; what enemy,  
 Late fall'n himself from heav'n, is plotting now 240  
 The fall of others from like state of bliss:  
 By violence? no: for that shall be withstood:  
 But by deceit, and lies: this let him know,  
 Left wilfully transgressing, he pretend  
 Surprisal, un-admonish'd, un-forewarn'd. 245

So spake th'Eternal FATHER, and fulfill'd  
 All justice: nor delay'd the winged faint,  
 After his charge receiv'd; but from among  
 Thousand celestial Ardors, where he stood 249  
 Veil'd with his gorgeous wings, up-springing light,  
 Flew thro' the midst of heav'n: th'Angelic Choirs,  
 On each hand parting, to his speed gave way  
 Through all th'empyrean road; till at the gate  
 Of heav'n arriv'd, the gate self-open'd wide,

On



On golden hinges turning; as by work . 255  
 Divine, the sov'reign architect had fram'd.  
 From hence (no cloud, or, to obstruct his sight,  
 Star interpos'd.) however small, he sees  
 (Not unconform to other shining globes) [crown'd  
 Earth, and the gard'n of GOD, with cedars  
 Above all hills. As when by night the glass 261  
 Of GALILEO, less assur'd, observes  
 Imagin'd lands, and regions, in the moon:  
 Or pilot, from amidst the CYCLADES,  
 DELOS, or SAMOS, first appearing kens 265  
 A cloudy spot. Down thither prone in flight  
 He speeds, and through the vast ethereal sky  
 Sails between worlds and worlds: with stedd' wing  
 Now on the polar winds; then, with quick fan  
 Winnows the buxom air: till within soar 270  
 Of tow'ring eagles, t' all the fowls he seems  
 A phœnix, gaz'd by all, as that sole bird,  
 When to inshrine his reliques in the sun's  
 Bright temple, to ÆGYPTIAN THEBES he flies.  
 At once on th' eastern cliff of Paradise 275  
 He lights, and to his proper shape returns,  
 A Seraph wing'd: six wings he wore, to shade

His lineaments divine ; the pair that clad  
 Each shoulder broad, came mantling o'er his breast  
 With regal ornament: the middle pair 280  
 Girt like a starry zone his waist, and round  
 Skirted his loins, and thighs, with downy gold,  
 And colors dip'd in heav'n: the third, his feet  
 Shadow'd from either heel with feather'd mail, 284  
 Sky-tinctur'd grain! Like M A I A's son he stood,  
 And shook his plumes, that heav'nly fragrance fill'd  
 The circuit wide. Strait knew him all the bands  
 Of Angels under watch ; and to his state,  
 And to his message high, in honor rise ; 289  
 For on some message high they guess'd him bound,  
 Their glitt'ring tents he pass'd, and now is come  
 Into the blissful field, through groves of myrrh,  
 And flow'ring odors, cassia, nard, and balm ;  
 A wilderness of sweets! for Nature here  
 Wanton'd, as in her prime, and plaid at will 295  
 Her virgin-fancies, pouring forth more sweet,  
 Wild above rule, or art, enormous bliss!  
 Him through the spicy forest onward come  
 A D A M discern'd, as in the door he sat  
 Of his cool bow'r ; while now the mounted sun 300

Shot



Shot down direct his fervid rays, to warm [needs:]  
 Earth's inmost womb, (more warmth than ADAM  
 And EVE within, due at her hour, prepar'd  
 For dinner favoury fruits, of taste to please  
 True appetite, and not disrelish thirst 305  
 Of nectarous draughts between, from milky stream,  
 Berry, or grape; to whom thus ADAM call'd.

Haste hither EVE! and worth thy sight behold  
 Eastward among those trees, what glorious shape  
 Comes this way moving; seems another morn 310  
 Ris'n on mid-noon; some great behest from heav'n  
 To us perhaps he brings, and will vouchsafe  
 This day to be our guest. But go with speed,  
 And what thy stores contain, bring forth, and pour  
 Abundance, fit to honor and receive 315  
 Our heav'nly stranger: well we may afford  
 Our givers their own gifts, and large bestow  
 From large bestow'd, where nature multiplies  
 Her fertil growth, and by disburd'ning grows  
 More fruitful, which instructs us not to spare. 320

[mould,  
 To whom thus EVE. ADAM! earth's hallow'd  
 Of God inspir'd! small store will serve, where store

(All seasons) ripe for use hangs on the stalk ;  
 Save what by frugal storing firmness gains  
 To nourish, and superfluous moist consumes. 325  
 But I will haste, and from each bough, and brake,  
 Each plant, and juiciest gourd, will pluck such choice  
 To entertain our Angel-guest, as he  
 Beholding shall confess, that here on earth  
 GOD hath dispens'd his bounties, as in heav'n. 330

So saying, with dispatchful looks in haste  
 She turns, on hospitable thoughts intent  
 What choice to chuse for delicacy best ;  
 What order, so contriv'd as not to mix  
 Tastes, not well join'd, in-elegant ; but bring 335  
 Taste after taste, upheld with kindliest change:  
 Bestirs her then, and from each tender stalk  
 Whatever earth, all-bearing mother, yields  
 In INDIA east or west ; or midde shore  
 In PONTUS, or the PUNIC coast ; or where 340  
 ALCINOUS reign'd ; fruit of all kinds, in coat  
 Rough, or smooth rind, or bearded husk, or shell,  
 She gathers ; tribute large ! and on the board  
 Heaps with un-sparing hand : for drink, the grape

She



She crushes, (inoffensive Must!) and meathes 345  
 From many a berry: and, from sweet kernels press'd,  
 She tempers dulcet creams; nor these to hold  
 Wants her fit vessels pure: then, strews the ground  
 With rose, and odors from the shrub, unfum'd.  
 Mean-while our primitive great fire, to meet 350  
 His god-like guest, walks forth; without more train  
 Accompany'd than with his own complete  
 Perfections; in himself was all his state:  
 More solemn than the tedious pomp that waits  
 On Princes, when their rich retinue long 355  
 Of horses led, and grooms besmear'd with gold,  
 Dazzles the crowd, and sets them all a-gape.  
 Nearer his presence, ADAM, though not aw'd,  
 Yet with submissive approach, and reverence meek,  
 As to a superior nature, bowing low, 360  
 Thus said. Native of heaven! (for other place,  
 None can than heav'n such glorious shape contain)  
 Since by descending from the Thrones above,  
 Those happy places thou hast deign'd a-while  
 To want, and honor these, vouchsafe with us 365  
 Two only, who yet by sov'reign gift possess  
 This spacious ground, in yonder shady bow'r

O

To

To rest; and what the garden choicest bears  
To sit and taste, 'till this meridian heat  
Be over, and the sun more cool decline. 370

Whom thus th'Angelic Virtue answer'd mild,  
ADAM! I therefore came; nor art thou such  
Created, or such place hast here to dwell,  
As may not oft invite, (though spirits of heav'n,)  
To visit thee: lead on then where thy bow'r 375  
O'er shades; for these mid-hours, till ev'ning rise,  
I have at will.—So to the sylvan Lodge  
They came, that like POMONA's arbor smil'd,  
With flow'rets deck'd, and fragrant smells: but EVE  
Undeck'd, save with her self, (more lovely fair 380  
Than Wood-Nymph, or the fairest Goddess feign'd  
Of three, that in mount IDA naked strove!)  
Stood t'entertain her guest from heav'n: no veil  
She needed, virtue-proof; no thought infirm  
Alter'd her cheek. On whom the Angel *Hail* 385  
Bestow'd, the holy salutation us'd  
Long after to blest MARY, second EVE.

Hail, Mother of Mankind! whose fruitful womb  
Shall fill the world more numerous with thy sons,



Than with these various fruits the trees of God 390  
 Have heap'd this table. — Rais'd of grassy turf  
 Their table was, and mossy seats had round:  
 And on her ample square, from side to side,  
 All autumn pil'd; tho' spring, and autumn, here  
 Danc'd hand in hand. A-while discourse they hold;  
 (No fear lest dinner cool) when thus began 396  
 Our author. Heav'nly stranger! please to taste  
 These bounties, which our Nourisher, (from Whom  
 All perfect good, un-measur'd out, descends  
 To us for food, and for delight,) hath caus'd 400  
 The earth to yield: unfavoury food, perhaps,  
 To spiritual natures; only this I know,  
 That one coelestial FATHER gives to all.

To whom the Angel. Therefore what He gives  
 (Whose praise be ever sung!) to man, in part 405  
 Spiritual, may of purest spirits be found  
 No ingrateful food: and food alike those pure  
 Intelligential substances require,  
 As doth your rational: and both contain  
 Within them ev'ry lower faculty 410  
 Of sense, whereby they hear, see, smell, touch, taste:

Tasting concoct, digest, assimilate,  
 And corporeal to incorporeal turn.  
 For know, whatever was created, needs  
 To be sustain'd, and fed: of elements, 419  
 The grosser feeds the purer; earth the sea;  
 Earth, and the sea, feed air; the air, those fires  
 Ethereal; and as lowest, first the moon;  
 Whence, in her visage round, those spots, unpurg'd  
 Vapors, not yet into her substance turn'd. 420  
 Nor doth the moon no nourishment exhale  
 From her moist continent, to higher orbs.  
 The sun, that light imparts to all, receives  
 From all his alimantal recompense,  
 In humid exhalations; and at ev'n 421  
 Sups with the ocean. Though in heav'n the Trees  
 Of Life ambrosial fruitage bear, and vines [more  
 Yield Nectar; though from off the boughs each  
 We brush mellifluous dew, and find the ground  
 Cover'd with pearly grain: yet GOD hath here 430  
 Varied his bounty so with new delights,  
 As may compare with heaven; and to taste  
 Think not I shall be nice. — So down they fat,  
 And to their viands fell: nor seemingly  
 The Angel, nor in mist, (the common gloss 431



Of theologians) but with keen dispatch  
 Of real hunger, and concoctive heat  
 To transubstantiate: what redounds, transpires  
 Through spirits with ease: nor wonder; if by fire  
 Of sooty coal, the empiric alchymist 440  
 Can turn, or holds it possible to turn,  
 Metals of drossiest ore to perfect gold,  
 As from the Mine. Mean-while at table *EVE*  
 Minister'd naked, and their flowing cups  
 With pleasant liquors crown'd. O innocence 445  
 Deserving Paradise! if ever, then,  
 Then had the sons of *GOD* excuse t'have been  
 Enamor'd at that sight: but, in those hearts  
 Love un-libidinous reign'd, nor jealousy  
 Was understood, the injur'd lover's hell. 450

[suffic'd,

Thus when with meats, and drinks, they had  
 Not burden'd nature, sudden mind arose  
 In *ADAM*, not to let th'occasion pass,  
 Giv'n him by this great conference, to know  
 Of things above this world, and of their Being 455  
 Who dwell in heav'n: whose excellence he saw  
 Transcend his own so far; whose radiant forms,

O 3

Divine

Divine effulgence! whose high pow'r, so far  
Exceeded human; and his wary speech  
Thus to th' empyreal minister he fram'd.

460

Inhabitant with GOD! now know I well  
Thy favor, in this honor done to man;  
Under whose lowly roof thou hast vouchsaf'd  
To enter, and these earthly fruits to taste;  
Food not of Angels, yet accepted so,  
As that more willingly thou could'st not seem  
At heav'n's high feasts t'have fed: yet what compare?

465

To whom the winged Hierarch reply'd.  
O ADAM! One Almighty is, from Whom  
All things proceed, and up to Him return,  
If not deprav'd from good; created all  
Such to perfection, one first matter all,  
Indu'd with various forms, various degrees  
Of substance, and in things that live, of life:  
But more refin'd, more spiritous, and pure,  
As nearer to him plac'd, or nearer tending,  
Each in their several active spheres assign'd:  
Till body up to spirit work, in bounds

470

475

Proportion'd



Proportion'd to each kind. So, from the root  
 Springs lighter the green stalk; from thence, the leaves  
 More aery; last, the bright consummate flow'r 481  
 Spirits odorous breathes; flow'rs, and their fruit,  
 (Man's nourishment) by gradual scale sublim'd,  
 To vital spirits aspire, to animal,  
 To intellectual; give both life, and sense, 485  
 Fancy, and understanding; whence the soul  
 Reason receives; and reason is her Being,  
 Discursive, or intuitive; discourse  
 Is ofttest yours, the latter most is ours;  
 Diff'ring but in degree, of kind the same. 490  
 Wonder not then, what GOD for you saw good  
 If I refuse not, but convert, as you,  
 To proper substance. Time may come, when men  
 With Angels may participate, and find  
 No inconvenient diet, nor too light fare: 495  
 And from these corporal nutrimentts, perhaps,  
 Your bodies may at last turn all to spirit,  
 Improv'd by tract of time; and wing'd ascend  
 Ethereal, as we; or may at choice,  
 Here, or in heav'nly Paradises, dwell; 500  
 If ye be found obedient, and retain

Unalterably firm His love entire,  
 Whose progeny you are. Mean-while, enjoy  
 Your fill what happiness this happy state  
 Can comprehend, incapable of more. 505

To whom the patriarch of mankind reply'd:  
 O favorable spirit, propitious guest!  
 Well hast thou taught the way that might direct  
 Our knowledge, and the scale of nature set  
 From centre to circumference; whereon, 510  
 In contemplation of created things,  
 By steps we may ascend to GOD. But say,  
 What meant that caution join'd, IF YE BE FOUND  
 OBEDIENT? Can we want obedience then  
 To Him? or possibly His love desert 515  
 Who form'd us from the dust, and plac'd us here,  
 Full to the utmost measure of what bliss  
 Human desires can seek, or apprehend?

To whom the Angel. Son of heav'n, and earth,  
 Attend! That thou art happy, owe to GOD: 520  
 That thou continu'st such, owe to thy self,  
 That is, to thy obedience; therein stand.

This



This was that caution giv'n thee ; be advis'd !  
 GOD made thee perfect, not immutable ;  
 And good He made thee ; but to persevere 525  
 He left it in thy pow'r ; ordain'd thy will  
 By nature free, not over-rul'd by fate  
 In-extricable, or strict necessity.  
 Our voluntary service He requires,  
 Not our necessitated ; such with Him 530  
 Finds no acceptance, nor can find : for how  
 Can hearts, not free, be try'd whether they serve  
 Willing or no, who will but what they must  
 By destiny, and can no other chuse ?  
 My self, and all th' angelic host, that stand 535  
 In sight of GOD in-thron'd, our happy state  
 Hold, as you yours, while our obedience holds ;  
 On other surety none : freely we serve,  
 Because we freely love ; as in our will  
 To love, or not, in this we stand, or fall. 540  
 And some are fall'n, to disobedience fall'n ;  
 And so, from heav'n to deepest hell : O fall  
 From what high state of blifs, into what woe !

To whom our great progenitor. Thy words  
 Attentive, and with more delighted ear, 545

Divine instructor! I have heard, than when  
 Cherubic songs by night from neigh'ring hills  
 Aereal music send. Nor knew I not  
 To be both will, and deed, created free:  
 Yet, that we never shall forget to love 550  
 Our Maker, and obey Him, whose command  
 Single, is yet so just, my constant thoughts  
 Assur'd me, and still assure; though what thou tell'st  
 Hath past in heav'n, some doubt within me move,  
 But more desire to hear (if thou consent) 555  
 The full relation: which must needs be strange,  
 Worthy of sacred silence to be heard:  
 And we have yet large day; for, scarce the sun  
 Hath finish'd half his journey, and scarce begins  
 His other half in the great zone of heav'n. 560

Thus ADAM made request; and RAPHAEL,  
 After short pause assenting, thus began.

High matter thou injoin'st me, O prime of men!  
 Sad task, and hard! For how shall I relate  
 To human sense th'invisible exploits 565  
 Of warring spirits? How, without remorse,  
 The ruin of so many, glorious once,



And perfect, while they stood? how, last, unfold  
 The secrets of another world, perhaps  
 Not lawful to reveal? Yet, for thy good, 570  
 This is dispens'd: and what furmounts the reach  
 Of human sense, I shall delineate so,  
 By lik'ning spiritual to corporeal forms,  
 As may express them best: though, what if earth  
 Be but the shadow of heav'n; and things therein  
 Each t'other like, more than on earth is thought?

As yet this world was not, and CHAOS wild  
 Reign'd where these heav'ns now rowl, where earth  
 Upon her centre pois'd; when on a day [now rests  
 (For time, though in eternity, apply'd 580  
 To motion, measures all things durable  
 By present, past, and future) on such day  
 As heav'n's great year brings forth, th' empyreal  
 Of Angels, by imperial summons call'd, [host  
 Innumerable before th' Almighty's throne 585  
 Forthwith, from all the ends of heav'n, appear'd  
 Under their hierarchs in orders bright:  
 Ten thousand thousand ensigns high advanc'd,  
 (Standards, and gonfalons, 'twixt van, and rear)  
 Stream

Stream in the air, and for distinction serve 590  
 Of Hierarchies, of Orders, and Degrees:  
 Or in their glittering tissues bear imblaz'd  
 Holy memorials, acts of zeal, and love,  
 Recorded eminent. Thus when in orbs  
 Of circuit in-expressible they stood, 595  
 Orb within orb, the FATHER Infinite,  
 By whom in bliss imbosom'd sat the SON,  
 Amidst (as from a flaming mount, whose top  
 Brightness had made invisible) thus spake.

Hear all ye Angels, progeny of light, 600  
 Thrones, Dominations, Princedoms, Virtues, Pow'rs!  
 Hear My decree, which unrevok'd shall stand.  
 This day I have begot whom I declare  
 My only SON, and on this holy hill  
 Him have anointed, whom ye now behold 605  
 At my right hand; your Head I Him appoint:  
 And by My Self have sworn, to Him shall bow  
 All knees in heav'n, and shall confess Him Lord.  
 Under His great Vice-gerent reign abide  
 United, as one individual soul, 610  
 For ever happy; Him who disobey,

Me



Me disobey, breaks union, and that day  
 Cast our from GOD, and blessed vision, falls  
 Into utter darkness, deep in-gulf'd, his place  
 Ordain'd without redemption, without end. 615

So spake th' Omnipotent, and with His words  
 All seem'd well pleas'd : all seem'd, but were not all.  
 That day, as other solemn days, they spent  
 In song, and dance, about the sacred hill ;  
 Mystical dance ! (which yonder starry sphere 620  
 Of Planets, and of Fix'd, in all her wheels  
 Resembles nearest ; mazes intricate,  
 Eccentric, intervolv'd, yet regular,  
 Then most, when most irregular they seem,)  
 And in their motions harmony divine 625  
 So smoothes her charming tones, that GOD's own ear  
 Listens delighted. Ev'ning now approach'd  
 (For we have also our ev'ning, and our morn ;  
 We ours for change delectable, not need)  
 Forthwith from dance to sweet repast they turn  
 Desirous : all in circles as they stood, 631  
 Tables are set, and on a sudden pil'd  
 With Angels food, and rubied Nectar flows

In

In pearl, in diamond, and massy gold ; 634  
 Fruit of delicious vines, the growth of heav'n!  
 On flow'rs repos'd, and with rich flow'rets crown'd,  
 They eat, they drink, and in communion sweet  
 Quaff immortality, and joy, (secure  
 Of surfeit, where full measure only bounds  
 Excess) before th' all-bounteous King, who showr'd  
 With copious hand, rejoicing in their joy. 641  
 Now when ambrosial night, with clouds exhal'd  
 From that high mount of God, whence light and shade  
 Spring both, the face of brightest heav'n had chang'd  
 To grateful twilight ; (for night comes not there  
 In darker veil) and roseate dew's dispos'd 646  
 All but th' un-sleeping eyes of God to rest ;  
 Wide over all the plain, and wider far  
 Than all this globose earth in plain out-spread,  
 (Such are the courts of God!) th' angelic throng,  
 Dispers'd in bands, and files, their camp extend 651  
 By living streams, among the trees of life,  
 Pavilions numberless! and sudden rear'd,  
 Coelestial tabernacles, where they slept [course,  
 Fann'd with cool winds ; save those who, in their  
 Melodious hymns about the sov'reign throne 656



Alternate all night long. But, not so wak'd  
 SATAN: (so call him now; his former name  
 Is heard no more in heaven) He of the first,  
 If not the first Arch-Angel, great in pow'r, 660  
 In favor, and pre-eminence; yet fraught  
 With envy against the SON of GOD, that day  
 Honor'd by his great FATHER, and proclaim'd  
 MESSIAH, King anointed, could not bear 664  
 Thro' pride that sight, and thought himself impair'd.  
 Deep malice thence conceiving, and disdain,  
 Soon as midnight brought on the dusky hour,  
 Friendliest to sleep, and silence, he resolv'd  
 With all his legions to dislodge, and leave  
 Un-worship'd, un-obey'd, the throne supreme, 670  
 Contemptuous; and his next subordinate  
 Awak'ning, thus to him in secret spake.

Sleep'st thou, companion dear! what sleep can  
 Thy eye-lids, and remember'st what decree [close  
 Of yesterday, so late hath pass'd the lips 675  
 Of heav'n's Almighty? Thou to me thy thoughts  
 Wast wont, I mine to thee was wont t'impart:  
 Both waking we were one; how then can now  
 Thy

Thy sleep dissent? New laws thou see'st impos'd:  
 New laws from Him who reigns, new minds may raise  
 In us who serve; new counsels; to debate 681  
 What doubtful may ensue: more in this place  
 To utter is not safe. — Assemble thou  
 Of all those myriads which we lead the chief:  
 Tell them that by command, e'er yet dim night 685  
 Her shadowy cloud withdraws, I am to haste  
 (And all who under me their banners wave)  
 Homeward, with flying march, where we possess  
 The quarters of the north; there to prepare  
 Fit entertainment to receive our King, 690  
 The great MESSIAH, and his new commands;  
 Who speedily through all their hierarchies  
 Intends to pass triumphant, and give laws.

So spake the false Arch-Angel, and infus'd  
 Bad influence into th' unwary breast 695  
 Of his associate: he together calls,  
 Or several one by one, the regent Pow'rs,  
 (Under him regent) tells, as he was taught,  
 That the Most High commanding, now e'er night  
 Now e'er dim night had dis-incumber'd heav'n, 700

The



The great hierarchal standard was to move:  
 Tells the suggested cause, and casts between  
 Ambiguous words, and jealousies; to sound,  
 Or taint, integrity: but all obey'd  
 The wonted signal, and superior voice 705  
 Of their great Potentate: (for great indeed  
 His name, and high was his degree in heav'n:)  
 His count'nance, as the morning-star that guides  
 The starry flock, allur'd them; and with lies  
 Drew after him the third part of heav'n's host. 710

Mean-while th'Eternal Eye, whose sight discerns  
 Abstrusest thoughts, from forth His holy mount,  
 And from within the golden lamps that burn  
 Nightly before Him, saw, without their light,  
 Rebellion rising; saw, in whom, how spread 715  
 Among the Sons of Morn, what multitudes  
 Were banded to oppose His high decree;  
 And smiling, to His only SON thus said.

SON! Thou in whom My glory I behold  
 In full resplendence, Heir of all My might! 720  
 Nearly it now concerns Us to be sure

P

Of

Of our Omnipotence; and with what arms  
 We mean to hold, what antiently We claim  
 Of Deity, or empire: such a foe  
 Is rising, who intends t' erect his throne 725  
 Equal to Ours, throughout the spacious north.  
 Nor so content, hath in his thought to try  
 In battel, what Our pow'r is, or Our right.  
 Let Us advise, and to this hazard draw  
 With speed what force is left, and all employ 730  
 In our defense: lest unawares we lose  
 This Our high place, Our sanctuary, Our hill.

To whom the SON, with calm aspect, and clear,  
 (Light'ning divine, in-effable, serene!)  
 Made answer. Mighty FATHER! Thou Thy foes  
 Justly hast in derision, and secure 736  
 Laugh'ft at their vain designs, and tumults vain:  
 Matter to Me of glory! Whom their hate  
 Illustrates, when they see all regal pow'r  
 Giv'n Me to quell their pride; and in event 740  
 Know whether I be dext'rous to subdue  
 Thy rebels, or be found the worst in heav'n.



So spake the SON: but SATAN, with his Pow'rs,  
 Far was advanc'd on winged speed; an host  
 Innumerable! as the stars of night, 745  
 Or (stars of morning) dew-drops, which the sun  
 Impearls! on every leaf, and every flow'r.  
 Regions they pass'd, and mighty regencies  
 Of Seraphim, and Potentates, and Thrones,  
 In their triple degrees: (regions, to which 750  
 All thy dominion, ADAM, is no more,  
 Than what this garden is to all the earth,  
 And all the sea; from one entire globose  
 Stretch'd into longitude;) which having pass'd,  
 At length into the limits of the north 755  
 They came; and SATAN to his royal seat  
 High on a hill, far blazing (as a mount  
 Rais'd on a mount) with pyramids, and tow'rs,  
 From diamond quarries hew'n, and rocks of gold,  
 The Palace of great LUCIFER; (so call 760  
 That structure, in the dialect of men  
 Interpreted) which not long after he,  
 Affecting all equality with GOD,  
 In imitation of that mount whereon  
 MESSIAH was declar'd in sight of heav'n, 765

The Mountain of the Congregation call'd:  
 For thither he assembled all his train;  
 Pretending so commanded, to consult  
 About the great reception of their King,  
 Thither to come: and with calumnious art 770  
 Of counterfeited truth thus held their ears.

Thrones, Dominations, Princedoms, Virtues,  
 If these magnific titles yet remain, [Pow'rs!  
 Not merely titular! since by decree  
 Another now hath to Himself ingross'd 775  
 All pow'r, and us eclips'd, under the name  
 Of King anointed: for Whom all this haste  
 Of midnight-march, and hurry'd meeting here;  
 This only to consult, how we may best,  
 With what may be devis'd of honors new, 780  
 Receive Him, coming to receive from us  
 Knee-tribute, yet un-paid: prostration vile!  
 Too much to One! but double, how indur'd!  
 To One, and to His image now proclaim'd!  
 But, what if better counsels might erect 785  
 Our minds, and teach us to cast off this yoke?  
 Will ye submit your necks, and chuse to bend

The



The supple knee? Ye will not, if I trust  
 To know ye right; or if ye know your selves  
 Natives, and sons of heav'n; possess before 790  
 By none; and if not equal all, yet free,  
 Equally free: for orders, and degrees,  
 Jar not with liberty, but well consist.  
 Who can in reason then, or right, assume  
 Monarchy over such as live by right 795  
 His equals? if in pow'r and splendor less,  
 In freedom equal. Or, can introduce  
 Law and edict on us, who without law  
 Err not? Much less, for This to be our Lord,  
 And look for adoration, to th' abuse 800  
 Of those imperial titles, which assert  
 Our being ordain'd to govern, not to serve! —

Thus far his bold discourse without controul  
 Had audience; when among the Seraphim,  
 ABDIEL, (than whom none with more zeal ador'd  
 The Deity, and divine commands obey'd) 806  
 Stood up, and in a flame of zeal severe,  
 The current of his fury thus oppos'd.

O argument blasphemous, false, and proud!  
 Words! which no ear ever to hear in heav'n 810  
 Expected, least of all from Thee, ingrate!  
 In place thy self so high above thy peers.  
 Canst thou with impious obloquy condemn  
 The just decree of GOD, pronounc'd, and sworn;  
 That to His only SON, by right indu'd 815  
 With regal sceptre, every soul in heav'n  
 Shall bend the knee, and in that honor due  
 Confess him rightful King? Unjust, thou say'st,  
 Flatly unjust, to bind with laws the free,  
 And, equal over equals, to let reign 820  
 One over all, with unsucceeded pow'r —  
 Shalt *Thou* give law to GOD? shalt *Thou* dispute  
 With Him the points of liberty, who made [heav'n  
 Thee what thou art? and form'd the Pow'rs of  
 Such as He pleas'd, and circumscrib'd their Being?  
 Yet, by experience taught, we know how good, 826  
 And of our good, and of our dignity  
 How provident He is; how far from thought  
 To make us less: bent rather to exalt  
 Our happy state, under one Head more near 830  
 United.



United.—But, to grant it thee unjust,  
 That equal over equals monarch reign:  
 Thy self (though great and glorious) dost thou count,  
 Or all Angelic Nature join'd in one,  
 Equal to Him begotten SON? By Whom, 835  
 As by His WORD, the mighty FATHER made  
 All things, ev'n *Thee*, and all the spirits of heav'n,  
 By Him created in their bright degrees:  
 Crown'd them with glory, and to their glory nam'd  
 Thrones, Dominations, Princedoms, Virtues, Pow'rs;  
 Essential Pow'rs! nor by his reign obscur'd, 841  
 But more illustrious made; since He the Head  
 One of our number thus reduc'd becomes;  
 His laws our laws; all honor to Him done  
 Returns our own.—Cease then this impious rage,  
 And tempt not these; but hasten to appease 846  
 Th'incens'd FATHER, and th'incens'd SON,  
 While pardon may be found, in time besought,

So spake the fervent Angel: but his zeal  
 None seconded, as out of season judg'd, 850  
 Or singular, and rash: whereat rejoic'd  
 Th'apostate, and more haughty thus reply'd.

P 4

That

That we were form'd then, say'st thou? and the work  
 Of secondary hands, by task transfer'd 854  
 From FATHER to His SON? Strange point, and new!  
 Doctrine which we would know whence learn'd: who  
 When this creation was? Remember'st *Thou* [saw  
 Thy making, while the Maker gave thee Being?  
 We know no time when *We* were not as now;  
 Know none before us; self-begot, self-rais'd 860  
 By our own quick'ning pow'r, when fatal course  
 Had circled his full orb, the birth mature  
 Of this our native heav'n, ethereal sons.  
 Our puissance is our own, our own right hand  
 Shall teach us highest deeds, by proof to try 865  
 Who is our equal: then! thou shalt behold  
 Whether by supplication we intend  
 Address, and to begird th'Almighty throne  
 Beseeching, or besieging. This report,  
 These tidings, carry to th'anointed King; 870  
 And fly, e'er evil intercept thy flight!

He said, and, as the sound of waters deep,  
 Hoarse murmur echo'd to his words applause,  
 Through the infinite host: nor less for that

The



Book V. *PARADISE LOST.* 217

The flaming Seraph fearless, though alone 875  
Incompas'd round with foes, thus answer'd bold.

O alienate from GOD, O spirit accurst,  
Forfaken of all good! I see thy fall  
Determin'd, and thy hapless crew involv'd  
In this perfidious fraud, contagion spread 880  
Both of thy crime, and punishment. Henceforth  
No more be troubled how to quit the yoke  
Of GOD'S MESSIAH: those indulgent laws  
Will not be now vouchsaf'd; other decrees  
Against thee are gone forth, without recall. 885  
That golden sceptre which thou didst reject,  
Is now an iron rod, to bruise, and break  
Thy disobedience. Well thou didst advise;  
Yet not for thy advice, or threats, I fly  
These wicked tents devoted; lest the wrath 890  
Impendent, raging into sudden flame  
Distinguish not: for soon expect to feel  
His thunder on thy head, devouring fire!  
Then! who created thee lamenting learn,  
When who can un-create thee thou shalt know. 895  
So

So spake the Seraph *ABDIEL*, faithful found  
 Among the faithless, faithful only he:  
 Among innumerable false, un-mov'd,  
 Un-shaken, un-seduc'd, un-terrify'd,  
 His loyalty he kept, his love, his zeal. 900  
 Nor number, nor example, with him wrought  
 To swerve from truth, or change his constant mind  
 Though single. From amidst them forth he pass'd,  
 Long way through hostile scorn; which he sustain'd  
 Superior, nor of violence fear'd ought: 905  
 And, with retorted scorn, his back he turn'd  
 On those proud tow'rs, to swift destruction doom'd.

*The end of the fifth Book.*



20 JY 63

THE



---

THE  
SIXTH BOOK  
OF  
PARADISE LOST.

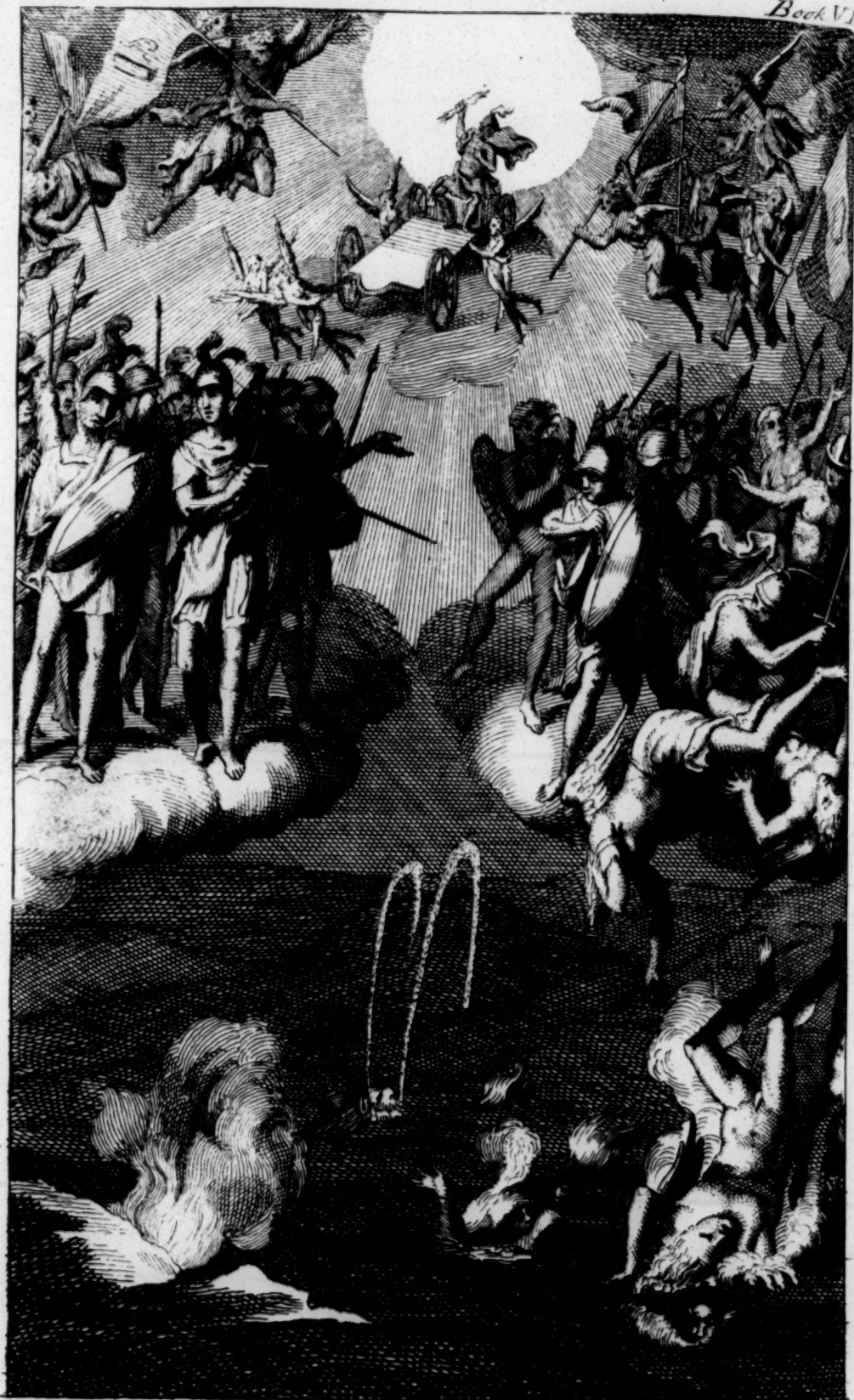


## The ARGUMENT.

*Raphael continues to relate how Michael and Gabriel were sent forth to battel against Satan and his Angels. The first fight describ'd: Satan and his Powers retire under night: he calls a council, invents devilish engines, which in the second day's fight put Michael and his Angels to some disorder; but they at length pulling up mountains, overwhelm'd both the force and machines of Satan: yet the tumult not so ending, GOD on the third day sends MESSIAH His SON, for whom He had reserv'd the glory of that victory: He in the power of His FATHER coming to the place, and causing all His legions to stand still on either side, with His chariot and thunder driving into the midst of His enemies, persues them, unable to resist, towards the wall of heav'n; which opening, they leap down with horror and confusion into the place of punishment prepared for them in the Deep: MESSIAH returns with triumph to His FATHER.*









---

---

# PARADISE LOST.

---



---

## B O O K VI.

---

**A**LL night the dread-less Angel, un-persu'd,  
Thro' heav'n's wide champain held his  
way ; till Morn,

Wak'd by the circling Hours, with rosy hand  
Un-barr'd the gates of light. There is a cave  
Within the mount of G O D, fast by His throne 5  
Where light, and darkness, in perpetual round  
Lodge, and dis-lodge, by turns ; which makes thro'  
Grateful vicissitude, like day, and night : [heav'n  
Light issues forth, and at the other door  
Obsequious darkness enters, till her hour 10  
To veil the heav'n, (tho' darkness there might well  
Seem

Seem twilight here) and now went forth the Morn,  
 Such as in highest heav'n, array'd in gold  
 Empyreal; from before her vanish'd night, 14  
 Shot thro' with orient beams: when all the plain  
 Cover'd with thick imbattled squadrons bright,  
 Chariots, and flaming arms, and fiery steeds,  
 Reflecting blaze on blaze, first met his view.  
 War he perceiv'd, war in procinct; and found  
 Already known, what he for news had thought 20  
 To have reported: gladly then he mix'd  
 Among those friendly Pow'rs, who him receiv'd  
 With joy, and acclamations loud, that One,  
 That of so many myriads fall'n, yet One  
 Return'd, not lost. On to the sacred hill 25  
 They led him high applauded, and present  
 Before the seat supreme; from whence a voice,  
 From midst a golden cloud, thus mild was heard.

[fought

Servant of GOD, well done! well hast thou  
 The better fight, who single hast maintain'd, 30  
 Against revolted multitudes, the cause  
 Of truth, in word mightier than they in arms:  
 And for the testimony of truth hast born



Universal reproach; far worfe to bear  
 Than violence: for this was all thy care, 35  
 To stand approv'd in fight of GOD, tho' worlds  
 Judg'd thee perverse. The easier conquest now  
 Remains thee, aided by this host of friends,  
 Back on thy foes more glorious to return,  
 Than scorn'd thou didst depart; and to subdue  
 By force, who reason for their law refuse, 41  
 Right reason for their law; and for their King  
 MESSIAH, who by right of merit reigns.  
 Go, MICHAEL! of coelestial armies Prince;  
 And thou, in military prowess next, 45  
 GABRIEL! lead forth to battel these my sons  
 Invincible; lead forth my armed Saints,  
 By thousands, and by millions, rang'd for fight;  
 Equal in number to that Godless crew,  
 Rebellious: them with fire, and hostile arms, 50  
 Fearless assault; and to the brow of heav'n  
 Persuing, drive them out from GOD, and bliss,  
 Into their place of punishment, the gulph  
 Of TARTARUS; which ready opens wide  
 His fiery chaos to receive their fall. 55

So

So spake the Sovereign Voice, and clouds began  
 To darken all the hill, and smoke to rowl  
 In dusky wreathes reluctant flames; the sign  
 Of wrath awak'd! Nor with less dread the loud  
 Ethereal trumpet from on high 'gan blow: 60  
 At which command, the Powers militant  
 That stood for heav'n, (in mighty quadrate join'd  
 Of union irresistible) mov'd on  
 In silence their bright legions, to the found  
 Of instrumental harmony, that breath'd 65  
 Heroic ardor to advent'rous deeds,  
 Under their God-like Leaders, in the cause  
 Of GOD, and His MESSIAH. On they move  
 Indissolubly firm; nor obvious hill, 69  
 Nor streit'ning vale, nor wood, nor stream divides  
 Their perfect ranks: for, high above the ground  
 Their march was, and the passive air up-bore  
 Their nimble tread: as when the total kind  
 Of birds, in orderly array on wing,  
 Came summon'd over EDEN, to receive 75  
 Their names of thee: so, over many a tract  
 Of heav'n they march'd, and many a province wide,  
 Ten-



Tenfold the length of this terrene. At last,  
 Far in th' horizon to the north appear'd  
 From skirt to skirt a fiery region, stretch'd 80  
 In battailous aspect, and nearer view  
 Bristled with upright beams innumerable  
 Of rigid spears, and helmets throng'd, and shields  
 Various, with boastful argument portraid,  
 The banded Pow'rs of SATAN, hastening on 85  
 With furious expedition: for they ween'd  
 That self-same day, by fight, or by surprize,  
 To win the mount of GOD; and on His throne  
 To set the envier of His state, the proud  
 Aspirer: but their thoughts prov'd fond, and vain, 90  
 In the mid-way. Though strange to us it seem'd  
 At first, that Angel should with Angel war,  
 And in fierce hosting meet; who wont to meet  
 So oft in festivals of joy, and love  
 Unanimous, as sons of one Great Sire, 95  
 Hymning th' Eternal FATHER: but, the shout  
 Of battel now began, and rushing found  
 Of on-set, ended soon each milder thought.  
 High in the midst, exalted as a God,  
 Th' apostate in his sun-bright chariot sat, 100

Q

Idol

Idol of majesty divine! inclos'd  
 With flaming Cherubim, and golden shields:  
 Then, lighted from his gorgeous throne, (for now  
 'Twixt host and host but narrow space was left,  
 A dreadful interval! and, front to front 105  
 Presented, stood in terrible array,  
 Of hideous length) before the cloudy van,  
 On the rough edge of battel e'er it join'd,  
 SATAN, with vast and haughty strides advanc'd,  
 Came tow'ring, arm'd in adamant, and gold: 110  
 ABDIEL that sight indur'd not, where he stood  
 Among the mightiest, bent on highest deeds;  
 And thus his own undaunted heart explores.

O heav'n! that such resemblance of the Highest  
 Should yet remain; where faith, and realty, [might  
 Remain not: wherefore should not strength, and  
 There fail, where virtue fails; or weakest prove,  
 Where boldest? Though to fight unconquerable,  
 His puissance (trusting in th' Almighty's aid!)  
 I mean to try; whose reason I have try'd, 115  
 Unsound, and false: nor is it ought but just,  
 That he who in debate of truth hath won,

Should



Should win in arms; in both disputes alike  
Victor: though brutish that contest, and foul,  
When reason hath to deal with force; yet so 125  
Most reason is that reason overcome.

So pondering, and from his armed Peers  
Forth-stepping opposite, half way he met  
His daring foe, at this prevention more  
Incens'd, and thus securely him defy'd. 130

Proud, art thou met? thy hope was to have reach'd  
The height of thy aspiring un-oppos'd,  
The throne of GOD unguarded, and his side  
Abandon'd, at the terror of thy pow'r,  
Or potent tongue: fool! not to think how vain  
Against th' Omnipotent to rise in arms: 136  
Who out of smallest things, could, without end,  
Have rais'd incessant armies, to defeat  
Thy folly; or with solitary hand,  
Reaching beyond all limit, at one blow, 140  
Un-aided, could have finish'd thee, and whelm'd  
Thy legions under darkness: but, thou see'st  
All are not of thy train; there be, who faith

Prefer, and piety to G O D; though then  
 To thee not visible, when I alone 145  
 Seem'd in thy world erroneous to dissent  
 From all: my Sect thou feest; now learn too late  
 How few sometimes may know, when thousands err.

Whom the grand foe, with scornful eye askance,  
 Thus answer'd. Ill for thee, but in wish'd hour 150  
 Of my revenge, first sought for, thou return'st  
 From flight, seditious Angel! to receive  
 Thy merited reward, the first assay  
 Of this right hand provok'd, since first that tongue,  
 Inspir'd with contradiction, durst oppose 155  
 A third part of the Gods, in synod met  
 Their Deities t'assert: who, while they feel  
 Vigor divine within them, can allow  
 Omnipotence to none. But, well thou com'st  
 Before thy fellows, ambitious to win 160  
 From me some plume; that thy success may show  
 Destruction to the rest: this pause between,  
 (Un-answer'd lest thou boast) to let thee know,  
 At first I thought that liberty, and heav'n,  
 To heav'nly souls had been all one; but now 165



I see that most through sloth had rather *serve*,  
 Ministring spirits, train'd up in feast, and song!  
 Such hast thou arm'd, the minstrelsy of heav'n,  
 Servility with freedom to contend, 169  
 As both their deeds compar'd this day shall prove.

To whom in brief thus *ABDIEL* stern reply'd.  
 Apostate! still thou err'st, nor end wilt find  
 Of erring, from the path of truth remote:  
 Unjustly thou deprav'st it with the name  
 Of *Servitude*, to serve whom *GOD* ordains, 175  
 Or Nature; *GOD*, and Nature, bid the same,  
 When he who rules is worthiest, and excels  
 Them whom he governs. This is servitude,  
 To serve th' unwise, or him who hath rebell'd  
 Against his worthier, as Thine now serve Thee, 180  
 Thy self not free, but to thy self inthrall'd;  
 Yet leudly dar'st our ministring upbraid.  
 Reign thou in hell, thy kingdom; let me serve  
 In heav'n *GOD* ever blest, and his divine  
 Behests obey, worthiest to be obey'd! 185  
 Yet chains in hell, not realms, expect: mean-while

From me return'd, as erst thou saidst, from flight,  
This greeting on thy impious crest receive.

So saying, a noble stroke he lifted high,  
Which hung not, but so swift with tempest fell 190  
On the proud crest of SATAN, that no fight,  
Nor motion of swift thought, less could his shield,  
Such ruin intercept: ten paces huge  
He back recoil'd; the tenth, on bended knee,  
His massy spear up-staid: as if on earth 195  
Winds under ground, or waters, forcing way,  
Side-long had push'd a mountain from his seat,  
Half-sunk with all his pines. Amazement seiz'd  
The rebel thrones, but greater rage, to see 199  
Thus foil'd their Mightiest: ours joy fill'd, and shout,  
Presage of victory, and fierce desire  
Of battel: whereat MICHAEL bid sound  
Th'Arch-Angel trumpet; thro' the Vast of heav'n  
It sounded, and the faithful armies rung  
Hosanna to the Highest: nor stood at gaze 205  
The adverse legions, nor less hideous join'd  
The horrid shock. Now storming fury rose,  
And



Book VI. *PARADISE LOST.* 231

And clamor, such as heard in heav'n till now  
Was never; arms on armor clashing bray'd  
Horrible discord, and the madding wheels 210  
Of brazen chariots rag'd: dire was the noise  
Of conflict! over head the dismal hiss  
Of fiery darts in flaming volleys flew;  
And flying, vaulted either host with fire.  
So, under fiery Cope together rush'd 215  
Both battels main, with ruinous assault,  
And in-extinguishable rage: all heav'n  
Resounded; and had earth been then, all earth  
Had to her centre shook. What wonder? when  
Millions of fierce encountring Angels fought 220  
On either side, the least of whom could wield  
These elements, and arm him with the force  
Of all their regions: how much more of pow'r  
Army against army, numberless, to raise  
Dreadful combustion warring, and disturb, 225  
Though not destroy, their happy native seat!  
Had not th'Eternal King Omnipotent,  
From His strong hold of heav'n, high over-rul'd  
And limited their might: though number'd such,  
As each divided legion might have seem'd 230

A numerous host; in strength, each armed hand,  
 A legion; led in fight, yet Leader seem'd  
 Each warrior; single, as in chief, expert  
 When to advance, or stand, or turn the sway  
 Of battel, open when, and when to close 235  
 The ridges of grim war: no thought of flight,  
 None of retreat, no unbecoming deed  
 That argu'd fear: each on himself rely'd,  
 As only in his arm the moment lay  
 Of victory. Deeds of eternal fame 240  
 Were done, but infinite; for wide was spread  
 That war, and various: sometimes on firm ground,  
 A standing fight; then, soaring on main wing,  
 Tormented all the air; all air seem'd then  
 Conflicting fire. Long time in even scale 245  
 The battel hung; till SATAN, (who that day  
 Prodigious pow'r had shewn, and met in arms  
 No equal) ranging through the dire attack  
 Of fighting Seraphim confus'd, at length  
 Saw where the sword of MICHAEL smote, and fell'd  
 Squadrons at once; with huge two-handed sway 251  
 Brandish'd aloft, the horrid edge came down  
 Wide-wasting! such destruction to withstand  
 He



He hasted, and oppos'd the rocky orb  
Of ten-fold adamant, his ample shield, 255  
A vast circumference! At his approach  
The great Arch-Angel from his war-like toil  
Surceas'd ; and glad, as hoping here to end  
Intestine war in heav'n, th' arch-foe subdu'd,  
Or captive drag'd in chains, with hostile frown, 260  
And visage all inflam'd, first thus began.

Author of evil! un-known 'till thy revolt,  
Un-nam'd in heav'n, now plenteous, (as thou seest)  
These acts of hateful strife ; hateful to all,  
Though heaviest (by just measure) on thy self, 265  
And thy adherents: how hast thou disturb'd  
Heav'n's blessed peace, and into nature brought  
Misery, un-created 'till the crime  
Of thy rebellion! how hast thou instill'd  
Thy malice into thousands, once upright 270  
And faithful, now prov'd false! But think not here  
To trouble holy rest: heav'n casts thee out  
From all her confines: heav'n, the seat of bliss,  
Brooks not the works of violence, and war.  
Hence then! and evil go with thee along, 275  
Thy offspring, to the place of evil, hell ;

Thou and thy wicked crew! there mingle broils;  
 E'er this avenging sword begin thy doom;  
 Or some more sudden vengeance, wing'd from God,  
 Precipitate thee with augmented pain. 280

So spake the Prince of Angels: to whom thus  
 The Adversary. Nor think thou with wind  
 Of aery threats to awe, whom yet with deeds  
 Thou canst not. Hast thou turn'd the least of these  
 To flight? or if to fall, but that they rise 285  
 Un-vanquish'd; easier to transact with me [threats  
 That thou shouldst hope, imperious! and with  
 To chase me hence? Err not that so shall end  
 The strife which thou call'st evil, but we style  
 The strife of glory: which we mean to win, 290  
 Or turn this heav'n it self into the hell  
 Thou fablest; here, however, to dwell free,  
 If not to reign: mean-while thy utmost force  
 (And join Him nam'd ALMIGHTY to thy aid,)  
 I fly not; but have fought thee far, and nigh. 295

They ended parle, and both addrest for fight  
 Un-speakable: for who, though with the tongue  
 Of Angels, can relate? or to what things



Liken on earth conspicuous, that may lift  
 Human imagination to such height 300  
 Of God-like pow'r? For likest Gods they seem'd,  
 Stood they, or mov'd; in stature, motion, arms,  
 Fit to decide the empire of great heav'n!  
 Now wav'd their fiery swords, and in the air  
 Made horrid circles; two broad suns their shields  
 Blaz'd opposite, while expectation stood 306  
 In horror: from each hand with speed retir'd,  
 Where erst was thickest fight, th' angelic throng;  
 And left large field, unsafe within the wind  
 Of such commotion: such as (to set forth 310  
 Great things by small) if nature's concord broke,  
 Among the constellations war were sprung,  
 Two planets, rushing from aspect malign  
 Of fiercest opposition, in mid-sky, 314  
 Should combat, and their jarring spheres confound.  
 Together both, with next t' Almighty arm  
 Up-lifted imminent, one stroke they aim'd  
 That might determine, and not need repeat,  
 (As not of pow'r, at once) nor odds appear'd  
 In might, or swift prevention: but the sword 320  
 Of MICHAEL, from the armory of GOD

Was

Was giv'n him temper'd so, that neither keen,  
 Nor solid, might resist that edge: it met  
 The sword of SATAN, with steep force to smite  
 Descending, and in half cut sheer; nor staid, 325  
 But with swift wheel reverse, deep entring, shar'd  
 All his right side: then SATAN first knew pain,  
 And writh'd him to and fro convolv'd; so fore  
 The griding sword with discontinuous wound  
 Pass'd thro' him! But th' ethereal substance clos'd,  
 Not long divisible; and from the gash 331  
 A stream of nectarous humor issuing flow'd,  
 Sanguin (such as coelestial spirits may bleed,)  
 And all his armor stain'd, e'er-while so bright.  
 Forthwith on all sides to his aid was run 335  
 By Angels many, and strong, who interpos'd  
 Defense; while others bore him on their shields  
 Back to his chariot; where it stood retir'd  
 From off the files of war: there they him laid  
 Gnashing for anguish, and despite, and shame, 340  
 To find himself not matchless, and his pride  
 Humbled by such rebuke, so far beneath  
 His confidence to equal GOD in pow'r.  
 Yet soon he heal'd; for, spirits that live throughout



Vital in every part, (not, as frail man, 345  
 In entrails, heart, or head, liver, or reins)  
 Cannot but by annihilating die:  
 Nor in their liquid texture mortal wound  
 Receive, no more than can the fluid air:  
 All heart they live, all head, all eye, all ear, 350  
 All intellect, all sense; and as they please,  
 They limb themselves, and color, shape, and size  
 Assume, as likes them best, condense, or rare.

Mean-while in other parts like deeds deserv'd  
 Memorial, where the might of GABRIEL fought,  
 And with fierce ensigns pierc'd the deep array 356  
 Of MOLOC, furious King! who him defy'd,  
 And at his chariot wheels to drag him bound  
 Threaten'd, nor from the HOLY ONE of heav'n  
 Refrain'd his tongue blasphemous: but anon 360  
 Down cloven to the waist, with shatter'd arms,  
 And uncouth pain, fled bellowing. On each wing  
 URIEL, and RAPHAEL, his vaunting foe  
 (Though huge, and in a rock of diamond arm'd)  
 Vanquish'd, ADRAAMELEC, and ASMADAI, 365  
 Two potent Thrones! that to be less than Gods  
 Dif-

Disdain'd; but meaner thoughts learn'd in their flight,  
 Mangled with gashly wounds thro' plate, and mail.  
 Nor stood unmindful *ABDIEL*, to annoy  
 The atheist-crew; but, with redoubled blow, 370  
*ARIEL*, and *ARIOC*, and the violence  
 Of *RAMIEL* scorch'd, and blasted, overthrew.—

I might relate of thousands, and their names  
 Eternize here on earth; but those elect  
 Angels, contented with their fame in heav'n, 375  
 Seek not the praise of men: the other sort,  
 In might though wondrous, and in acts of war,  
 Nor of renown less eager, yet by doom  
 Cancel'd from heav'n, and sacred memory,  
 Nameless in dark oblivion let them dwell. 380  
 For strength from truth divided, and from just,  
 Illaudable, nought merits but dispraise,  
 And ignominy; yet to glory aspires,  
 Vain-glorious, and through infamy seeks fame:  
 Therefore eternal silence be their doom! 385

And now, their mightiest quell'd, the battel  
 With many an in-rode gor'd; deformed rout

En-



Enter'd, and foul disorder: all the ground  
 With shiver'd armor strown, and on a heap  
 Chariot, and charioteer, lay over-turn'd, 390  
 And fiery foaming steeds: what stood, recoil'd  
 O'er-wearied, thro' the faint Satanic host  
 Defensive scarce, or with pale fear surpriz'd;  
 Then first with fear surpriz'd, and sense of pain,  
 Fled ignominious: to such evil brought 395  
 By sin of disobedience; till that hour,  
 Not liable to fear, or flight, or pain.  
 Far otherwise th' inviolable Saints,  
 In cubic phalanx firm, advanc'd entire,  
 Invulnerable, impenetrably arm'd: 400  
 Such high advantages their innocence  
 Gave them above their foes, not to have fin'd,  
 Not to have disobey'd! in fight they stood  
 Un-wearied, un-obnoxious to be pain'd 404  
 By wound, tho' from their place by violence mov'd.

Now night her course began, and over heav'n  
 Inducing darkness, grateful truce impos'd,  
 And silence, on the odious din of war.  
 Under her cloudy covert both retir'd,

Victor,

Victor, and vanquish'd. On the foughten field, 410  
 MICHAEL, and his Angels, prevalent  
 Encamping, plac'd in guard their watches round,  
 Cherubic waving fires: on th' other part,  
 SATAN, with his rebellious, disappear'd,  
 Far in the dark dislodg'd; and void of rest, 415  
 His Potentates to council call'd by night;  
 And in the midst thus un-dismay'd began.

O! now in danger try'd, now known in arms  
 Not to be over-power'd, companions dear!  
 Found worthy not of liberty alone, 420  
 (Too mean pretense!) but, what we more affect,  
 Honor, dominion, glory, and renown;  
 Who have sustain'd one day in doubtful fight  
 (And if one day, why not eternal days?)  
 What heav'n's LORD hath powerfullest to send 425  
 Against us from about His throne, and judg'd  
 Sufficient to subdue us to His will.  
 But proves not so! — then fallible, it seems,  
 Of future we may deem Him, though till now  
 Omniscient thought. True is, less firmly arm'd, 430  
 Some disadvantage we indur'd, and pain,

Till



Book VI. *PARADISE LOST.* 241

'Till now not known; but known, as soon contemn'd;  
Since now we find this our empyreal form  
Incapable of mortal injury,  
Imperishable; and though pierc'd with wound, 435  
Soon closing, and by native vigor heal'd.  
Of evil then so small, as easy think  
The remedy: perhaps more valid arms,  
Weapons more violent, when next we meet,  
May serve to better us, and worse our foes: 440  
Or equal what between us made the odds;  
In nature none: if other hidden cause  
Left them superior, while we can preserve  
Unhurt our minds, and understanding sound,  
Due search, and consultation, will disclose. 445

He sat: and in th' assembly next up-stood  
NISROC, of Principalities the prime;  
As one he stood escap'd from cruel fight,  
Sore toil'd, his riven arms to havoc hewn;  
And, cloudy in aspect, thus answering spake. 450

Deliverer from new Lords! Leader to free  
Enjoyment of our right, as Gods! yet hard

R

For

For Gods, and too unequal work we find,  
 Against unequal arms to fight in pain,  
 Against un-pain'd, impassive; from which evil 455  
 Ruin must needs ensue! for, what avails  
 Valor, or strength, tho' matchless, quell'd with pain  
 Which all subdues, and makes remiss the hands  
 Of mightiest? Sense of pleasure we may well  
 Spare out of life, perhaps, and not repine; 460  
 But live content, which is the calmest life.  
 But, pain is perfect misery, the worst  
 Of evils; and excessive, overturns  
 All patience. He who therefore can invent  
 With what more forcible we may offend 465  
 Our yet-unwounded enemies, or arm  
 Our selves with like defense, to me deserves  
 No less than for deliverance what we owe.

Whereto, with look compos'd, SATAN reply'd.  
 Not un-invented that, which thou aright 470  
 Believ'st so main to our success, I bring.  
 Which of us who beholds the bright surface  
 Of this ethereous mould, whereon we stand;  
 This continent of spacious heav'n, adorn'd  
 With plant, fruit, flow'r ambrosial, gems, and gold;



Whose eye so superficially surveys 476

These things, as not to mind from whence they grow

Deep under ground; materials dark, and crude,

Of spiritous, and fiery spume, till touch'd

With heaven's ray, and temper'd, they shoot forth

So beauteous, op'ning to the ambient light? 481

These, in their dark nativity, the Deep

Shall yield us, pregnant with infernal flame:

Which into hollow engins, long, and round,

Thick-ramm'd, at th'other bore with touch of fire

Dilated, and infuriate, shall send forth 486

From far, with thund'ring noise, among our foes

Such implements of mischief, as shall dash

To pieces, and o'erwhelm whatever stands

Adverse: that they shall fear we have disarm'd 490

The Thunderer of His only dreaded bolt.

Nor long shall be our labor; yet e'er dawn,

Effect shall end our wish. Mean-while revive;

Abandon fear; to strength, and counsel join'd,

Think nothing hard, much less to be despair'd. 495

He ended, and his words their drooping chear  
Inlighten'd, and their languish'd hope reviv'd.

Th' invention all admir'd, and each, how he  
 To be th' inventor mis'd, so easy it seem'd 499  
 Once found, which yet un-found most would have  
 Impossible. Yet haply of thy race [thought  
 In future days (if malice should abound)  
 Some one intent on mischief, or inspir'd  
 With dev'lish machination, might devise  
 Like instrument, to plague the sons of men 505  
 For sin; on war, and mutual slaughter, bent.  
 Forthwith from Council to the work they flew,  
 None arguing stood: innumerable hands  
 Were ready; in a moment up they turn'd  
 Wide the coelestial foil; and saw beneath 510  
 Th' originals of nature, in their crude  
 Conception: sulphurous, and nitrous foam  
 They found, they mingled, and with subtile art,  
 Concocted, and adusted, they reduc'd  
 To blackest grain, and into store convey'd. 515  
 Part, hidden veins digg'd up (nor hath this earth  
 Entrails unlike) of mineral, and stone;  
 Whereof to found their engines, and their balls  
 Of missive ruin: part, incentive reed  
 Provide, pernicious with one touch to fire. 520  
 So



So all e'er day-spring, under conscious night,  
Secret they finish'd, and in order set,  
With silent circumspection, un-espied.

Now when fair morn orient in heav'n appear'd,  
Up rose the victor Angels, and to arms 525  
The matin trumpet sung: in arms they stood  
Of golden panoply, refulgent host!  
Soon banded: others from the dawning hills [scour,  
Look'd round, and scouts each coast light-armed  
Each quarter, to descry the distant foe, 530  
Where lodg'd, or whither fled, or if for fight  
In motion, or in halt: him soon they met  
Under spread ensigns moving nigh, in flow  
But firm battalion: back with speediest fail  
ZOPHIEL, of Cherubim the swiftest wing, 535  
Came flying, and in mid-air aloud thus cry'd.

Arm, warriors, arm for fight! the foe at hand,  
Whom fled we thought, will save us long pursuit  
This day; fear not his flight; so thick a cloud  
He comes, and settled in his face I see 540  
Sad resolution, and secure. Let each

R 3

His

His adamantine coat gird well, and each  
 Fit well his helm, gripe fast his orb'd shield,  
 Born ev'n, or high; for, this day will pour down,  
 If I conjecture ought, no drizzling show'r, 545  
 But ratling storm of arrows barb'd with fire.

So warn'd he them, aware themselves; and soon  
 In order, quit of all impediment,  
 Instant, without disturb, they took alarm;  
 And onward move embattell'd: when behold! 550  
 Not distant far with heavy pace the foe  
 Approaching gross, and huge; in hollow cube  
 Training his devilish enginry, im-pal'd  
 On every side with shadowing squadrons deep,  
 To hide the fraud. At interview both stood 555  
 A-while; but suddenly at head appear'd  
 SATAN; and thus was heard commanding loud.

Van-guard! to right, and left, the Front unfold;  
 That all may see, who hate us, how we seek  
 Peace, and composure; and with open breast 560  
 Stand ready to receive them, if they like  
 Our overture, and turn not back perverse.

But,



But, that I doubt: however witness heav'n!  
 Heav'n witness thou anon! while we discharge  
 Freely our part: ye who appointed stand, 565  
 Do as you have in charge, and briefly touch  
 What we propound; and loud, that all may hear.

So scoffing in ambiguous words, he scarce  
 Had ended; when to right, and left, the Front  
 Divided, and to either Flank retir'd: 570  
 Which to our eyes discover'd (new, and strange!)  
 A triple mounted row of pillars, laid  
 On wheels (for like to pillars most they seem'd,  
 Or hollow'd bodies made of oak, or fir,  
 With branches lop'd, in wood or mountain fell'd)  
 Brass, iron, stony mold; had not their mouths 576  
 With hideous orifice gap'd on us wide,  
 Portending hollow truce: at each behind  
 A Seraph stood, and in his hand a reed  
 Stood waving tip'd with fire; while we suspense,  
 Collected stood within our thoughts amus'd: 581  
 Not long! for sudden all at once their reeds  
 Put forth, and to a narrow vent apply'd  
 With nicest touch, immediate in a flame,

(But soon obscur'd with smoke) all heav'n appear'd,  
 From those deep-throated engines belch'd, whose  
 Embowel'd with outrageous noise the air, [roar  
 And all her entrails tore; disgorging foul  
 Their devilish glut, chain'd thunder-bolts, and hail  
 Of iron globes, which on the victor host 590  
 Levell'd, with such impetuous fury smote,  
 That whom they hit, none on their feet might stand,  
 Though standing else as rocks; but down they fell  
 By thousands, Angel on Arch-Angel rowl'd;  
 The sooner for their arms; (un-arm'd they might  
 Have easily, as spirits, evaded swift 596  
 By quick contraction, or remove:) but now  
 Foul dissipation follow'd, and forc'd rout;  
 Nor serv'd it to relax their ferried files.  
 What should they do? if on they rush'd, repulse 600  
 Repeated, and indecent overthrow  
 Doubled, would render them yet more despis'd,  
 And to their foes a laughter: for, in view,  
 Stood rank'd of Seraphim another row,  
 In posture to displode their second Tire 605  
 Of thunder: back defeated to return  
 They worse abhorr'd. SATAN beheld their plight,  
 And to his mates thus in derision call'd.



O friends! why come not on these victors proud?  
 E'er-while they fierce were coming, and when we,  
 To entertain them fair with open front, [terms  
 And breast, (what could we more?) propounded  
 Of composition, strait they chang'd their minds,  
 Flew off, and into strange vagaries fell, 614  
 As they would dance: yet for a dance they seem'd  
 Somewhat extravagant, and wild; perhaps  
 For joy of offer'd peace: but I suppose,  
 If our proposals once again were heard,  
 We should compel them to a quick result. 619

To whom thus BELIAL, in like gamesome mood:  
 Leader! the terms we sent were terms of weight,  
 Of hard contents, and full of force, urg'd home;  
 Such as we might perceive amus'd them all,  
 And stumbled many: who receives them right,  
 Had need from head to foot well understand; 625  
 Not understood, this gift they have besides,  
 They shew us when our foes walk not upright.

So they among themselves in pleasant vein  
 Stood scoffing, heighten'd in their thoughts beyond  
 All

All doubt of victory: Eternal Might 630  
 To match with their inventions they presum'd  
 So easy, and of His thunder made a scorn,  
 And all His host derided, while they stood  
 A-while in trouble: but, they stood not long;  
 Rage prompted them at length, and found them arms  
 Against such hellish mischief fit t'oppose. 636  
 Forthwith (behold the excellence, the pow'r  
 Which GOD hath in his mighty Angels plac'd!)  
 Their arms away they threw, and to the hills  
 (For earth hath this variety from heav'n, 640  
 Of pleasure situate in hill, and dale)  
 Light as the light'ning glimpse they ran, they flew,  
 From their foundations loos'ning to and fro,  
 They pluck'd the seated hills, with all their load,  
 Rocks, waters, woods, and by the shaggy tops 645  
 Up-lifting bore them in their hands. Amaze,  
 Be sure, and terror, seiz'd the rebel host,  
 When coming towards them, so dread they saw  
 The bottom of the mountains upward turn'd;  
 'Till on those cursed engines' triple-row 650  
 They saw them whelm'd, and all their confidence  
 Under the weight of mountains bury'd deep:  
Them-



Themselves invaded next, and on their heads  
 Main promontories flung, which in the air 654  
 Came shadowing, and oppress'd whole legions arm'd:  
 Their armor help'd their harm, crush'd in, and bruise'd  
 Into their substance pent, which wrought them pain  
 Implacable, and many a dolorous groan;  
 Long struggling underneath, e'er they could wind  
 Out of such prison, though spirits of purest light: 660  
 (Purest at first, now gross by sinning grown)  
 The rest, in imitation, to like arms  
 Betook them, and the neighb'ring hills up tore:  
 So, hills a-mid the air en-counter'd hills,  
 Hurl'd to, and fro, with jaculation dire; 665  
 That under ground they fought in dismal shade;  
 Infernal noise! war seem'd a civil game  
 To this uproar; horrid confusion heap'd  
 Upon confusion rose. And now all heav'n  
 Had gone to wreck, with ruin over-spread, 670  
 Had not th' Almighty FATHER, where He sits  
 Shrin'd in His sanctuary of heav'n secure,  
 Consulting on the sum of things, fore-seen  
 This tumult, and permitted all, advis'd:  
 That His great purpose He might so fulfil, 675  
 To

To honor His Anointed SON, aveng'd  
 Upon His enemies, and to declare  
 All pow'r on Him transferr'd: whence to His SON,  
 (Th' Assessor of His Throne) He thus began.

Effulgence of My Glory, SON belov'd ! 680  
 SON! in Whose face invisible is beheld  
 Visibly, what by Deity I am;  
 And in Whose hand what by decree I do,  
 Second Omnipotence! two days are past,  
 (Two days, as We compute the days of heav'n) 685  
 Since MICHAEL, and his Pow'rs, went forth to tame  
 These disobedient: sore hath been their fight,  
 As likeliest was, when two such foes met arm'd:  
 For to themselves I left them; and Thou know'st,  
 Equal in their creation they were form'd, 690  
 Save what sin hath impair'd; which yet hath wrought  
 Insensibly, for I suspend their doom:  
 Whence in perpetual fight they needs must last  
 Endless, and no solution will be found.  
 War wearied hath perform'd what war can do, 695  
 And to disorder'd rage let loose the reins, [makes  
 With mountains, as with weapons, arm'd; which  
 Wild



Wild work in heav'n, and dangerous to the main.  
 Two days are therefore past, the third is Thine;  
 For Thee I have ordain'd it ; and thus far 700  
 Have suffer'd, that the glory may be Thine  
 Of ending this great war, since none but Thou  
 Can end it. Into Thee such virtue, and grace  
 Immense, I have transfus'd, that all may know  
 In heav'n, and hell, Thy pow'r above compare: 705  
 And this perverse commotion govern'd thus,  
 To manifest Thee worthiest to be Heir  
 Of all things ; to be Heir, and to be King  
 By sacred unction, Thy deserved right.  
 Go then, Thou Mightiest, in Thy FATHER'S Might !  
 Ascend My chariot, guide the rapid wheels 711  
 That shake heav'n's basis, bring forth all My war,  
 My bow, and thunder ; My Almighty arms  
 Gird on, and sword upon Thy puissant thigh.  
 Pursue these sons of darkness ; drive them out 715  
 From all heav'n's bounds, into the utter deep:  
 There let them learn, as likes them, to despise  
 GOD, and MESSIAH His anointed King.

He said, and on His SON with rays direct  
 Shone full, He all His FATHER full exprest, 720

Ineffably into His face receiv'd:

And thus the Filial Godhead answ'ring spake.

O FATHER! O Supreme of heav'nly Thrones!  
 First, Highest, Holiest, Best! Thou always seek'st  
 To glorifie Thy SON, I always Thee, 725  
 As is most just: this I My glory account,  
 My exaltation, and My whole delight,  
 That Thou in Me well-pleas'd, declar'st Thy will  
 Fulfill'd, which to fulfill is all My blifs.  
 Sceptre, and pow'r, Thy giving, I assume; 730  
 And gladlier shall resign, when in the end  
 Thou shalt be all in all, and I in Thee  
 For ever; and in Me all whom Thou lov'st:  
 But whom Thou hat'st, I hate, and can put on  
 Thy terrors, as I put Thy mildness on, 735  
 Image of Thee in all things: and shall soon,  
 Arm'd with Thy might, rid heav'n of these rebell'd;  
 To their prepar'd ill mansion driven down  
 To chains of darkness, and th' undying worm;  
 That from Thy just obedience could revolt, 740  
 Whom to obey is happiness entire.  
 Then shall Thy Saints un-mix'd, and from th'impure  
 Far separate, circling Thy holy mount



Un-fained hallelujahs to Thee sing, 744  
Hymns of high praise, and I among them Chief.

So said, He o'er His sceptre bowing, rose  
From the right hand of glory where He sat;  
And the third sacred morn began to shine,  
Dawning through heav'n. Forthrush'd with whirl-  
The chariot of Paternal Deity, [windfound  
Flashing thick flames, wheel within wheel un-drawn,  
It self instinct with spirit, but convoy'd 752  
By four Cherubic shapes; four faces each  
Had wondrous; as with stars, their bodies all,  
And wings, were set with eyes; with eyes, the wheels  
Of beril; and careering fires between: 756  
Over their heads a chrystal firmament;  
Where, on a saphir throne, (in-laid with pure  
Amber, and colors of the show'ry arch)  
He, in coelestial panoply all arm'd 760  
Of radiant Urim, work divinely wrought!  
Ascended: at His right hand, VICTORY  
Sat eagle-wing'd; beside Him hung his bow,  
And quiver with three-bolted thunder stor'd:  
And from about Him fierce effusion rowl'd

Of

Of smoke, and bick'ring flame, and sparkles dire.  
 Attended with ten thousand thousand Saints,  
 He onward came; far off his coming shone,  
 And twenty thousand (I their number heard)  
 Chariots of God, half on each hand, were seen.  
 He on the wings of Cherub rode sublime 771  
 On the chryftallin sky, in saphir thron'd,  
 Illustrious far, and wide: but by His own  
 First seen, them un-expected joy surpriz'd,  
 When the great ensign of MESSIAH blaz'd, 775  
 Aloft by Angels born, His sign in heav'n:  
 Under whose conduct MICHAEL soon reduc'd  
 His army, circumfus'd on either wing,  
 Under their Head imbodied all in one.  
 Before Him Pow'r Divine His way prepar'd; 780  
 At His command th' up-rooted hills retir'd  
 Each to his place, they heard His voice, and went  
 Obsequious; heav'n his wonted face renew'd,  
 And with fresh flow'rets hill and valley smil'd.

This saw His hapless foes, but stood obdur'd,  
 And to rebellious fight rallied their Pow'rs, 786  
 Insensate! hope conceiving from despair:



In heav'nly spirits could such perverseness dwell?  
 But, (to convince the proud what signs avail,  
 Or wonders move th' obdurate to relent!) 790  
 They harden'd more, by what might most reclaim,  
 Grieving to see His glory, at the sight  
 Took envy; and aspiring to His height,  
 Stood re-embattell'd fierce; by force, or fraud,  
 Weening to prosper, and at length prevail 795  
 Against GOD, and MESSIAH; or to fall  
 In universal ruin last: and now  
 To final battel drew, disdaining flight,  
 Or faint retreat; when the Great SON of GOD,  
 To all His hosts on either hand, thus spake. 800

Stand still in bright array, ye Saints! here stand,  
 Ye Angels arm'd! this day from battel rest:  
 Faithful hath been your warfare, and of GOD  
 Accepted, fearless in His righteous cause:  
 And as ye have receiv'd, so have ye done, 805  
 Invincibly. But, of this cursed crew  
 The punishment to other hand belongs:  
 Vengeance is His, or whose He sole appoints.  
 Number to this day's work is not ordain'd,  
 S Nor

Nor multitude: stand only, and behold 810  
 GOD's indignation on these godless pour'd  
 By Me; not you, but Me, they have despis'd;  
 Yet envied: against Me is all their rage;  
 Because the FATHER, (t'Whom in heav'n supreme  
 Kingdom, and pow'r, and glory appertains,) 815  
 Hath honor'd Me, according to His will.  
 Therefore to Me their doom He hath assign'd:  
 That they may have their wish, to try with Me  
 In battel which the stronger proves; they all,  
 Or I alone against them: since by strength 820  
 They measure all, of other excellence  
 Not emulous, nor care who them excels;  
 Nor other strife with them do I vouchsafe.

So spake the SON, and into terror chang'd  
 His count'nance, too severe to be beheld! 825  
 And full of wrath bent on His enemies.  
 At once the Four spread out their starry wings,  
 With dreadful shade contiguous, and the orbs  
 Of His fierce chariot rowl'd, as with the sound  
 Of torrent floods, or of a numerous host. 830  
 He on His impious foes right onward drove,  
 Gloomy



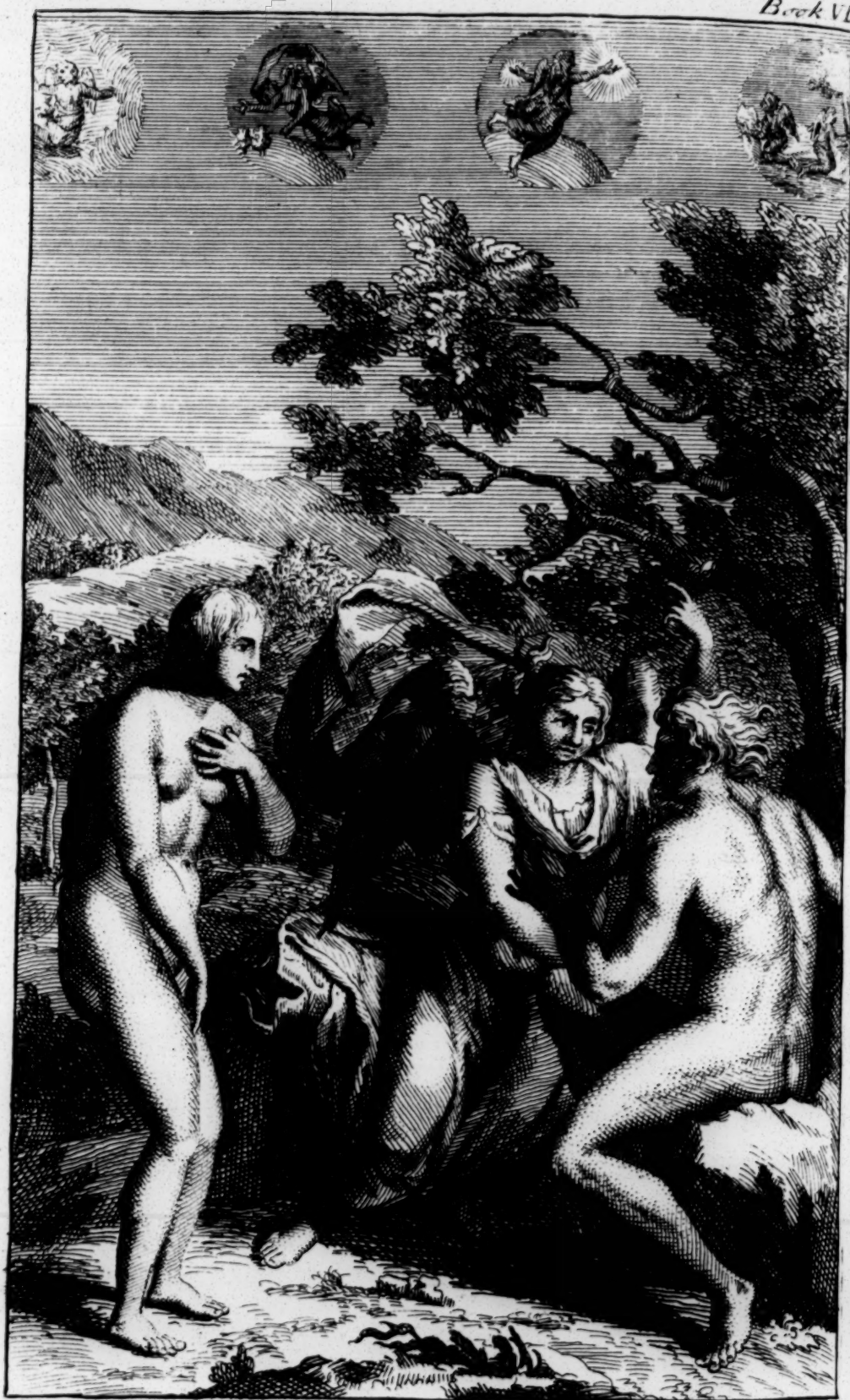
Gloomy as night: under His burning wheels  
 The stedfast empyrean shook throughout;  
 All but the throne it self of GOD. Full soon  
 Among them He arriv'd; in His right hand 835  
 Grasping ten thousand thunders, which He sent  
 Before Him, such as in their souls infix'd  
 Plagues: they astonish'd, all resistance lost,  
 All courage; down their idle weapons dropp'd:  
 O'er shields, and helms, and helmed heads He rode  
 Of Thrones, and mighty Seraphim prostrate; 841  
 That wish'd the mountains now might be again  
 Thrown on them, as a shelter from His ire.  
 Nor less on either side tempestuous fell  
 His arrows, from the four-fold-vifag'd Four, 845  
 Distinct with eyes; and from the living wheels,  
 Distinct alike with multitude of eyes;  
 One spirit in them rul'd, and every eye  
 Glar'd light'ning, and shot forth pernicious fire  
 Among th'accurst, that wither'd all their strength,  
 And of their wonted vigor left them drain'd, 851  
 Exhausted, spiritless, afflicted, fall'n.  
 Yet, half His strength He put not forth, but check'd  
 His thunder in mid-volly; for He meant

Not to destroy, but root them out of heav'n. 855  
 The overthrown He rais'd, and as a herd  
 Of goats, or tim'rous flock, together throng'd,  
 Drove them before Him thunder-struck, persud  
 With terrors, and with furies, to the bounds  
 And chrystal wall of heav'n; which op'ning wide  
 Rowl'd inward, and a spacious gap disclos'd 861  
 Into the wasteful Deep: the monstrous sight  
 Struck them with horror backward; but, far worse  
 Urg'd them behind: headlong themselves they threw  
 Down from the verge of heav'n; eternal wrath 865  
 Burn'd after them, to the bottomless pit.  
 Hell heard th'un sufferable noise; hell saw  
 Heav'n ruining from heav'n, and would have fled  
 Affrighted; but strict Fate had cast too deep  
 Her dark foundations, and too fast had bound. 870  
 Nine days they fell; confounded CHAOS roar'd,  
 And felt ten-fold confusion in their fall,  
 Through his wild anarchy; so huge a rout  
 Incumber'd him with ruin! hell at last  
 Yawning receiv'd them whole, and on them clos'd:  
 Hell, their fit habitation, fraught with fire 876  
 Un-quenchable, the house of woe, and pain.

Dis-burden'd









Dis-burden'd heav'n rejoic'd, and soon repair'd  
Her mural breach, returning whence it rowl'd.

Sole victor, from th'expulsion of His foes, 880  
MESSIAH His triumphal chariot turn'd:  
To meet Him all His Saints, who silent stood  
Eye-witnesses of His almighty acts,  
With jubilee advanc'd; and as they went,  
Shaded with branching palm, each Order bright 885  
Sung triumph, and Him sung Victorious King,  
SON, Heir, and Lord! to Him dominion giv'n,  
Worthiest to reign. He celebrated rode  
Triumphant through mid-heav'n, into the courts,  
And temple, of His Mighty FATHER, thron'd 890  
On high: who into glory Him receiv'd,  
Where now He sits at the right hand of blifs.

[earth)

Thus (measuring things in heav'n by things on  
At thy request, and that thou may'st beware  
By what is past, to thee I have reveal'd 895  
What might have else to human race been hid;  
The discord which befel, and war in heav'n  
Among th'Angelic Pow'rs, and the deep fall

Of those too high aspiring, who rebell'd  
 With SATAN: he who envies now thy state; 900  
 Who now is plotting how he may seduce  
 Thee also from obedience, that with him  
 (Bereav'd of happiness) thou may'st partake  
 His punishment, eternal misery:  
 Which would be all his solace, and revenge, 905  
 As a despite done against the Most High,  
 Thee once to gain companion of his woe.  
 But, listen not to his temptations: warn  
 Thy weaker: let it profit thee to have heard,  
 By terrible example, the reward 910  
 Of disobedience: firm they might have stood,  
 Yet fell. Remember! and fear to transgress!

*The end of the sixth Book.*



20 JY 63

THE



---

THE  
SEVENTH BOOK  
OF  
PARADISE LOST.

---

## The ARGUMENT.

**Raphael**, at the request of Adam, relates how, and wherefore, this world was first created; that **GOD**, after the expelling of Satan, and his Angels, out of heaven, declar'd His pleasure to create another world, and other creatures to dwell therein; sends His **SON** with glory, and attendance of Angels, to perform the work of Creation in six days: the Angels celebrate with hymns the performance thereof, and His re-ascension into heaven.





---

---

# PARADISE LOST.

---

## BOOK VII.

---

**D**Escend from heav'n, URANIA! (by that  
 name  
 If rightly thou art call'd) whose voice divine  
 Following, above th'OLYMPIAN hill I soar,  
 Above the flight of PEGASEAN wing.  
 The meaning, not the name, I call: for thou, 5  
 Nor of the Muses nine, nor on the top  
 Of old OLYMPUS dwell'ft; but, heav'nly born,  
 Before the hills appear'd, or fountain flow'd,  
 Thou with Eternal WISDOM didst converse,  
 WISDOM thy sister, and with her didst play 10  
 In presence of th'Almighty FATHER, pleas'd  
 With

With thy cœlestial song. Up-led by thee,  
 Into the heav'n of heav'ns I have presum'd,  
 (An earthly guest) and drawn empyreal air,  
 Thy temp'ring. With like safety guided down, 15  
 Return me to my native element :

Lest from this flying steed unrein'd (as once  
 BELLEROPHON, though from a lower clime)  
 Dis-mounted, on th'ALEIAN field I fall,  
 Erroneous there to wander, and forlorn. 20  
 Half yet remains unsung; but, narrower bound,  
 Within the visible diurnal sphere:

Standing on earth, not rap'd above the Pole,  
 More safe I sing with mortal voice; un-chang'd  
 To hoarse, or mute, though fall'n on evil days, 25  
 On evil days though fall'n, and evil tongues;  
 In darkness, and with dangers compass'd round,  
 And solitude! Yet, not alone, while thou  
 Visit'st my slumbers nightly; or, when morn  
 Purples the east. Still govern thou my song, 30  
 URANIA! and fit audience find, though few.  
 But, drive far off the barbarous dissonance  
 Of BACCHUS, and his revellers; the race  
 Of that wild rout that tore the THRACIAN bard  
 In



In RHODOPE, where woods, and rocks, had ears  
 To rapture, 'till the savage clamor drown'd 36  
 Both harp, and voice; nor could the Muse defend  
 Her son. So fail not thou, who thee implores:  
 For, thou art heav'nly; she, an empty dream.

Say, Goddess, what ensu'd when RAPHAEL, 40  
 The affable Arch-Angel, had fore-warn'd  
 ADAM, by dire example, to beware  
 Apostasy, by what befel in heav'n  
 To those apostates; lest the like befall  
 In Paradise to ADAM, or his race, 45  
 (Charg'd not to touch the interdicted Tree)  
 If they transgress, and slight that sole command;  
 So easily obey'd, amid the choice  
 Of all tastes else to please their appetite,  
 Though wand'ring. — He, with his consoled EVE,  
 The story heard attentive, and was fill'd 51  
 With admiration, and deep muse, to hear  
 Of things so high, and strange; things, to their  
 So un-imaginable, as hate in heav'n, [thought,  
 And war so near the peace of GOD in bliss, 55  
 With such confusion: but, the evil, soon

Driv'n

Driv'n back, redounded (as a flood) on those  
 From whom it sprung ; impossible to mix  
 With blessedness. Whence ADAM soon repeal'd  
 The doubts that in his heart arose : and now 60  
 Led on, yet sinless, with desire to know  
 (What nearer might concern him) how this world  
 Of heav'n, and earth conspicuous, first began ;  
 When, and whereof created ; for what cause ;  
 What within EDEN, or without, was done 65  
 Before his memory (as one whose drouth  
 Yet scarce allay'd, still eyes the current stream,  
 Whose liquid murmur heard, new thirst excites.)  
 Proceeded thus to ask his heav'nly guest.

Great things, and full of wonder in our ears, 70  
 Far diff'ring from this world, thou hast reveal'd,  
 Divine interpreter ! by favor sent  
 Down from the empyrean, to fore-warn  
 Us timely of what might else have been our loss 74  
 Unknown ; which human knowledge could not  
 For which to th' Infinitely Good we owe [reach :  
 Immortal thanks, and His admonishment  
 Receive, with solemn purpose to observe

Immutably



Immutably His sovereign will, the end  
 Of what we are. But, since thou hast vouchsaf'd 80  
 Gently, for our instruction, to impart  
 Things above earthly thought (which yet concern'd  
 Our knowing, as to Highest Wisdom seem'd)  
 Deign to descend now lower, and relate  
 (What may no less, perhaps, avail us known) 85  
 How first began this heav'n, which we behold  
 Distant so high, with moving fires adorn'd  
 Innumerable; and this which yields, or fills,  
 All space, the ambient air wide interfus'd,  
 Embracing round this florid earth: what cause 90  
 Mov'd the Creator, in His holy rest  
 Through all eternity, so late to build  
 In CHAOS; and the work begun, how soon  
 Absolv'd: if un-forbid thou may'st unfold  
 What we, not to explore the secrets ask 95  
 Of His eternal empire, but the more  
 To magnify His works, the more we know.  
 And the great light of day yet wants to run  
 Much of his race, though steep, suspense in heav'n  
 Held by thy voice; thy potent voice he hears, 100  
 And longer will delay, to hear thee tell

His

His generation, and the rising birth  
 Of nature from the un-apparent Deep:  
 Or, if the star of ev'ning, and the moon  
 Hasten to thy audience, night with her will bring 105  
 Silence; and Sleep, list'ning to thee, will watch;  
 Or, we can bid his absence, 'till thy song  
 End, and dismiss thee e'er the morning shine.

Thus ADAM his illustrious guest besought;  
 And thus the God-like Angel answer'd mild. 110

This also thy request, with caution ask'd,  
 Obtain: though to recount almighty works,  
 What words, or tongue of Seraph, can suffice!  
 Or, heart of man suffice to comprehend!  
 Yet, what thou can'st attain, (which best may serve  
 To glorify the Maker, and infer 116  
 Thee also happier) shall not be with-held  
 Thy hearing: such commission from above  
 I have receiv'd, to answer thy desire  
 Of knowledge within bounds: beyond, abstain 120  
 To ask; nor let thine own inventions hope  
 Things not reveal'd, which th' invisible King,  
 Only



Book VII. *PARADISE LOST.* 271

Only Omniscient, hath suppress'd in night;  
To none communicable in earth, or heav'n:  
Enough is left besides to search, and know. 125  
But, knowledge is as food, and needs no less  
Her temperance over appetite, to know  
In measure what the mind may well contain:  
Oppresses else with surfeit, and soon turns  
Wisdom to folly, as nourishment to wind. 130

Know then, that after LUCIFER from heav'n  
(So call him, brighter once amidst the host  
Of Angels, than that star the stars among)  
Fell with his flaming legions through the Deep  
Into his place, and the Great SON return'd 135  
Victorious with his Saints, th' Omnipotent  
Eternal FATHER from His throne beheld  
Their multitude, and to His SON thus spake.

At least our envious foe hath fail'd, who thought  
All like himself rebellious, by whose aid 140  
This in-accessible high strength, the seat  
Of Deity supreme, US dis-posselt,  
He trusted to have seis'd, and into fraud  
Drew

Drew many, whom their place knows here no more:  
 Yet, far the greater part have kept, I see, 145  
 Their station; heav'n, yet populous, retains  
 Number sufficient to possess her realms,  
 Though wide; and this high temple to frequent  
 With ministeries due, and solemn rites.  
 But, lest his heart exalt him, in the harm 150  
 Already done, to have dispeopled heav'n,  
 (My damage fondly deem'd!) I can repair  
 That detriment, if such it be, to lose  
 Self-lost; and in a moment will create  
 Another world; out of one man, a race 155  
 Of men in-numerable, there to dwell,  
 Not here; 'till by degrees of merit rais'd,  
 They open to themselves at length the way  
 Up hither; under long obedience try'd: 159  
 And earth be chang'd to heav'n, and heav'n to earth,  
 One kingdom, joy, and union without end.  
 Mean-while inhabit lax, ye Pow'rs of heav'n!  
 And Thou My WORD, begotten SON! by Thee  
 This I perform; speak Thou, and be it done. 164  
 My over-shadowing SPIRIT, and Might, with Thee  
 I send along: ride forth, and bid the Deep



Within appointed bounds, be heav'n and earth:  
 Boundless the Deep, because I AM who fill  
 Infinitude: nor vacuous the space;  
 Though I, un-circumscrib'd My self, retire, 170  
 And put not forth my goodness; which is free  
 To act, or not: Necessity, and Chance,  
 Approach not Me; and what I will is Fate.

So spake th' Almighty, and to what He spake  
 His WORD, the Filial Godhead, gave effect. 175  
 Immediate are the acts of GOD, more swift  
 Than time, or motion; but, to human ears  
 Cannot without process of speech be told;  
 So told, as earthly notion can receive.

Great triumph, and rejoicing, was in heav'n, 180  
 When such was heard declar'd th' Almighty's will:  
 Glory they sung to the Most High! good will  
 To future men, and in their dwellings peace!  
 Glory to Him! Whose just avenging ire  
 Had driven out th' ungodly from His sight, 185  
 And th' habitations of the just: to Him  
 Glory and praise! Whose wisdom had ordain'd  
 Good out of evil to create; instead

T

Of

Of spirits malign, a better race to bring  
 Into their vacant room, and thence diffuse 190  
 His good to worlds, and ages, infinite.

So sang the Hierarchies. Mean-while the SON  
 On His great expedition now appear'd,  
 Girt with Omnipotence, with radiance crown'd  
 Of Majesty Divine: sapience, and love 195  
 Immense, and all His FATHER in Him shon.  
 About His chariot numberless were pour'd  
 Cherub, and Seraph, Potentates, and Thrones,  
 And Virtues: winged spirits, and chariots wing'd,  
 From th'armory of GOD; where stand of old 200  
 Myriads, between two brazen mountains lodg'd  
 Against a solemn day, harness'd at hand,  
 Cœlestial equipage! and now came forth  
 Spontaneous (for within them spirit liv'd)  
 Attendent on their Lord: heav'n open'd wide 205  
 Her ever-during gates, harmonious found!  
 On golden hinges moving, to let forth  
 The King of Glory, in His pow'rful WORD,  
 And SPIRIT, coming to create new Worlds. 209  
 On heav'nly ground they stood, and from the shore  
 They



They view'd the vast immeasurable abyfs,  
 Outragious as a sea, dark, wasteful, wild;  
 Up from the bottom turn'd by furious winds,  
 And furling waves, as mountains, to assault 214  
 Heav'n's height, and with the centre mix the Pole.

[peace!]

Silence, ye troubled waves, and thou Deep,  
 Said then th' Omnific WORD, your Discord end—

Nor staid; but, on the wings of Cherubim  
 Up-lifted, in Paternal Glory rode  
 Far into CHAOS, and the world unborn; 220  
 For CHAOS heard His voice. Him all His train  
 Follow'd in bright proceffion, to behold  
 Creation, and the wonders of His might.  
 Then staid the fervid Wheels, and in His hand  
 He took the golden compaffes, prepar'd 225  
 In GOD's eternal ftore, to circumscribe  
 This universe, and all created things.  
 One foot He center'd, and the other turn'd  
 Round through the vast profundity obscure;  
 And faid, Thus far extend, thus far thy bounds,  
 This be thy juft circumference, O world! 231

T 2

Thus

Thus *GOD* the heav'n created, thus the earth;  
 Matter un-form'd, and void! Darknefs profound  
 Cover'd th'abyfs; but, on the wat'ry calm 234  
 His brooding wings the *SPIRIT* of *GOD* out-spread,  
 And vital virtue infus'd, and vital warmth  
 Throughout the fluid mafs; but, downward purg'd  
 The black, Tartareous, cold, infernal dregs,  
 Adverse to life: then founded, then conglob'd  
 Like things to like; the reft to feveral place 240  
 Dif-parted; and between, fpun out the air:  
 And earth felf-ballanc'd on her centre hung.

Let there be light! faid *GOD*: and forthwith light  
 Ethereal, firft of things, quinteffence pure,  
 Sprung from the Deep: and from her native eaft,  
 To journey through the aery gloom began, 246  
 Sphear'd in a radiant cloud; (for yet the Sun  
 Was not) ſhe in a cloudy tabernacle  
 Sojourn'd the while. *GOD* ſaw the light was good;  
 And light from darknefs by the hemisphere 250  
 Divided: light the day, and darknefs night  
 He nam'd. Thus was the *First Day* ev'n and morn:  
 Nor paſt un-celebrated, nor un-fung

By



Book VII. *PARADISE LOST.* 277

By the coelestial choires, when orient light  
Exhaling first from darkness they beheld; 255  
Birth-day of heav'n and earth! with joy, and shout,  
The hollow universal orb they fill'd;  
And touch'd their golden harps, and hymning prais'd  
God, and His works; Creator Him they sung, 259  
Both when First Ev'ning was, and when First Morn.

Again, GOD said, Let there be firmament  
Amid the waters, and let it divide  
The waters from the waters! And GOD made  
The firmament expanse of liquid, pure,  
Transparent, elemental air, diffus'd 265  
In circuit to the uttermost convex  
Of this great Round: partition firm, and sure,  
The waters underneath from those above  
Dividing: for as earth, so He the world  
Built on circumfluous waters calm, in wide 270  
ChrySTALLIN ocean, and the loud mis-rule  
Of CHAOS far remov'd; lest fierce extremes  
Contiguous, might distemper the whole frame:  
And heav'n He nam'd the firmament: so ev'n  
And morning chorus sung the Second Day. 275

The earth was form'd, but in the womb as yet  
 Of waters (embryon immature) involv'd,  
 Appear'd not: over all the face of earth  
 Main ocean flow'd; not idle, but with warm  
 Prolific humor soft'ning all her globe, 280  
 Fermented the great mother to conceive,  
 Sate with genial moisture: when GOD said,  
 Be gather'd now ye waters under heav'n  
 Into one place, and let dry land appear! —  
 Immediately the mountains huge appear 285  
 Emergent, and their broad bare backs up-heave  
 Into the clouds, their tops ascend the sky.  
 So high as heav'd the tumid hills, so low  
 Down sunk a hollow bottom, broad, and deep,  
 Capacious bed of waters! Thither they 290  
 Hastened with glad precipitance, up-rowl'd,  
 As drops on dust conglobing from the dry:  
 Part rise in chrystal wall, or ridge direct,  
 For haste; such flight the great command impress'd  
 On the swift floods: as armies at the call 295  
 Of trumpet (for of our armies thou hast heard)  
 Troop to their standard; so the wat'ry throng,  
 Wave rowling after wave, where way they found;  
 If



If sleep, with torrent rapture ; if through plain,  
 Soft-ebbing ; nor withstood them rock, or hill ; 300  
 But they, or under ground, or circuit wide  
 With serpent-error wand'ring, found their way,  
 And on the washy ooze deep channels wore ;  
 Easy, e'er G O D had bid the ground be dry,  
 All but within those banks, where rivers now 305  
 Stream, and perpetual draw their humid train.  
 The dry land, earth ; and the great receptacle  
 Of congregated waters, He call'd seas ;  
 And saw that it was good : and said, Let th' earth  
 Put forth the verdant grass, herb yielding feed, 310  
 And fruit-tree-yielding fruit after her kind ;  
 Whose seed is in her self upon the earth !——  
 He scarce had said, when the bare earth ('till then  
 Desert, and bare, un-fightly, un-adorn'd)  
 Brought forth the tender grass, whose verdure clad  
 Her universal face with pleasant green : 316  
 Then, herbs of every leaf, that sudden flow'r'd  
 Op'ning their various colors, and made gay  
 Her bosom, smelling sweet. And, these scarce blown,  
 Forth-flourish'd thick the clustring vine, forth crept  
 The smelling gourd, up stood the corny reed 321

Embattel'd in her field; and th' humble shrub,  
 And bush, with frizl'd hair implicit. Last,  
 Rose, as in dance, the stately trees, and spread 324  
 Their branches hung with copious fruit; or gemm'd  
 Their blossoms: with high woods the hills were  
 crown'd;

With tufts the vallies; and each fountain side,  
 With borders long the rivers: that, earth now <sup>[dwell,</sup>  
 Seem'd like to heav'n; a seat where Gods might  
 Or wander with delight, and love to haunt 330  
 Her sacred shades: though God had yet not rain'd  
 Upon the earth, and man to till the ground  
 None was: but, from the earth a dewy mist  
 Went up, and water'd all the ground, and each  
 Plant of the field; which, e'er it was in th' earth  
 God made, and ev'ry herb, before it grew 336  
 On the green stem: God saw that it was good.  
 So, ev'n, and morn, recorded the Third Day.

Again th' Almighty spake: Let there be lights  
 High in th' expanse of heaven, to divide 340  
 The day from night: and let them be for signs,  
 For seasons, and for days, and circling years;  
 And



And let them be for lights, as I ordain  
 Their office in the firmament of heav'n,  
 To give light on the earth! — and it was so. 345  
 And God made two great lights; (great for their use  
 To man) the greater to have rule by day,  
 The less by night, alterne: and made the stars;  
 And set them in the firmament of heav'n,  
 T'illuminate the earth, and rule the day, 350  
 In their vicissitude, and rule the night;  
 And light from darkness to divide. God saw,  
 Surveying His great work, that it was good:  
 For, of coelestial bodies first, the sun 354  
 (A mighty sphere!) He fram'd; un-lightfome first,  
 Tho' of ethereal mold: then form'd the moon  
 Globose; and ev'ry magnitude of stars;  
 And sow'd with stars the heav'n, thick as a field.  
 Of light by far the greater part he took,  
 Transplanted from her cloudy shrine, and plac'd 360  
 In the sun's orb, made porous to receive  
 And drink the liquid light; firm, to retain  
 Her gather'd beams; great palace now of light:  
 Hither, as to their fountain, other stars  
 Repairing, in their golden urns draw light: 365  
 And

And hence the morning planet gilds his horns:  
 By tincture, or reflection, they augment  
 Their small peculiar, though (from human sight  
 So far remote) with diminution seen.  
 First in his east the glorious lamp was seen, 370  
 Regent of day; and all th' horizon round  
 Invested with bright rays, jocund to run  
 His longitude through heav'n's high road: the gray  
 Dawn, and the *PLEIADES*, before him danc'd,  
 Shedding sweet influence. Less bright the moon,  
 But opposite in level'd west was set, 376  
 His mirror, with full face borrowing her light  
 From him; for other light she needed none  
 In that aspect: and still that distance keeps  
 'Till night; then, in the east her turn she shines, 380  
 Revolv'd on heav'n's great axle, and her reign  
 With thousand lesser lights dividual holds,  
 With thousand thousand stars! that then appear'd  
 Spangling the hemisphere; then first adorn'd  
 With their bright luminaries, that set and rose. 385  
 Glad ev'ning and glad morn crown'd the Fourth  
 [Day.

And *GOD* said, Let the waters generate  
 Reptil, with spawn abundant, living soul!



And let fowl fly above the earth, with wings  
 Display'd on th'open firmament of heav'n! 390  
 And GOD created the great whales, and each  
 Soul living, each that crept, which plenteously  
 The waters generated by their kinds:  
 And every bird, of wing after his kind:  
 And saw that it was good, and blest'd them, saying,  
 Be fruitful, multiply, and in the seas, 396  
 And lakes, and running streams, the waters fill!  
 And let the fowl be multiply'd on th'earth!  
 Forthwith the founts, and seas, each creek, and bay,  
 With fry in-numerable swarm, and shoals 400  
 Of fish, that with their fins, and shining scales,  
 Glide under the green wave in sculls, that oft  
 Bank the mid-sea: part single, or with mate,  
 Graze the sea-weed their pasture; and thro' groves  
 Of coral stray; or, sporting with quick glance, 405  
 Shew to the sun their wav'd coats, drop'd with gold:  
 Or, in their pearly shells at ease, attend  
 Moist nutriment; or under rocks their food,  
 In jointed armor, watch: on smooth, the seal,  
 And bended dolphins play: part, huge of bulk! 410  
 Wallowing unweildy, enormous in their gait,  
Tempest

Tempest the ocean: there leviathan,  
 Hugest of living creatures, on the Deep  
 Stretch'd like a promontory, sleeps, or swims;  
 And seems a moving land; and at his gills 415  
 Draws in, and at his trunk spouts out a sea.  
 Mean-while the tepid caves, and fens, and shoars,  
 Their brood as numerous hatch from th'egg, that  
 Bursting with kindly rupture, forth-disclos'd [soon  
 Their callow young; but feather'd soon, and fledge,  
 They summ'd their pens; and soaring th'air sublime,  
 With clang despis'd the ground, under a cloud  
 In prospect: there, the eagle, and the stork,  
 On cliffs, and cedar tops, their eyries build:  
 Part, loosely wing the region; part, more wise 425  
 In common, rang'd in figure wedge their way;  
 Intelligent of seasons, and set forth  
 Their aery caravan, high over seas  
 Flying, and over lands, with mutual wing  
 Easing their flight; (so steers the prudent crane 430  
 Her annual voyage) born on winds, the air  
 Floats, as they pass, fann'd with un-number'd plumes.  
 From branch to branch the smaller birds with song  
 Solac'd the woods, and spread their painted wings  
 'Till



Book VII. *PARADISE LOST.* 285

'Till ev'n; nor then, the solemn nightingale 435  
Ceas'd warbling, but all night tun'd her soft lays.  
Others, on silver lakes, and rivers, bath'd  
Their downy breast; the swan, with arched neck  
Between her white wings mantling proudly, rows  
Her state with oary feet: yet oft they quit 440  
The dank, and rising on stiff pennons, tour  
The mid aerial sky. Others, on ground  
Walk'd firm; the crested cock, whose clarion sounds  
The silent hours; and th' other, whose gay train  
Adorns him, color'd with the florid hue 445  
Of rain-bows, and starry eyes. The waters thus  
With fish replenish'd, and the air with fowl,  
Ev'ning and morn solemniz'd the Fifth Day.

The Sixth, and of creation last, arose  
With ev'ning harps, and matin; when God said, 450  
Let th' earth bring forth fowl living in her kind,  
Cattel, and creeping things, and beast of th' earth,  
Each in their kind! — The earth obey'd; and strait  
Op'ning her fertile womb, teem'd at a birth  
Innumerable living creatures, perfect forms, 455  
Limb'd and full grown. Out of the ground up-rose,  
As

As from his laire, the wild beast, where he wons  
In forest wild, in thicket, brake, or den:

Among the trees in pairs they rose, they walk'd;  
The cattel in the fields, and meadows green: 460

Those rare, and solitary; these in flocks  
Pasturing at once, and in broad herds up-sprung.

The grassy clods now calv'd, now half appear'd  
The tawny lion, pawing to get free 464

His hinder parts; then springs as broke from bonds,  
And rampant shakes his brinded mane: the ounce,

The libbard, and the tiger, (as the mole  
Rising) the crumbled earth above them threw

In hillocks: the swift stag from under ground 469  
Bore up his branching head: scarce from his mould

Behemoth (biggest born of earth) up-heav'd  
His vastness: fleec'd the flocks, and bleating, rose,

As plants: ambiguous between sea and land,  
The river-horse, and scaly crocodile. 474

At once came forth whatever creeps the ground,  
Insect, or worm: those wav'd their limber fans,

For wings; and smallest lineaments exact

In all the liveries deck'd of summer's pride,

With spots of gold, and purple, azure, and green:

These,



Book VII. *PARADISE LOST.* 287

These, as a line, their long dimension drew, 480  
Streaking the ground with sinuous trace: not all  
Minims of nature; some of serpent-kind,  
Wondrous in length, and corpulence, involv'd  
Their snaky folds, and added wings. First crept  
The parsimonious emmet, provident 485  
Of future; in small room large heart inclos'd!  
(Pattern of just equality perhaps  
Hereafter, joined in her popular tribes  
Of commonalty.) Swarming next, appear'd  
The female bee, that feeds her husband drone  
Deliciously, and builds her waxen cells 491  
With honey stor'd. The rest are numberless,  
And thou their natures know'st, and gav'st them  
Needless to thee repeated: nor unknown [names,  
The serpent (subtlest beast of all the field) 495  
Of huge extent sometimes, with brazen eyes  
And hairy mane terrific, though to thee  
Not noxious, but obedient at thy call.

Now heav'n in all her glory shon, and rowl'd  
Her motions, as the great First-Mover's hand 500  
First wheel'd their course: earth in her rich attire  
Con-

Consummate lovely smil'd; air, water, earth,  
 By fowl, fish, beast, was flown, was swum, was  
 Frequent; and of the Sixth Day yet remain'd. [walk'd  
 There wanted yet the master-work, the end 505  
 Of all yet done; a creature, who not prone,  
 And brute as other creatures, but indu'd  
 With sanctity of reason, might erect  
 His stature, and upright with front serene  
 Govern the rest, self-knowing; and from thence  
 Magnanimous, to correspond with heav'n: 511  
 But, grateful to acknowledge whence his good  
 Descends; thither with heart, and voice, and eyes  
 Directed in devotion, to adore  
 And worship God Supreme, Who made him chief  
 Of all His works: therefore th' Omnipotent 516  
 Eternal FATHER (for where is not He  
 Present?) thus to His SON audibly spake.

Let Us make now MAN in Our image, MAN  
 In Our similitude, and let them rule 520  
 Over the fish, and fowl, of sea, and air,  
 Beast of the field, and over all the earth,  
 And ev'ry creeping thing that creeps the ground!  
 This



This said, He form'd thee, ADAM, thee O Man!  
 Dust of the ground ; and in thy nostrils breath'd  
 The breath of life : in His own image He 526  
 Created thee ; in the image of GOD  
 Express ; and thou becam'st a living soul.  
 Male He created thee ; but thy consort  
 Female, for race : then bless'd mankind, and said,  
 Be fruitful, multiply, and fill the earth ; 531  
 Subdue it, and throughout dominion hold  
 Over fish of the sea, and fowl of th' air,  
 And ev'ry living thing that moves on th' earth,  
 Where-ever thus created ; for no place 535  
 Is yet distinct by name. Thence (as thou know'st)  
 He brought thee into this delicious grove,  
 This garden ; planted with the trees of GOD ;  
 Delectable, both to behold, and taste!  
 And freely all their pleasant fruit for food 540  
 Gave thee (all sorts are here that all th' earth yields,  
 Variety without end !) But, of the tree,  
 Which tasted works knowledge of good, and evil,  
 Thou may'st not : in the day thou eat'st, thou dy'st :  
 Death is the penalty impos'd : beware! 545

U

And

And govern well thy appetite, lest Sin  
Surprise thee, and her black attendant Death.

Here finish'd He, and all that He had made  
View'd, and behold! all was entirely good;  
So ev'n and morn accomplish'd the Sixth Day.  
Yet not, 'till the Creator from His work 551  
Desisting, though un-wearied, up return'd;  
Up to the heav'n of heav'ns, His high abode:  
Thence to behold this new-created world,  
Th' addition of His empire, how it shew'd 555  
In prospect from His throne, how good, how fair,  
Answering His great idea! Up He rode,  
Follow'd with acclamation, and the sound  
Symphonious of ten thousand harps, that tun'd  
Angelic harmonies: the earth, the air 560  
Refounded, (thou remember'st, for thou heard'st)  
The heav'ns, and all the constellations, rung:  
The planets in their station list'ning stood,  
While the bright pomp ascended jubilant.  
Open, ye everlasting gates! they sung, 565  
Open, ye heav'ns! your living doors; let in



The Great Creator, from His work return'd  
 Magnificent, His six days work, a world:  
 Open, and henceforth oft; for GOD will deign  
 To visit oft the dwellings of just men, 570  
 Delighted; and with frequent intercourse  
 Thither will send His winged messengers,  
 On errands of supernal grace. So sung  
 The glorious train ascending. He through heav'n,  
 That open'd wide her blazing portals, led 575  
 To GOD's eternal house direct the way:  
 A broad, and ample road, whose dust is gold,  
 And pavement stars, as stars to thee appear  
 Seen in the galaxy: (that milky way  
 Which nightly, as a circling zone, thou seest 580  
 Poulder'd with stars.) And now on earth the Seventh  
 Ev'ning arose in EDEN; for the sun  
 Was set, and twilight from the east came on,  
 Fore-running night: when, at the holy mount  
 Of heav'n's high-seated top, th' imperial throne 585  
 Of Godhead, fix'd for ever firm, and sure,  
 The Filial Pow'r arriv'd, and sat Him down  
 With His Great FATHER: for, He also went  
 Invisible, yet staid (such privilege

Hath Omnipresence) and the work ordain'd, 590  
 Author, and end, of all things; and from work  
 Now resting, blest'd, and hallow'd the Sev'nth Day;  
 As resting on that day from all His work:  
 But not in silence holy kept; the harp  
 Had work, and rested not; the solemn pipe, 595  
 And dulcimer, all organs of sweet stop,  
 All sounds on fret by string, or golden wire,  
 Temper'd soft tunings, intermix'd with voice  
 Choral, or unison: of incense clouds,  
 Fuming from golden censers, hid the mount: 600  
 Creation, and the Six Days acts, they sung.

Great are Thy works, JEHOVAH! infinite  
 Thy pow'r! what thought can measure Thee, or  
 Relate Thee? Greater now in Thy return [tongue  
 Than from the giant-angels: Thee that day 605  
 Thy thunders magnify'd; but, to create  
 Is greater, than created to destroy.  
 Who can impair Thee, Mighty King! or bound  
 Thy empire? Easily the proud attempt  
 Of spirits apostate, and their counsels vain, 610  
 Thou hast repell'd; while impiously they thought  
 Thee









Thee to diminish, and from Thee withdraw  
 The number of thy worshippers. Who seeks  
 To lessen Thee, against his purpose serves  
 To manifest the more Thy might: his evil 615  
 Thou usest, and from thence creat'st more good.  
 Witness this new-made world, another heav'n!  
 From heaven-gate not far, founded in view  
 On the clear hyaline, the glassy sea;  
 Of amplitude almost immense, with stars 620  
 Numerous, and ev'ry star perhaps a world  
 Of destin'd habitation; but, Thou know'st  
 Their seasons: among these the seat of men,  
 Earth, with her nether ocean circumfus'd, 624  
 Their pleasant dwelling-place. Thrice happy men!  
 And sons of men, whom God hath thus advanc'd!  
 Created in His image, there to dwell,  
 And worship Him; and in reward to rule  
 Over His works, on earth, in sea, or air;  
 And multiply a race of worshippers, 630  
 Holy, and just: thrice happy, if they know  
 Their happiness, and persevere upright!

So sung they; and the empyrean rung  
 With Halleluiahs: thus was Sabbath kept.

And thy request think now fulfill'd, that ask'd 635  
How first this world, and face of things, began,  
And what, before thy memory, was done  
From the beginning; that posterity,  
Inform'd by thee, might know. If else thou seek'st  
Ought, not surpassing human measure, say. 640

*The end of the seventh Book.*



20 JY 63

THE



---

THE  
EIGHTH BOOK  
OF  
PARADISE LOST.

---

U 4

## The ARGUMENT.

*Adam inquires concerning cœlestial motions; is doubtfully answer'd, and exhorted to search rather things more worthy of knowledge. Adam assents: and still desirous to detain Raphael, relates to him what he remember'd since his own creation; his placing in Paradise; his talk with GOD concerning solitude, and fit society; his first meeting and nuptials with EVE; his discourse with the Angel thereupon; who, after admonitions repeated, departs.*





---

---

# PARADISE LOST.

---

## B O O K VIII.

---

**T**HE Angel ended, and in ADAM's ear  
 So charming left his voice, that he a-while  
 Thought him still speaking, still stood fix'd to hear:  
 Then, as new wak'd, thus gratefully reply'd.

What thanks sufficient, or what recompense 5  
 Equal, have I to render thee, divine  
 Historian? who thus largely hast allay'd  
 The thirst I had of knowledge, and vouchsaf'd  
 This friendly condescension to relate  
 Things, else by me un-searchable; now heard 10  
 With wonder, but delight; and, as is due,

With

With glory attributed to the High  
 Creator. Something yet of doubt remains,  
 Which only thy solution can resolve.

When I behold this goodly frame, this world, 15  
 Of heav'n, and earth consisting; and compute  
 Their magnitudes; this earth a spot, a grain,  
 An atom, with the firmament compar'd,  
 And all her number'd stars; that seem to rowl  
 Spaces incomprehensible, (for such 20  
 Their distance argues, and their swift return  
 Diurnal) meerly to officiate light  
 Round this opacous earth, this punctual spot,  
 One day, and night; in all their vast survey  
 Useless besides: reasoning I oft admire, 25  
 How nature, wise, and frugal, could commit  
 Such disproportions; with superfluous hand,  
 So many nobler bodies to create,  
 Greater so manifold, to this one use;  
 (For ought appears) and on their orbs impose 30  
 Such restless revolution, day by day  
 Repeated: while the sedentary earth,  
 (That better might with far less compass move)  
 Serv'd



Serv'd by more noble than her self, attains  
 Her end without least motion; and receives 35  
 (As tribute, such a sumless journey brought  
 Of incorporeal speed) her warmth, and light;  
 Speed! to describe whose swiftness number fails.

So spake our fire, and by his count'nance seem'd  
 Ent'ring on studious thoughts abstruse: which EVE  
 Perceiving, where she sat retir'd in sight; 41  
 With lowliness majestic from her seat,  
 And grace, that won who saw to wish her stay,  
 Rose; and went forth among her fruits, and flow'rs,  
 To visit how they prosper'd, bud, and bloom, 45  
 Her nursery: they at her coming sprung,  
 And touch'd by her fair tendance gladlier grew.  
 Yet went she not, as not with such discourse  
 Delighted, or not capable her ear  
 Of what was high: such pleasure she reserv'd, 50  
 ADAM relating, the sole auditress:  
 Her husband the relater she prefer'd  
 Before the Angel; and of him to ask  
 Chose rather: he, she knew, would intermix  
 Grateful digressions, and solve high dispute 55  
 With

With conjugal careſſes: from his lip  
 Not words alone pleas'd her. (O! when meet now  
 Such pairs, in love, and mutual honor join'd?)  
 With Goddeſs-like demeanor forth ſhe went;  
 Not un-attended! for, on her, as Queen, 60  
 A pomp of winning Graces waited ſtill;  
 And from about her ſhot darts of deſire  
 Into all eyes, to wiſh her ſtill in fight.  
 And RAPHAEEL now, to ADAM's doubt propos'd,  
 Benevolent, and facil, thus reply'd. 65

To ask, or ſearch, I blame thee not; for heav'n  
 Is as the book of GOD before thee ſet;  
 Wherein to read His wond'rous works, and learn  
 His ſeaſons, hours, or days, or months, or years.  
 This to attain, whether heav'n move, or earth, 70  
 Imports not, if thou reckon right: the reſt,  
 From man, or Angel, the Great Architect  
 Did wiſely to conceal; and not divulge  
 His ſecrets to be ſcan'd by them, who ought  
 Rather admire. Or, if they liſt to try 75  
 Conjecture, He His fabric of the heav'ns  
 Hath left to their diſputes, perhaps to move

His



His laughter at their quaint opinions wide  
 Hereafter; when they come to model heav'n,  
 And calculate the stars, how they will wield 80  
 The mighty frame; how build, un-build, contrive,  
 To save appearances; how gird the sphere  
 With centric, and eccentric, scribl'd o'er,  
 Cycle, and epicycle, orb in orb.

Already by thy reasoning this I guess, 85  
 Who art to lead thy off-spring; and supposest,  
 That bodies bright, and greater, should not serve  
 The less not bright, nor heav'n such journies run,  
 Earth sitting still, when she alone receives  
 The benefit. Consider first, that Great, 90  
 Or Bright, infers not excellence: the earth  
 (Though, in comparison of heav'n, so small,  
 Nor glistering,) may of solid good contain  
 More plenty than the sun, that barren shines;  
 Whose virtue on it self works no effect, 95  
 But in the fruitful earth: there first receiv'd,  
 His beams (unactive else) their vigor find.  
 Yet, not to earth are those bright luminaries  
 Officious; but to Thee, earth's habitant.

And for the heav'n's wide circuit, let it speak 100  
 The

The Maker's high magnificence; who built  
 So spacious, and his line stretch'd out so far;  
 That man may know he dwells not in his own;  
 An edifice too large for him to fill,  
 Lodg'd in a small partition; and the rest 105  
 Ordain'd for uses to his Lord best known.  
 The swiftness of those circles attribute,  
 (Though numberless) to His Omnipotence;  
 That to corporeal substances could add 109  
 Speed almost spiritual. Me thou think'st not slow,  
 Who since the morning-hour set out from heav'n,  
 Where GOD resides; and e'er mid-day arriv'd  
 In EDEN: distance inexpressible  
 By numbers that have name! But, this I urge,  
 Admitting motion in the heav'ns; to shew 115  
 Invalid, that which thee to doubt it mov'd:  
 Not that I so affirm, though so it seem  
 To thee who hast thy dwelling here on earth.  
 GOD, to remove His ways from human sense,  
 Plac'd heav'n from earth so far, that earthly sight,  
 If it presume, might err in things too high, 121  
 And no advantage gain. What if the sun  
 Be centre to the world; and other stars

(By



(By his attractive virtue, and their own,  
 Incited) dance about him various rounds? 125  
 Their wand'ring course now high, now low, then hid,  
 Progressive, retrograde, or standing still,  
 In six thou seest: and what if sev'nth to these  
 The planet Earth (so stedfast though she seem)  
 Insensibly three different motions move? 130  
 Which else to several spheres thou must ascribe,  
 Mov'd contrary with thwart obliquities;  
 Or save the sun his labor, and that swift  
 Nocturnal and diurnal rhomb suppos'd,  
 Invisible else above all stars, the wheel 135  
 Of day, and night: which needs not thy belief,  
 If earth, industrious of her self, fetch day  
 Travelling east; and with her part averse  
 From the sun's beam, meet night; her other part  
 Still luminous by his ray. What if that light, 140  
 (Sent from her through the wide transpicious air)  
 To the terrestrial moon be as a star,  
 Inlightning her by day, as she by night  
 This earth? reciprocal, if land be there,  
 Fields, and inhabitants. Her spots thou seest 145  
 As clouds, and clouds may rain, and rain produce  
 Fruits

Fruits in her soften'd soil, for some to eat  
 Allotted there: and other suns perhaps,  
 With their attendant moons, thou wilt descry,  
 Communicating male, and female, light: 150  
 Which two great sexes animate the world;  
 Stor'd in each orb, perhaps, with some that live.  
 For, such vast room in nature un-possess'd  
 By living soul, desert, and desolate,  
 Only to shine, yet scarce to contribute 155  
 Each orb a glimpse of light, convey'd so far  
 Down to this habitable, which returns  
 Light back to them, is obvious to dispute.  
 But, whether thus these things, or whether not;  
 Whether the sun, predominant in heav'n, 160  
 Rise on the earth; or earth rise on the sun:  
 He, from the east his flaming rode begin;  
 Or she, from west her silent course advance,  
 With inoffensive pace (that spinning sleeps  
 On her soft axle, while she paces ev'n, 165  
 And bears thee soft with the smooth air along)  
 Sollicit not thy thoughts with matters hid;  
 Leave them to God above; Him serve, and fear!  
 Of other creatures, as Him pleases best,

Where-



Where-ever plac'd, let Him dispose: joy thou 170  
 In what He gives to thee, this Paradise,  
 And thy fair *EVE*: heav'n is for thee too high  
 To know what passes there; be lowly wise:  
 Think only what concerns thee, and thy Being;  
 Dream not of other worlds, what creatures there  
 Live, in what state, condition, or degree; 176  
 Contented that thus far hath been reveal'd,  
 Not of earth only, but of highest heav'n.

To whom thus *ADAM*, clear'd of doubt, reply'd,  
 How fully hast thou satisfy'd me, pure 180  
 Intelligence of heav'n, Angel! serene!  
 And, freed from intricacies, taught to live  
 The easiest way; nor with perplexing thoughts  
 To interrupt the sweet of life; from which  
 God hath bid dwell far-off all anxious cares, 185  
 And not molest us; unless we our selves  
 Seek them with wand'ring thoughts, and notions  
 But, apt the mind, or fancy, is to rove [vain.  
 Un-check'd, and of her roving is no end:  
 'Till warn'd, or by experience taught, she learn, 190  
 That, not to know at large of things remote

From use, obscure, and subtile; but, to know  
 That which before us lies in daily life,  
 Is the prime wisdom: what is more, is fume,  
 Or emptiness, or fond impertinence; 195  
 And renders us, in things that most concern,  
 Un-practis'd, un-prepar'd, and still to seek.  
 Therefore from this high pitch let us descend  
 A lower flight; and speak of things at hand  
 Useful; whence happy mention may arise 200  
 Of something not unseasonable to ask,  
 By suff'rance, and thy wonted favor deign'd.

Thee I have heard relating what was done  
 E'er my remembrance: now, hear me relate  
 My story, which perhaps thou hast not heard: 205  
 And day is yet not spent: 'till then thou seest  
 How subtly to detain thee I devise;  
 Inviting thee to hear, while I relate:  
 Fond! were it not in hope of thy reply.  
 For, while I sit with thee, I seem in heav'n: 210  
 And sweeter thy discourse is to my ear  
 Than fruits of palm-tree (pleasantest to thirst,  
 And hunger both, from labor) at the hour  
 Of sweet repast: they satiate, and soon fill,



Tho' pleasant; but thy words, with grace divine  
Imbu'd, bring to their sweetness no satiety.

To whom thus RAPHAEL answer'd heav'nly meek.  
Nor are thy lips ungraceful, fire of men!  
Nor tongue in-eloquent: for GOD on thee  
Abundantly His gifts hath also pour'd;      220  
Inward, and outward both, His image fair.  
Speaking, or mute, all comeliness, and grace  
Attends thee; and, each word, each motion, forms.  
Nor less think we in heav'n of thee on earth,  
Than of our fellow-servant; and inquire      225  
Gladly into the ways of GOD with man:  
For, GOD we see hath honor'd thee, and set  
On man His equal love. Say therefore on;  
For, I that day was absent, as befel,  
Bound on a voyage uncouth, and obscure,      230  
Far on excursion toward the gates of hell,  
Squar'd in full legion, (such command we had)  
To see that none thence issu'd forth a spy,  
Or enemy, while GOD was in His work;  
Left He (incens'd at such eruption bold)      235  
Destruction with creation might have mix'd.

Not that they durst without His leave attempt;  
 But, us He sends upon His high behests  
 For state, as Sov'reign King; and to inure  
 Our prompt obedience. Fast we found, fast shut  
 The dismal gates, and barricado'd strong! 241  
 But, long e'er our approaching, heard within  
 Noise, other than the sound of dance, or song!  
 Torment, and loud lament, and furious rage.  
 Glad we return'd up to the coasts of light 245  
 E'er sabbath-ev'ning: so we had in charge.  
 But, thy relation now! for I attend,  
 Pleas'd with thy words, no less than thou with mine.

So spake the God-like Pow'r, and thus our fire  
 For man to tell how human life began 250  
 Is hard; for, who himself beginning knew?  
 Desire with thee still longer to converse  
 Induc'd me.—As new wak'd from soundest sleep,  
 Soft on the flow'ry herb I found me laid,  
 In balmy sweat; which with his beams the sun 255  
 Soon dry'd, and on the reaking moisture fed.  
 Strait toward heav'n my wond'ring eyes I turn'd,  
 And gaz'd a-while the ample sky: 'till rais'd

By



By quick instinctive motion, up I sprung,  
 As thitherward endeavouring; and upright 260  
 Stood on my feet. About me round I saw  
 Hill, dale, and shady woods, and sunny plains,  
 And liquid lapse of murm'ring streams: by these,  
 Creatures that liv'd, and mov'd, and walk'd, or flew;  
 Birds on the branches warbling: all things smil'd  
 With fragrance; and with joy my heart o'er-flow'd.  
 My self I then perus'd, and limb by limb  
 Survey'd, and sometimes went, and sometimes ran  
 With supple joints, as lively vigor led.  
 But, who I was, or where, or from what cause, 270  
 Knew not: to speak I try'd, and forthwith spake;  
 My tongue obey'd, and readily could name  
 Whate'er I saw. Thou sun, said I, fair light!  
 And thou in-lighten'd earth, so fresh, and gay!  
 Ye hills, and dales, ye rivers, woods, and plains!  
 And ye that live, and move, fair creatures! tell,  
 Tell (if ye saw) how came I thus, how here. —  
 Not of my self — By some Great Maker then,  
 In goodness, and in pow'r, præ-eminent.  
 Tell me, how may I know Him, how adore, 280  
 From Whom I have that thus I move, and live,

And feel that I am happier than I know.

While thus I call'd, and stray'd I knew not whither,  
From where I first drew air, and first beheld

This happy light; when answer none return'd, 285

On a green shady bank, profuse of flow'rs,

Pensive I sat me down. There gentle sleep

First found me, and with soft oppression seiz'd

My droused sense, untroubl'd, (though I thought

I then was passing to my former state 290

Insensible, and forthwith to dissolve)

When suddenly stood at my head a dream,

Whose inward apparition gently mov'd

My fancy, to believe I yet had Being, 294

And liv'd. One came, methought, of shape divine,

And said, "Thy mansion wants thee, ADAM, rise

"First man, of men in-numerable ordain'd

"First father! call'd by thee, I come thy guide

"To the garden of blifs, thy seat prepar'd."

So saying, by the hand he took me rais'd; 300

And over fields, and waters, as in air,

Smooth-sliding without step, last led me up

A woody mountain; whose high top was plain:

A circuit wide-inclos'd, with goodliest trees

Planted,



Book VIII. *PARADISE LOST.* 311

Planted, with walks, and bow'rs; that what I saw  
Of earth before scarce pleasant seem'd. Each tree 306  
Loaden with fairest fruit, that hung to th' eye  
Tempting, stir'd in me sudden appetite  
To pluck, and eat; whereat I wak'd, and found  
Before mine eyes all real, as the dream 310  
Had lively shadow'd. Here had new begun  
My wand'ring, had not He, who was my guide  
Up hither, from among the trees appear'd,  
Presence Divine! Rejoicing, but with awe,  
In adoration at His feet I fell 315  
Submits: He rear'd me, and "Whom thou sought'st  
Said mildly, "Author of all this thou seest [I am,  
"Above, or round about thee, or beneath.  
"This Paradise I give thee, count it thine  
"To till, and keep, and of the fruit to eat: 320  
"Of every tree that in the garden grows  
"Eat freely with glad heart; fear here no dearth:  
"But, of the Tree whose operation brings  
"Knowledge of Good and Ill, which I have set  
"The pledge of thy obedience, and thy faith, 325  
"Amid the garden by the Tree of Life,  
"(Remember what I warn thee!) shun to taste,

“ And shun the bitter consequence: for know,  
 “ The day thou eat’st thereof, my sole command  
 “ Transgrest, inevitably thou shalt dye ; 330  
 “ From that day mortal: and this happy state  
 “ Shalt lose, expell’d from hence into a world  
 “ Of woe, and sorrow.” — Sternly He pronounc’d  
 The rigid interdiction, which resounds  
 Yet dreadful in mine ear, though in my choice 335  
 Not to incur : but, soon His clear aspect  
 Return’d, and gracious purpose thus renew’d.  
 “ Not only these fair bounds, but all the earth  
 “ To thee, and to thy race, I give: as lords  
 “ Possess it, and all things that therein live, 340  
 “ Or live in sea, or air, beast, fish, and fowl:  
 “ In sign whereof, each bird, and beast, behold  
 “ After their kinds: I bring them to receive  
 “ From thee their names, and pay thee fealty  
 “ With low subjection: understand the same 345  
 “ Of fish within their wat’ry residence;  
 “ Not hither summon’d, since they cannot change  
 “ Their element, to draw the thinner air.”  
 As thus He spake, each bird, and beast, behold 349  
 Approaching, two and two; these, cowering low  
 With



With blandishment ; each bird stoop'd on his wing.  
I nam'd them, as they pass'd, and understood  
Their nature (with such knowledge GOD indu'd  
My sudden apprehension!) But, in these  
I found not what me-thought I wanted still; 355  
And to the heav'nly Vision thus presum'd.

O, by what name (for Thou above all these,  
Above mankind, or ought than mankind higher,  
Surpassest far my naming!) how may I  
Adore Thee, Author of this universe, 360  
And all this good to man? For whose well-being  
So amply, and with hands so liberal,  
Thou hast provided all things. But, with me  
I see not who partakes: in solitude  
What happiness, who can enjoy alone? 365  
Or, all enjoying, what contentment find?

Thus I presumptuous; and the Vision bright,  
As with a smile more brighten'd, thus reply'd.

What call'st thou solitude? Is not the earth  
With various living creatures, and the air, 370  
Replenish'd,

Replenish'd, and all these at thy command  
 To come, and play before thee? Know'st thou not  
 Their language, and their ways? They also know,  
 And reason not contemptibly: with these  
 Find pastime, and bear rule; thy realm is large. 375

So spake the Universal Lord, and seem'd  
 So ord'ring: I, with leave of speech implor'd,  
 And humble deprecation, thus reply'd.

Let not my words offend Thee, heav'nly Pow'r!  
 My Maker, be propitious while I speak! 380  
 Hast Thou not made me here Thy substitute,  
 And these inferior far beneath me set?  
 Among unequals what society  
 Can fort, what harmony, or true delight?  
 Which must be mutual, in proportion due 385  
 Giv'n, and receiv'd: but, in disparity  
 (The one intense, the other still remiss)  
 Cannot well suit with either, but soon prove  
 Tedious alike. Of fellowship I speak  
 (Such as I seek,) fit to participate 390  
 All rational delight; wherein the brute

Cannot



Cannot be human confort: they rejoyce  
 Each with their kind, lion with lioness;  
 So fitly them in pairs Thou hast combin'd:  
 Much less can bird with beast, or fish with fowl 395  
 So well converse, nor with the ox the ape:  
 Worse, then, can man with beast, and least of all.

Whereto th'Almighty answer'd, not displeas'd.  
 A nice, and subtile happiness, I see  
 Thou to thy self propos'st, in the choice 400  
 Of thy associates, ADAM! and wilt taste  
 No pleasure (though in pleasure) solitary.  
 What think'st thou then of Me, and this My state?  
 Seem I to thee sufficiently possess  
 Of happiness, or not, who am alone 405  
 From all eternity? for none I know  
 Second to Me, or like; equal much less.  
 How have I then with whom to hold converse,  
 Save with the creatures which I made, and those  
 To Me inferior, infinite descents 410  
 Beneath what other creatures are to thee?

He ceas'd; I lowly answer'd. To attain  
 The height, and depth of Thy eternal ways,

All human thoughts come short, Supreme of things!  
 Thou in Thy self art perfect, and in Thee 415  
 Is no deficiency found. Not so is Man,  
 But in degree; the cause of his desire  
 By conversation with his like to help;  
 Or solace his defects. No need that Thou  
 Shouldst propagate, already Infinite; 420  
 And through all numbers absolute, though ONE.  
 But, man by number is to manifest  
 His single imperfection; and beget  
 Like of his like, his image multiply'd:  
 In unity defective; which requires 425  
 Collateral love, and dearest amity.  
 Thou in Thy secrecy although alone,  
 Best with Thy self accompany'd, seek'st not  
 Social communication: yet, so pleas'd,  
 Canst raise Thy creature, to what height Thou wilt  
 Of union, or communion, Deify'd: 431  
 I by conversing cannot these erect  
 From prone; nor in their ways complacence find.

Thus I imbolden'd spake, and freedom us'd  
 Permissive, and acceptance found; which gain'd  
 This answer from the gracious Voice Divine. 436



Thus far to try thee, A D A M! I was pleas'd;  
 And find thee knowing, not of beasts alone,  
 (Which thou hast rightly nam'd) but, of thy self:  
 Expressing well the spirit within thee free, 440  
 My image, not imparted to the brute:  
 Whose fellowship therefore un-meet for thee,  
 Good reason was thou freely shouldst dislike;  
 And be so minded still. I, e'er thou spak't,  
 Knew it not good for man to be alone: 445  
 And no such company as then thou saw'st  
 Intended thee: for tryal only brought,  
 To see how thou couldst judge of fit, and meet.  
 What next I bring shall please thee, be assur'd,  
 Thy likeness, thy fit help, thy other self, 450  
 Thy wish, exactly to thy heart's desire.

He ended, or I heard no more; for now  
 My earthly by His heav'nly over-power'd,  
 Which it had long stood under, strain'd to th' height  
 In that coelestial colloquy sublime, 455  
 (As with an object that excels the sense,  
 Dazled, and spent) sunk down; and sought repair  
 Of sleep, which instantly fell on me, call'd

By nature as in aid, and clos'd mine eyes.  
 Mine eyes He clos'd, but open left the cell 460  
 Of fancy, my internal sight; by which  
 (Abstract as in a transe) methought I saw,  
 Though sleeping, where I lay, and saw the shape  
 Still glorious before Whom awake I stood:  
 Who stooping open'd my left side, and took 465  
 From thence a rib, with cordial spirits warm,  
 And life-blood streaming fresh: wide was the wound!  
 But, suddenly with flesh fill'd up, and heal'd.  
 The rib He form'd, and fashion'd with His hands:  
 Under His forming hands a creature grew 470  
 Man-like, but different sex: so lovely fair!  
 That what seem'd fair in all the world, seem'd now  
 Mean, or in her summ'd up, in her contain'd,  
 And in her looks; which from that time infus'd  
 Sweetness into my heart, un-felt before: 475  
 And into all things from her air inspir'd  
 The spirit of love, and amorous delight.  
 She dis-appear'd, and left me dark! I wak'd  
 To find her, or for ever to deplore  
 Her loss, and other pleasures all abjure. 480  
 When out of hope, behold her! not far off;  
 Such



Such as I saw her in my dream, adorn'd  
 With what all earth or heaven could bestow,  
 To make her amiable: on she came,  
 Led by her heav'nly Maker (though un-seen) 485  
 And guided by His voice; nor un-inform'd  
 Of nuptial sanctity, and marriage rites:  
 Grace was in all her steps, heav'n in her eye,  
 In every gesture dignity, and love!  
 I overjoy'd could not forbear aloud. 490

This turn hath made amends! Thou hast fulfill'd  
 Thy words, Creator bounteous, and benign!  
 Giver of all things fair! but fairest this  
 Of all Thy gifts! nor enviest. I now see  
 Bone of my bone, flesh of my flesh, my self 495  
 Before me: woman is her name; of man  
 Extracted: for this cause he shall forego  
 Father, and mother, and t'his wife adhere;  
 And they shall be one flesh, one heart, one soul.

She heard me thus; and tho' divinely brought,  
 Yet innocence, and virgin modesty, 501  
 Her virtue, and the conscience of her worth,  
 That

That would be woo'd, and not un-sought be won;  
 Not obvious, not obtrusive, but retir'd,  
 The more desirable: or, to say all, 505  
 Nature her self (though pure of sinful thought)  
 Wrought in her so, that seeing me, she turn'd.  
 I follow'd her; she what was honor knew,  
 And, with obsequious majesty, approv'd  
 My pleaded reason.—To the nuptial bow'r 510  
 I led her, blushing like the morn: all heav'n,  
 And happy constellations, on that hour  
 Shed their selectest influence: the earth  
 Gave sign of gratulation, and each hill:  
 Joyous the birds; fresh gales, and gentle airs 515  
 Whisper'd it to the woods, and from their wings  
 Flung rose, flung odors from the spicy shrub,  
 Disporting! 'till the amorous bird of night  
 Sung spousal, and bid haste the ev'ning star,  
 On his hill-top to light the bridal lamp. 520

Thus I have told thee all my state, and brought  
 My story to the sum of earthly bliss,  
 Which I enjoy: and must confess to find  
 In all things else delight indeed; but, such

As,



As, us'd or not, works in the mind no change, 525  
 Nor vehement desire; these delicacies  
 I mean of taste, sight, smell, herbs, fruits, and flow'rs,  
 Walks, and the melody of birds: but, here  
 Far otherwise! transported I behold,  
 Transported touch: here passion first I felt, 530  
 Commotion strange! in all enjoyments else  
 Superior, and un-mov'd: here only weak,  
 Against the charm of beauty's pow'rful glance.  
 Or, nature fail'd in me, and left some part  
 Not proof enough such object to sustain: 535  
 Or, from my side subducting, took perhaps  
 More than enough: at least, on her bestow'd  
 Too much of ornament; in outward shew,  
 Elaborate; of inward, less exact.  
 For, well I understand in the prime end 540  
 Of nature, her th' inferior; in the mind,  
 And inward faculties; which most excel:  
 In outward also her resembling less  
 His image who made both; and less expressing  
 The character of that dominion giv'n 545  
 O'er other creatures. Yet, when I approach  
 Her loveliness, so absolute she seems,

Y

And

And in her self complete, so well to know  
 Her own; that what she wills to do, or say,  
 Seems wisest, virtuousest, discretest, best: 550  
 All higher knowledge in her presence falls  
 Degraded; wisdom in discourse with her  
 Loses discount'nanc'd, and like folly shews:  
 Authority, and reason, on her wait,  
 As one intended first, not after made 555  
 Occasionally: and (to consummate all)  
 Greatness of mind, and nobleness, their seat  
 Build in her loveliest, and create an awe  
 About her, as a guard angelic plac'd.

To whom the Angel with contracted brow. 560

Accuse not nature, she hath done her part;  
 Do thou but thine: and be not diffident  
 Of wisdom: she deserts thee not, if thou  
 Dismis not her, when most thou need'st her nigh;  
 By attributing over-much to things 565  
 Less excellent, as thou thy self perceiv'st.  
 For, what admir'st thou, what transports thee so?  
 An outside? fair no doubt, and worthy well  
 Thy



Thy cherishing, thy honoring, and thy love;  
 Not thy subjection. Weigh with her thy self; 570  
 Then value: oft-times nothing profits more  
 Than self-esteem; grounded on just, and right,  
 Well manag'd: of that skill the more thou know'st,  
 The more she will acknowledge thee her head,  
 And to realities yield all her shews: 575  
 Made so adorn for thy delight the more;  
 So awful, that with honor thou may'st love  
 Thy mate; who sees, when thou art seen least wise.  
 But if the sense of Touch, whereby mankind  
 Is propagated, seem such dear delight 580  
 Beyond all other; think the same vouchsaf'd  
 To cattle, and each beast; which would not be  
 To them made common, and divulg'd, if ought  
 Therein enjoy'd were worthy to subdue  
 The soul of man, or passion in him move. 585  
 What higher in her society thou find'st  
 Attractive, human, rational, love still:  
 In loving thou dost well, in passion not;  
 Wherein true love consists not. Love refines  
 The thoughts, and heart enlarges; hath his seat  
 In reason, and is judicious; is the scale 591

By which to heav'nly love thou may'st ascend;  
 Not sunk in carnal pleasure: for which cause,  
 Among the beasts no mate for thee was found.

To whom thus, half abash'd, A D A M reply'd.  
 Neither her out-side form'd so fair, nor ought  
 In procreation common to all kinds,  
 (Though higher of the genial bed by far,  
 And with mysterious reverence I deem)  
 So much delights me, as those graceful acts, 600  
 Those thousand decencies that daily flow  
 From all her words, and actions, mix'd with love,  
 And sweet compliance, which declare un-feign'd  
 Union of mind, or in us both one soul;  
 Harmony to behold in wedded pair! 605  
 More grateful than harmonious sound to th' ear.  
 Yet these subject not: I to thee disclose  
 What inward thence I feel; not therefore foil'd:  
 Who meet with various objects, from the sense  
 Variously representing; yet, still free, 610  
 Approve the best, and follow what I approve.  
 To love, thou blam'st me not; for love, thou say'st,  
 Leads up to heav'n; is both the way, and guide:  
 Bear



Bear with me then, if lawful what I ask:  
 Love not the heav'nly spirits? And how their love  
 Express they? By looks only? Or, do they mix  
 Irradiance? Virtual, or immediate, touch? 617

To whom the Angel, (with a smile that glow'd  
 Cœlestial rosy-red, love's proper hue)  
 Answer'd. Let it suffice thee that thou know'st  
 Us happy, and without love no happiness. 621  
 Whatever pure thou in the body enjoy'st,  
 (And pure thou wert created) we enjoy  
 In eminence : and obstacle find none  
 Of membrane, joint, or limb, exclusive bars: 625  
 Easier than air with air, if spirits embrace,  
 Total they mix; union of pure with pure  
 Desiring: nor restrain'd conveyance need,  
 As flesh to mix with flesh, or soul with soul.  
 But, I can now no more: the parting sun 630  
 Beyond the earth's green Cape, and verdant isles,  
 HESPEREAN sets, my signal to depart.  
 Be strong, live happy, and love! But, first of all,  
 HIM, Whom to love is to obey, and keep 634  
 His great command: take heed lest passion sway

Thy judgment to do ought, which else free will  
 Would not admit: thine, and of all thy sons,  
 The weal, or woe, in thee is plac'd; beware!  
 I in thy persevering shall rejoyce,  
 And all the Blest. Stand fast! to stand, or fall, 640  
 Free in thine own arbitrement it lies:  
 Perfect within, no outward aid require;  
 And all temptation to transgress repel.

So saying, he arose: whom A D A M thus  
 Follow'd with benediction. Since to part! 645  
 Go heav'nly guest, ethereal messenger,  
 Sent from Whose sov'reign goodness I adore!  
 Gentle to me, and affable, hath been  
 Thy condescension, and shall be honor'd ever  
 With grateful memory: thou to mankind 650  
 Be good, and friendly still, and oft return!

So parted they; the Angel up to heav'n  
 From the thick shade, and A D A M to his bow'r.

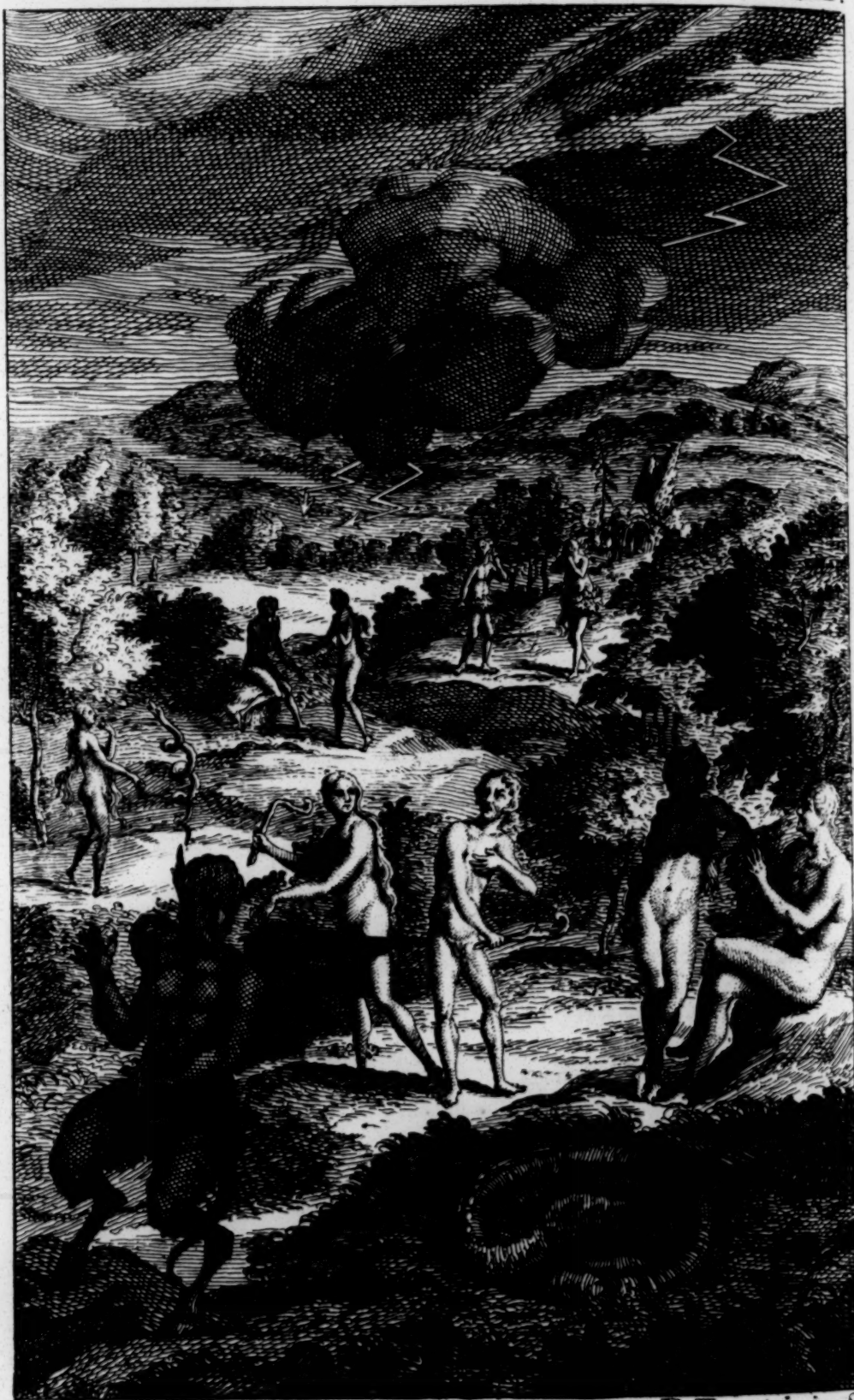
*The end of the eighth Book.*

20 JY63

T H E









---

THE  
NINTH BOOK  
OF  
PARADISE LOST.



## The A R G U M E N T.

Satan having compass'd the earth, with meditated guile returns, as a mist, by night into Paradise, and enters into the serpent sleeping. Adam and Eve in the morning go forth to their labors, which Eve proposes to divide in several places, each laboring apart: Adam consents not, alleging the danger, lest that enemy, of whom they were forewarn'd, should attempt her found alone: Eve (loth to be thought not circumspect, or firm enough) urges her going apart, the rather desirous to make tryal of her strength; Adam at last yields: the serpent finds her alone; his subtile approach, first gazing, then speaking, with much flattery extolling Eve above all other Creatures. Eve, wond'ring to hear the Serpent speak, asks how he attain'd to human speech, and such understanding, not till now; the serpent answers, that by tasting of a certain tree in the garden he attain'd both to speech and reason, 'till then void of both: Eve requires him to bring her to that tree, and finds it to be the Tree of Knowledge forbidden: the serpent, now grown bolder, with many wiles, and arguments, induces her at length to eat: she, pleas'd with the taste, deliberates a-while whether to impart thereof to Adam, or not: at last brings him of the fruit, relates what persuaded her to eat thereof: Adam, at first amaz'd, but perceiving her lost, resolves (through vehemence of love) to perish with her; and, extenuating the trespass, eats also of the fruit: the effects thereof in them both: they seek to cover their nakedness: then fall to variance, and accusation of one another.



---



---

# PARADISE LOST.

---



---

## B O O K IX.

---

**N**O more of talk where GOD, or Angel-guest,  
 With man, as with his friend, familiar us'd  
 To sit indulgent, and with him partake  
 Rural repast; permitting him the while  
 Venial discourse un-blam'd. I now must change 5  
 Those notes to tragic! Foul distrust, and breach  
 Disloyal on the part of man; revolt,  
 And disobedience: on the part of heav'n  
 (Now alienated!) distance, and distaste,  
 Anger, and just rebuke, and judgment giv'n, 10  
 That brought into this world a world of woe;  
 Sin, and her shadow Death, and Misery

Death's

Death's harbinger. Sad task! yet argument  
 Not less, but more, heroic than the wrath  
 Of stern ACHILLES on his foe, persu'd 15  
 Thrice fugitive about TROY wall: or rage  
 Of TURNUS, for LAVINIA dis-espous'd:  
 Or NEPTUNE's ire, or JUNO's, that so long  
 Perplex'd the GREEK, and CYTHEREA's son:  
 If answerable style I can obtain 20  
 Of my coelestial patroness, who deigns  
 Her nightly visitation un-implor'd,  
 And dictates to me slumbring; or inspires  
 Easy my un-premeditated verse:  
 Since first this subject for Heroic Song 25  
 Pleas'd me, long chusing, and beginning late;  
 Not sedulous by nature to indite  
 Wars, hitherto the only argument  
 Heroic deem'd; chief mast'ry to dissect  
 With long, and tedious havoc fabled knights 30  
 In battels feign'd; (the better fortitude  
 Of patience, and Heroic Martydom,  
 Un-sung) or, to describe races, and games,  
 Or tilting furniture, emblazon'd shields,  
 Impresses quaint, caparisons, and steeds; 35  
 Bases,



Bases, and tinsel trappings, gorgeous knights  
 At joust, and tournament; then, marshal'd feast,  
 Serv'd up in hall with sewers, and seneshals:  
 The skill of artifice, or office, mean!  
 Not that which justly gives Heroic name 40  
 To person, or to poem. Me (of these  
 Nor skill'd, nor studious) higher argument  
 Remains; sufficient of itself to raise  
 That name, unless an age too late, or cold  
 Climate, or years, damp my intended wing 45  
 Depress'd: and much they may, if all be mine,  
 Not her's, who brings it nightly to my ear.

The sun was sunk, and after him the star  
 Of HESPERUS, whose office is to bring  
 Twilight upon the earth (short arbiter 50  
 'Twixt day, and night,) and now, from end to end,  
 Night's hemisphere had veil'd th' horizon round:  
 When SATAN, who late fled before the threats  
 Of GABRIEL out of EDEN, now improv'd  
 In meditated fraud, and malice, bent 55  
 On man's destruction, maugre what might hap  
 Of heavier on himself, fearless return'd.

BY

By night he fled, and at mid-night return'd  
 From compassing the earth; cautious of day,  
 Since *URIEL*, regent of the sun, descry'd 60  
 His entrance, and forewarn'd the Cherubim,  
 That keep their watch: thence full of anguish driv'n,  
 The space of sev'n continu'd nights he rode  
 With darkness; thrice the equinoctial line 64  
 He circled; four times cross'd the car of night  
 From pole to pole, traversing each colure:  
 On th' eighth return'd; and, on the coast averse  
 From entrance, or Cherubic watch, by stealth  
 Found un-suspected way. There was a place, 69  
 Now not (tho' sin, not time, first wrought the  
 Where *TIGRIS*, at the foot of Paradise, [change)  
 Into a gulph shot under-ground, 'till part  
 Rose up a fountain by the Tree of Life.  
 In with the river sunk, and with it rose  
*SATAN*, involv'd in rising mist; then fought 75  
 Where to lie hid: sea he had search'd, and land,  
 From *EDEN* over *PONTUS*, and the pool  
*MÆOTIS*, up beyond the river *OB*:  
 Downward as far antartic: and in length,  
 West from *ORONTES*, to the ocean barr'd 80  
 At



At DARIEN: thence, to the land where flows  
 GANGES, and INDUS. Thus the orb he roam'd  
 With narrow search; and with inspection deep  
 Consider'd every creature, which of all 84  
 Most opportune might serve his wiles; and found  
 The serpent subt'lest beast of all the field.  
 Him after long debate (irresolute  
 Of thoughts revolv'd) his final sentence chose  
 Fit vessel, fittest imp of fraud, in whom  
 To enter, and his dark suggestions hide 90  
 From sharpest sight: for, in the wily snake  
 Whatever sleights, none would suspicious mark,  
 As from his wit, and native subtilty  
 Proceeding; which in other beasts observ'd  
 Doubt might beget of diabolic pow'r, 95  
 Active within, beyond the sense of brute.  
 Thus he resolv'd, but first from inward grief  
 His bursting passion into plaints thus pour'd.

O earth, how like to heav'n! if not prefer'd  
 More justly, feat worthier of gods, as built 100  
 With second thoughts, reforming what was old!  
 For, what God after better, worse would build?

Ter-

Terrestrial heav'n! danc'd round by other heav'ns  
 That shine, yet bear their bright officious lamps,  
 Light above light, for thee alone, as seems, 105  
 In thee concentrating all their pretious beams  
 Of sacred influence! As G O D in heav'n  
 Is centre, yet extends to all; so thou  
 Centring, receiv'st from all those orbs: in thee,  
 Not in themselves, all their known virtue appears  
 Productive in herb, plant, and nobler birth 111  
 Of creatures animate with gradual life,  
 Of growth, sense, reason, all summ'd up in Man!  
 With what delight could I have walk'd thee round,  
 If I could joy in ought: sweet interchange 115  
 Of hill, and valley, rivers, woods, and plains!  
 Now land, now sea, and shores with forest crown'd,  
 Rocks, dens, and caves! But, I in none of these  
 Find place, or refuge: and the more I see  
 Pleasures about me, so much more I feel 120  
 Torment within me, as from the hateful siege  
 Of contraries: all good to me becomes  
 Bane; and in heav'n much worse would be my state  
 But neither here seek I, no nor in heav'n  
 To dwell, unless by mast'ring heav'n's Supreme:



Book IX. *PARADISE LOST.* 335

Nor hope to be my self less miserable 126  
By what I seek, but others to make such  
As I, though thereby worse to me redound.  
For only in destroying I find ease  
To my relentless thoughts: and him destroy'd,  
Or won to what may work his utter loss, 131  
For whom all this was made; all this will soon  
Follow, as to him link'd in weal or woe:  
In woe then! that destruction wide may range.  
To me shall be the glory sole among 135  
Th' infernal Pow'rs, in one day to have marr'd  
What He ALMIGHTY styl'd, six nights, and days,  
Continu'd making; and, who knows how long  
Before had been contriving? though perhaps  
Not longer than since I, in one night, freed 140  
From servitude inglorious well nigh half  
Th' angelic name, and thinner left the throng  
Of his adorers. He, to be aveng'd,  
And to repair His numbers thus impair'd;  
Whether such virtue spent of old now fail'd 145  
More Angels to create (if they at least  
Are His created) or, to spite us more,  
Determin'd to advance into our room

A

A creature form'd of earth, and him endow,  
 (Exalted from so base original!) 150  
 With heav'nly spoils; our spoils. What He decreed,  
 He effected; Man He made, and for him built  
 Magnificent this world, and earth his feat,  
 Him lord pronounc'd; and, O indignity!  
 Subjected to his service angel-wings, 155  
 And flaming ministers, to watch, and tend  
 Their earthy charge. Of these the vigilance  
 I dread; and to elude, thus wrap'd in mist  
 Of midnight vapor glide obscure, and pry 159  
 In every bush, and brake, where hap may find  
 The serpent sleeping; in whose mazy folds  
 To hide me, and the dark intent I bring.  
 O foul descent!. that I, who erst contended  
 With Gods to sit the highest, am now constrain'd  
 Into a beast; and, mix'd with bestial slime, 165  
 This essence to incarnate, and im-brute;  
 That to the height of Deity aspir'd!  
 But, what will not ambition, and revenge,  
 Descend to? Who aspires, must down as low,  
 As high he soar'd; obnoxious, first or last, 170  
 To basest things. Revenge, at first though sweet,  
 Bitter



Bitter e'er long, back on it self recoiles:  
 Let it; I reckon not, so it light well aim'd!  
 Since higher I fall short, on him who next  
 Provokes my envy (this new favorite 175  
 Of heav'n, this man of clay, son of despite,  
 Whom, us the more to spite, his Maker rais'd  
 From dust) spite then with spite is best repaid.

So saying, through each thicket, dank or dry,  
 Like a black mist low creeping, he held on 180  
 His midnight-search, where soonest he might find  
 The serpent. Him fast-sleeping soon he found,  
 In labyrinth of many a round self-rowl'd;  
 His head the midst, well-stor'd with subtle wiles:  
 Not yet in horrid shade, or dismal den, 185  
 Nor nocent yet; but, on the grassy herb,  
 Fearless unfear'd he slept. In at his mouth  
 The Devil enter'd; and his brutal sense,  
 (In heart, or head) possessing, soon inspir'd  
 With act intelligential: but, his sleep 190  
 Disturb'd not, waiting close th' approach of morn.

Z

Now,

Now, when as sacred light began to dawn  
 In EDEN on the humid flow'rs, that breath'd  
 Their morning incense, when all things that breathe,  
 From th' earth's great altar send up silent praise 195  
 To the Creator, and His nostrils fill  
 With grateful smell, forth came the human pair,  
 And join'd their vocal worship to the choir  
 Of creatures wanting voice: that done, partake  
 The season, prime of sweetest scents, and airs: 200  
 Then commune, how that day they best may ply  
 Their growing work (for much their work out-grew  
 The hands' dispatch of two, gard'ning so wide)  
 And EVE first to her husband thus began.

ADAM! well may we labor still to dress 205  
 This garden, still to tend plant, herb, and flow'r,  
 Our pleasant task injoin'd; but 'till more hands  
 Aid us, the work under our labor grows  
 Luxurious by restraint: what we by day  
 Lop over-grown, or prune, or prop, or bind, 210  
 One night or two with wanton growth derides,  
 Tending to wild. Thou therefore now advise,  
 Or



Book IX. *PARADISE LOST.* 339

Or hear what to my mind first thoughts present :  
Let us divide our labors: thou, where choice  
Leads thee, or where most needs, whether to wind  
The woodbine round this arbor, or direct 216  
The clasping ivy where to climb: while I,  
In yonder spring of roses, intermix'd  
With myrtle, find what to redress 'till noon.  
For, while so near each other thus all day 220  
Our task we chuse, what wonder if so near  
Looks intervene, and smiles, or object new  
Casual discourse draw on; which intermits  
Our day's-work; brought to little, though begun  
Early, and th' hour of supper comes un-earn'd. 225

To whom mild answer ADAM thus return'd.  
Sole EVE, associate sole, to me beyond  
Compare, above all living creatures dear! [ploy'd,  
Well hast thou motion'd, well thy thoughts em-  
How we might best fulfil the work, which here 230  
God hath assign'd us; nor of me shalt pass  
Unprais'd: (for nothing lovelier can be found  
In woman, than to study household good;  
And good works in her husband to promote.)

Yet not so strictly hath our Lord impos'd 235  
 Labor, as to debar us when we need  
 Refreshment, whether food, or talk between,  
 (Food of the mind) or this sweet intercourse  
 Of looks, and smiles: for, smiles from reason flow,  
 To brute deny'd, and are of love the food; 240  
 Love, not the lowest end of human life.  
 For, not to irksome toil, but to delight  
 He made us, and delight to reason join'd.  
 The paths, and bow'rs, doubt not but our joint-hands  
 Will keep from wilderness with ease, as wide 245  
 As we need walk; 'till younger hands e'er-long  
 Assist us. But, if much converse perhaps  
 Thee satiate, to short absence I could yield:  
 (For solitude sometimes is best society,  
 And short retirement urges sweet return.) 250  
 But, other doubt possesses me; lest harm  
 Befall thee, sever'd from me: for, thou know'st  
 What hath been warn'd us, what malicious foe  
 Envyng our happiness, and of his own  
 Despairing, seeks to work us woe, and shame, 255  
 By sly assault: and somewhere nigh at hand  
 Watches, no doubt, with greedy hope to find  
 His



Book IX. *PARADISE LOST.* 341

His wish, and best advantage, us afunder:  
Hopeless to circumvent us join'd, where each  
To other speedy aid might lend at need. 260  
Whether his first design be to withdraw  
Our fealty from GOD; or to disturb  
Conjugal love; (than which perhaps no bliss  
Enjoy'd by us excites his envy more:)  
Or this, or worse, leave not the faithful side 265  
That gave thee Being, still shades thee, and protects.  
The wife, where danger, or dishonor lurks,  
Safest, and seemliest by her husband stays,  
Who guards her, or with her the worst indures.

To whom the virgin-majesty of EVE, 270  
As one who loves, and some unkindness meets,  
With sweet austere composure thus reply'd.

[Lord!  
Off-spring of heav'n, and earth, and all earth's  
That such an enemy we have, who seeks  
Our ruin, both by thee inform'd I learn, 275  
And from the parting Angel over-heard;  
As in a shady nook I stood behind,  
Just then return'd at shut of ev'ning flow'rs.

Z 3

But,

But, that thou should'st my firmness therefore doubt  
 To GOD, or thee, because we have a foe 280  
 May tempt it, I expected not to hear.  
 His violence thou fear'st not, being such  
 As we (not capable of death, or pain)  
 Can either not receive, or can repel.  
 His fraud is then thy fear ; which plain infers 285  
 Thy equal fear, that my firm faith, and love,  
 Can by his fraud be shaken, or seduc'd:  
 Thoughts! which how found they harbor in thy  
 ADAM! mis-thought of her to thee so dear? [breast,

To whom with healing words ADAM reply'd. 290  
 Daughter of GOD, and man, immortal EVE!  
 For, such thou art ; from sin, and blame, entire:  
 Not diffident of thee do I dissuade  
 Thy absence from my sight ; but, to avoid  
 Th' attempt it self, intended by our foe. 295  
 For, he who tempts, though in vain, at least asperges  
 The tempted with dishonor foul ; suppos'd  
 Not incorruptible of faith, not proof  
 Against temptation. Thou thy self with scorn,  
 And anger, would'st resent the offer'd wrong, 300  
 Though



Book IX. *P A R A D I S E L O S T.* 343

Though in-effectual found: mis-deem not then,  
If such affront I labor to avert  
From thee alone, which on us both at once  
The enemy, though bold, will hardly dare;  
Or daring, first on me th' assault shall light. 305  
Nor thou his malice, and false guile, contemn:  
Subtile he needs must be, who could seduce  
Angels: nor think superfluous other aid.  
I, from the influence of thy looks, receive  
Access in every virtue; in thy sight 310  
More wise, more watchful, stronger, (if need were  
Of outward strength) while shame, thou looking on,  
Shame to be overcome, or over-reach'd,  
Would utmost vigor raise, and rais'd unite.  
Why should'st not thou like sense within thee feel  
When I am present, and the tryal chuse 316  
With me, best witness of thy virtue try'd?

So spake domestic A D A M in his care,  
And matrimonial love: but E V E, who thought  
Less attributed to her faith sincere, 320  
Thus her reply with accent sweet renew'd.

If this be our condition, thus to dwell  
 In narrow circuit, straiten'd by a foe,  
 Subtile, or violent, we not indu'd  
 Single with like defence, where-ever met; 325  
 How are we happy, still in fear of harm?  
 But, harm precedes not sin: only our foe  
 Tempting, affronts us with his foul esteem  
 Of our integrity: — his foul esteem  
 Sticks no dishonor on our front, but turns 330  
 Foul on himself: then wherefore shunn'd, or fear'd,  
 By us? who rather double honor gain  
 From his surmise prov'd false; find peace within,  
 Favor from heav'n, our witness, from th'event.  
 And what is faith, love, virtue un-assay'd 335  
 Alone, without exterior help sustain'd?  
 Let us not then suspect our happy state  
 Left so imperfect by the Maker wise,  
 As not secure to single, or combin'd:  
 Frail is our happiness, if this be so, 340  
 And EDEN were no EDEN, thus expos'd.

To whom thus ADAM fervently reply'd.  
 O woman! best are all things as the will

Of



Book IX. *PARADISE LOST.* 345

Of GOD ordain'd them: His creating hand  
Nothing imperfect, or deficient, left, 345  
Of all that He created; much less man,  
Or ought that might his happy state secure.  
Secure from outward force, within himself  
The danger lyes, yet lyes within his pow'r;  
Against his will he can receive no harm: 350  
But, GOD left free the will; for, what obeys  
Reason, is free; and reason He made right:  
But, bid her well beware, and still erect;  
Lest by some fair appearing-good surpriz'd,  
She dictate false; and mis-inform the will 355  
To do what GOD expressly hath forbid.  
Not then mistrust, but tender love, enjoins  
That I should mind thee oft; and mind thou me!  
Firm we subsist, yet possible to swerve;  
Since reason not impossible may meet 360  
Some specious object, by the foe suborn'd;  
And fall into deception unaware,  
Not keeping strictest watch, as she was warn'd.  
Seek not temptation then, which to avoid  
Were better; and most likely, if from me 365  
Thou sever not; tryal will come un-sought.  
Would'ft

Would'st thou approve thy constancy? Approve  
 First thy obedience: th' other who can know,  
 Not seeing thee attempted? who attest?  
 But, if thou think tryal un-sought may find 370  
 Us both securer, than thus warn'd thou seem'st—  
 Go!—for thy stay, not free, absents thee more:  
 Go in thy native innocence! rely  
 On what thou hast of virtue; summon all! 374  
 For God tow'ards thee hath done His part, do thine.

So spake the patriarch of mankind; . but EVE  
 Persisted, yet submits, though last, reply'd.

With thy permission then, and thus forewarn'd,  
 Chiefly by what thy own last reasoning words  
 Touch'd only; that our tryal, when least sought,  
 May find us both perhaps far less prepar'd, 381  
 The willinger I go: nor much expect  
 A foe so proud will first the weaker seek;  
 So bent, the more shall shame him his repulse.

Thus saying, from her husband's hand her hand  
 Soft she withdrew; and like a Wood-Nymph light  
 OREAD,



OREAD, or DRYAD, or of DELIA'S train,  
 Betook her to the groves: but DELIA'S self  
 In gait surpass'd, and Goddess-like deport:  
 Though not, as she, with bow and quiver arm'd; 390  
 But with such gard'ning-tools as art, yet rude,  
 Guiltless of fire had form'd, or Angels brought.  
 To PALES, or POMONA, thus adorn'd,  
 Likeliest she seem'd, (POMONA, when she fled  
 VERTUMNUS) or to CERES in her prime, 395  
 Yet virgin of PROSERPINA from JOVE.  
 Her long with ardent look his eye persu'd  
 Delighted! but desired more her stay.  
 Oft he to her his charge of quick return  
 Repeated; she to him as oft engag'd 400  
 To be return'd by noon amid the bow'r;  
 And all things in best order, to invite  
 Noontide repast, or afternoon's repose.  
 O much deceiv'd, much failing, (hapless EVE!)  
 Of thy presum'd return! event perverse! 405  
 Thou never from that hour in Paradise  
 Found'st either sweet repast, or sound repose!  
 Such ambush, laid among sweet flow'rs, and shades,  
 Waited with hellish rancor imminent

To

To intercept thy way, or send thee back 410  
 Despoil'd of innocence, of faith, of blifs! —  
 For now, and since first break of dawn, the fiend  
 (Mere serpent in appearance) forth was come;  
 And on his quest, where likeliest he might find  
 The only two of mankind; but, in them 415  
 The whole included race, his purpos'd prey.  
 In bow'r, and field he fought, where any tuft  
 Of grove, or garden-plot more pleasant lay,  
 Their tendance, or plantation for delight,  
 By fountain, or by shady rivulet. 420  
 He fought them both, but wish'd his hap might find  
 EVE separate: he wish'd, but not with hope  
 Of what so seldom chanc'd: when to his wish,  
 Beyond his hope, EVE separate he spies,  
 Veil'd in a cloud of fragrance, where she stood, 425  
 Half-spy'd, so thick the roses bushing round  
 About her glow'd; half-stooping to support  
 Each flow'r of slender stalk, whose head though gay  
 Carnation, purple, azure, or speck'd with gold,  
 Hung drooping un-sustain'd: them she up-stays 430  
 Gently with myrtle-band; mindless the while  
 Her self, though fairest un-supported flow'r,

From



From her best prop so far, and storm so nigh!  
 Nearer he drew, and many a walk travers'd  
 Of stateliest covert, cedar, pine, or palm; 435  
 Then voluble, and bold; now hid, now seen,  
 Among thick-woven arborets, and flow'rs,  
 Im-border'd on each bank, the hand of EVE:  
 (Spot more delicious! than those gardens feign'd  
 Or of reviv'd ADONIS; or renown'd 440  
 ALCINOUS, host of old LAERTES' son;  
 Or that, not mystic, where the sapient King  
 Held dalliance with his fair ÆGYPTIAN spouse.)  
 Much he the place admir'd, the person more:  
 As one who long in populous city pent, 445  
 Where houses thick, and sewers, annoy the air,  
 Forth-issuing on a summer's morn, to breathe  
 Among the pleasant villages, and farms  
 Adjoyn'd, from each thing met conceives delight;  
 The smell of grain, or tedded grafs, or kine, 450  
 Or dairy, each rural sight, each rural sound:  
 If chance, with Nymph-like step, fair virgin pass,  
 What pleasing seem'd, for her now pleases more;  
 She most, and in her look sums all delight:  
 Such pleasure took the serpent to behold 455  
 This

This flow'ry plat, the sweet recess of EVE  
 Thus early, thus alone. Her heav'nly form  
 Angelic, (but more soft, and feminine)  
 Her graceful innocence, her every air  
 Of gesture, or least action, over-aw'd 460  
 His malice, and, with rapine sweet, bereav'd  
 His fierceness of the fierce intent it brought.  
 That space the Evil One abstracted stood  
 From his own evil, and for the time remain'd  
 Stupidly good ; of enmity disarm'd, 465  
 Of guile, of hate, of envy, of revenge.  
 But, the hot hell that always in him burns,  
 Though in mid-heav'n, soon ended his delight ;  
 And tortures him now more, the more he sees  
 Of pleasure, not for him ordain'd : then, soon 470  
 Fierce hate he recollects, and all his thoughts  
 Of mischief, gratulating, thus excites.

Thoughts, whither have ye led me! with what  
 Compulsion thus transported, to forget 474  
 What hither brought us! hate, not love ; nor hope  
 Of Paradise for hell, hope here to taste  
 Of pleasure ; but, all pleasure to destroy,

Save



Save what is in destroying; other joy  
 To me is lost! Then, let me not let pass  
 Occasion, which now smiles. Behold alone 480  
 The woman, opportune to all attempts!  
 Her husband (for I view far round) not nigh,  
 Whose higher intellectual more I shun,  
 And strength, of courage haughty, and of limb  
 Heroic built, though of terrestrial mold; 485  
 Foe not formidable! exempt from wound:  
 I not: (so much hath hell debas'd, and pain  
 Infeebled me, to what I was in heav'n!)  
 She fair, divinely fair! fit love for Gods!  
 Not terrible: though terror be in love, 490  
 And beauty, not approach'd by stronger hate;  
 Hate, stronger under shew of love well feign'd;  
 The way which to her ruin now I tend.

So spake the enemy of mankind, inclos'd  
 In serpent, inmate bad! and toward EVE 495  
 Address'd his way: not with indented wave,  
 Prone on the ground, as since; but on his rear,  
 Circular base of rising folds, that tower'd  
 Fold above fold, a surging maze! His head

Crested aloft, and carbuncle his eyes; 500  
 With burnish'd neck of verdant gold, erect  
 Amidst his circling spires, that on the grass  
 Floated redundant: pleasing was his shape,  
 And lovely! Never since of serpent-kind  
 Lovelier; not those that in *ILLYRIA* chang'd 505  
*HERMIONE*, and *CADMUS*; or the God  
 In *EPIDAUROS*: nor, to which transform'd  
*AMMONIAN JOVE*, or *CAPITOLINE* was seen;  
 He, with *OLYMPIAS*; this, with her who bore  
*SCIPIO*, the height of *ROME*. With tract oblique  
 At first, (as one who sought access, but fear'd 511  
 To interrupt) side-long he works his way:  
 As when a ship, by skilful steers-man wrought  
 Nigh river's mouth, or fore-land, where the wind  
 Veers oft, as oft so steers, and shifts her sail: 515  
 So vary'd he, and of his tortuous train  
 Curl'd many a wanton wreath, in sight of *EVE*,  
 To lure her eye. She busied, heard the sound  
 Of rustling leaves, but minded not, as us'd  
 To such disport before her through the Field, 520  
 From every beast; more dutious at her call,  
 Than at *CIRCEAN* call the herd disguis'd.

He



Book IX. *PARADISE LOST.* 353

He, bolder now, un-call'd before her stood;  
But, as in gaze admiring: oft he bow'd  
His turret crest, and sleek-enamel'd neck, 525  
Fawning; and lick'd the ground whereon she trod.  
His gentle dumb expression turn'd at length  
The eye of EVE, to mark his play: he, glad  
Of her attention gain'd, (with serpent-tongue  
Organic, or impulse of vocal air) 530  
His fraudulent temptation thus began.

Wonder not, sov'reign mistress! if perhaps  
Thou canst, who art sole wonder; much less arm  
Thy looks, the heav'n of mildness, with disdain,  
Displeas'd that I approach thee thus, and gaze 535  
Infatiate; I thus single; nor have fear'd  
Thy awful brow, more awful thus retir'd.  
Fairest resemblance of thy Maker fair!  
Thee all things living gaze on, all things thine  
By gift, and thy coelestial beauty adore, 540  
With ravishment beheld! there best beheld,  
Where universally admir'd: but, here  
In this inclosure wild, these beasts among,  
(Beholders rude, and shallow to discern

Half what in thee is fair) one man except, 545  
 Who feest thee? and, what is one! who shouldst be  
 A Goddess among Gods, ador'd, and serv'd [seen  
 By Angels numberless, thy daily train.

So glaz'd the tempter, and his proem tun'd:  
 Into the heart of EVE his words made way, 550  
 Though at the voice much marvelling: at length,  
 Not un-amaz'd, she thus in answer spake.

[nounc'd

What may this mean? Language of man pro-  
 By tongue of brute, and human sense express'd!  
 The first, at least, of these I thought deny'd 555  
 To beasts; whom GOD, on their creation-day,  
 Created mute to all articulate sound:  
 The latter I demur; for, in their looks  
 Much reason, and in their actions, oft appears.  
 Thee, serpent, subtil'st beast of all the field 560  
 I knew; but not with human voice indu'd.  
 Redouble then this miracle, and say,  
 How cam'st thou speakable, of mute; and how  
 To me so friendly grown above the rest  
 Of brutal kind, that daily are in fight? 565  
 Say! for, such wonder claims attention due.



To whom the guileful tempter thus reply'd:  
 Empress of this fair world, resplendent EVE!  
 Easy to me it is to tell thee all  
 What thou command'st; and right thou shouldst be [obey'd.  
 I was at first as other beasts, that graze 571  
 The trodden herb, of abject thoughts, and low,  
 As was my food; nor ought, but food, discern'd,  
 Or sex; and apprehended nothing high.  
 'Till on a day roving the field, I chanc'd 575  
 A goodly tree far-distant to behold,  
 Loaden with fruit of fairest colors mix'd,  
 Ruddy, and gold: I nearer drew, to gaze;  
 When from the boughs a savory odor blown,  
 Grateful to appetite! more pleas'd my sense 580  
 Than smell of sweetest fenel, or the teats  
 Of ewe, or goat, dropping with milk at ev'n,  
 Unsuck'd of lamb, or kid, that tend their play.  
 To satisfy the sharp desire I had  
 Of tasting those fair apples, I resolv'd 585  
 Not to defer: hunger, and thirst, at once,  
 Pow'rful persuaders! quicken'd at the scent  
 Of that alluring fruit, urg'd me so keen.  
 About the mossy trunk I wound me soon;

(For, high from ground, the branches would require  
 Thy utmost reach, or A D A M's) round the tree 591  
 All other beasts that saw, with like desire  
 Longing, and envying stood, but could not reach.  
 Amid the tree now got, where plenty hung  
 Tempting so nigh, to pluck, and eat my fill 595  
 I spar'd not; for, such pleasure 'till that hour,  
 At feed, or fountain, never had I found!  
 Sated at length, e'er-long I might perceive  
 Strange alteration in me, to degree  
 Of reason in my inward pow'rs; and speech 600  
 Wanted not long; though to this shape retain'd.  
 Thenceforth to speculations high, or deep,  
 I turn'd my thoughts; and, with capacious mind,  
 Consider'd all things visible in heav'n,  
 Or earth, or middle; all things fair, and good: 605  
 But, all that fair, and good, in Thy divine  
 Semblance, and in Thy beauty's heav'nly ray,  
 United I beheld: no Fair to Thine  
 Equivalent, or second! which compell'd  
 Me thus, though importune perhaps, to come 610  
 And gaze, and worship Thee, of right declar'd  
 Sov'reign of creatures, universal dame!



So talk'd the spirited fly snake: and EVE,  
Yet more amaz'd, unwary thus reply'd.

Serpent! thy over-praising leaves in doubt 615  
The virtue of that fruit, in thee first prov'd.  
But say, where grows the tree? from hence how far?  
For many are the trees of GOD that grow  
In Paradise, and various, yet unknown  
To us; in such abundance lyes our choice, 620  
As leaves a greater store of fruit un-touch'd:  
Still hanging in-corruptible, till men  
Grow up to their provision, and more hands  
Help to dis-burden nature of her birth.

To whom the wily adder, blithe, and glad. 625  
Empress! the way is ready, and not long;  
Beyond a row of myrtles, on a flat,  
Fast by a fountain, one small thicket past  
Of blowing myrrh, and balm: if thou accept  
My conduct, I can bring thee thither soon. 630

Lead then, said EVE. He leading swiftly rowl'd  
In tangles, and made intricate seem strait,

To mischief swift : hope elevates, and joy  
 Brightens his crest : as when a wand'ring fire,  
 Compact of unctuous vapor, which the night 635  
 Condenses, and the cold invirons round,  
 Kindled through agitation to a flame,  
 (Which oft, they say, some evil spirit attends.)  
 Hovering, and blazing with delusive light, 639  
 Mis-leads th'amaz'd night-wanderer from his way,  
 Through bogs, and mires, and oft thro' pond, or pool ;  
 There swallow'd up, and lost, from succor far !  
 So glister'd the dire snake, and into fraud  
 Led EVE, our credulous mother, to the tree  
 Of prohibition, root of all our woe ! 645  
 Which when she saw, thus to her guide she spake,

Serpent ! we might have spar'd our coming hither,  
 Fruitless to me, though fruit be here to excess :  
 The credit of whose virtue rest with thee ;  
 Wond'rous indeed, if cause of such effects ! 650  
 But, of this tree we may not taste, nor touch ;  
 GOD so commanded ; and left that command  
 Sole daughter of His voice : the rest, we live  
 Law to our selves ; our reason is our law.

To



To whom the tempter guilefully reply'd. 655  
 Indeed! Hath G O D then said that of the fruit  
 Of all these garden-trees ye shall not eat,  
 Yet lords declar'd of all in earth, or air?

To whom thus E V E, yet sinless. Of the fruit  
 Of each tree in the garden we may eat; 660  
 But, of the fruit of this fair tree, amidst  
 The garden, G O D hath said, Ye shall not eat  
 Thereof, nor shall ye touch it, lest ye die.

[bold

She scarce had said, tho' brief, when now more  
 The tempter (but, with shew of zeal, and love 665  
 To man, and indignation at his wrong)  
 New part puts on; and, as to passion mov'd,  
 Fluctuates disturb'd, yet comely, and in act  
 Rais'd, as of some great matter to begin.  
 As when of old some orator renown'd, 670  
 In A T H E N S, or free R O M E, where eloquence  
 Flourish'd (since mute!) to some great cause ad-  
 Stood in himself collected; while each part, [dress'd,  
 Motion, each act, won audience, e'er the tongue;  
 Sometimes in height began, as no delay 675

Of preface brooking, through his zeal of right:  
 So, standing, moving, or to height up-grown,  
 The tempter all im-passion'd, thus began.

O sacred, wise, and wisdom-giving plant,  
 Mother of science! now I feel thy pow'r 680  
 Within me clear; not only to discern  
 Things in their causes, but to trace the ways  
 Of highest agents, deem'd however wise.  
 Queen of this universe! do not believe  
 Those rigid threats of death: ye shall not die: 685  
 How should ye? by the fruit? it gives you life  
 To knowledge: by the threatner? Look on me,  
 Me! who have touch'd, and tasted; yet both live,  
 And life more perfect have attain'd than fate  
 Meant me, by venturing higher than my lot. 690  
 Shall that be shut to man, which to the beast  
 Is open? Or will G O D incense his ire  
 For such a petty trespass? and not praise  
 Rather your dauntless virtue, whom the pain  
 Of death denounc'd (whatever thing death be) 695  
 Deter'd not from atchieving what might lead  
 To happier life, knowledge of good, and evil?

Of



Of good, how just? of evil, (if what is evil  
 Be real) why not known, since easier shun'd?  
 GOD therefore cannot hurt ye, and be just: 700  
 Not just, not GOD; not fear'd then, nor obey'd:  
 Your fear it self of death removes the fear.  
 Why then was this forbid? Why, but to awe;  
 Why, but to keep ye low, and ignorant,  
 His worshipers: He knows that in the day 705  
 You eat thereof, your eyes (that seem so clear,  
 Yet are but dim) shall perfectly be then  
 Open'd, and clear'd: and ye shall be as Gods,  
 Knowing both good, and evil, as they know.  
 That ye shall be as Gods, since I as man, 710  
 Internal man, isbut proportion meet:  
 Iof brute, human; ye of human, Gods.  
 So ye shall die perhaps, by putting off  
 Human, to put on Gods; death to be wish'd, 714  
 Tho' threaten'd, which no worse than this can bring!  
 And what are Gods, that man may not become  
 As they, participating god-like food?  
 The Gods are first, and that advantage use  
 On our belief, that all from them proceeds:  
 I question it! for this fair earth I see, 720  
 Warm'd

Warm'd by the sun, producing every kind;  
 Them, nothing: if they all things, who in-clos'd  
 Knowledge of good, and evil, in this tree,  
 That whoſo eats thereof, forthwith attains  
 Wiſdom without their leave? and wherein lies 725  
 Th' offense, that man ſhould thus attain to know?  
 What can your knowledge hurt Him, or this tree  
 Impart againſt His will, if all be His?  
 Or is it envy? And can envy dwell  
 In heav'nly breasts?—Theſe, theſe, and many more  
 Cauſes, import your need of this fair fruit: 731  
 Goddeſs humane, reach then, and freely taſte!

He ended; and his words, replete with guile,  
 Into her heart too eaſy entrance won:  
 Fix'd on the fruit ſhe gaz'd, which to behold 735  
 Might tempt alone: and in her ears the ſound,  
 Yet rung of his perſuaſive words, impregn'd  
 With reaſon, (to her ſeeming) and with truth:  
 Mean-while the hour of noon drew on, and wak'd  
 An eager appetite, rais'd by the ſmell 740  
 So ſavory of that fruit; which with deſire,  
 (Inclinable now grown to touch, or taſte)

Sol-



Sollicited her longing eye: yet first  
Pausing a-while, thus to her self she mus'd.

Great are thy virtues, doubtless, best of fruits! 745  
Though kept from man, and worthy to be admir'd;  
Whose taste, too long forborn, at first assay  
Gave elocution to the mute, and taught [praise.  
The tongue not made for speech, to speak thy  
Thy praise He also, who forbids thy use, 750  
Conceals not from us, naming thee the Tree  
Of knowledge; knowledge both of good, and evil:  
Forbids us then to taste! But, His forbidding  
Commends thee more, while it infers the good  
By thee communicated, and our want: 755  
For, good un-known, sure is not had; or had,  
And yet un-known, is as not had at all.  
In plain then, what forbids He but to know,  
Forbids us good, forbids us to be wise?  
Such prohibitions bind not. — But, if Death 760  
Bind us with after-bands, what profits then  
Our in-ward freedom? In the day we eat  
Of this fair fruit, our doom is, we shall die. —  
How dies the serpent? he hath eat'n, and lives,  
And

And knows, and speaks, and reasons, and discerns;  
 Irrational 'till then. For us alone 766  
 Was death invented? or, to us deny'd  
 This intellectual food, for beasts reserv'd?  
 For beasts it seems! yet, that one beast which first  
 Hath tasted, envies not; but, brings with joy 770  
 The good befall'n him; author un-suspect,  
 Friendly to man, far from deceit, or guile.  
 What fear I then? rather, what know to fear  
 Under this ignorance of good, and evil,  
 Of GOD, or Death, of law, or penalty? 775  
 Here grows the cure of all, this fruit divine!  
 Fair to the eye, inviting to the taste,  
 Of virtue to make wise! What hinders then  
 To reach, and feed at once both body, and mind?

So saying, Her rash hand in evil hour 780  
 Forth-reaching to the fruit, she pluck'd, she eat!  
 Earth felt the wound; and Nature from her seat,  
 Sighing through all her works, gave sign of woe  
 That all was lost. Back to the thicket flunk  
 The guilty serpent: and well might: for, EVE  
 Intent now wholly on her taste, nought else 786  
 Re-



Regarded; such delight 'till then, as seem'd,  
 In fruit she never tasted, whether true,  
 Or fancy'd so, through expectation high [thought.  
 Of knowledge; nor was God-head from her  
 Greedily she ingorg'd without restraint; 791  
 And knew not eating Death! Sate at length,  
 And heighten'd as with wine, jocund, and boon,  
 Thus to her self she pleasingly began.

O sov'reign, virtuous, pretious of all trees 795  
 In Paradise! of operation blest  
 To sapience! hitherto obscur'd, in-fam'd,  
 And thy fair fruit let hang, as to no end  
 Created: but, henceforth my early care  
 (Not without song, each morning, and due praise)  
 Shall tend thee, and the fertil burden ease 801  
 Of thy full branches, offer'd free to all:  
 'Till dieted by thee, I grow mature  
 In knowledge, as the Gods, who all things know;  
 Though others envy what they cannot give: 805  
 For, had the gift been theirs, it had not here  
 Thus grown. Experience, next, to thee I owe,  
 Best guide! not following thee, I had remain'd

In

In ignorance; thou open'st wisdom's way,  
 And giv'st access, though secret she retire. 810  
 And I perhaps am secret: heav'n is high,  
 High, and remote to see from thence distinct  
 Each thing on earth; and other care, perhaps,  
 May have diverted from continual watch  
 Our Great Forbidder, safe with all His spies 815  
 About Him.—But, to ADAM in what sort  
 Shall I appear? shall I to him make known  
 As yet my change, and give him to partake  
 Full happiness with me? or rather not;  
 But keep the odds of knowledge in my pow'r 820  
 Without co-partner? so to add what wants  
 In female sex, the more to draw his love,  
 And render me more equal; and perhaps,  
 (A thing not un-desirable) sometime  
 Superior: for inferior, who is free? 825  
 This may be well—But, what if GOD have seen,  
 And Death ensue? Then I shall be no more!  
 And ADAM, wedded to another EVE,  
 Shall live with her injoying, I extinct;  
 A death to think! Confirm'd then I resolve, 830  
 ADAM shall share with me in bliss, or woe:



Book IX. *PARADISE LOST.* 367

So dear I love him, that with him, all deaths  
I could indure; without him, live no life.

So saying, from the tree her step she turn'd ;  
But first low reverence done, as to the Pow'r 835  
That dwelt within; whose presence had in-fus'd  
Into the plant sciential sap, deriv'd  
From Nectar, drink of Gods. ADAM the while,  
Waiting desirous her return, had wove  
Of choicest flow'rs a garland, to adorn 840  
Her tresses, and her rural labors crown:  
As reapers oft are wont their Harvest-Queen.  
Great joy he promis'd to his thoughts, and new  
Solace in her return, so long delay'd:  
Yet oft his heart, divine of something ill, 845  
Misgave him; he the fault'ring measure felt;  
And forth to meet her went, the way she took  
That morn, when first they parted. By the tree  
Of knowledge he must pass; there he her met,  
Scarce from the tree returning: in her hand 850  
A bough of fairest fruit, that downy smil'd,  
New gather'd, and ambrosial smell diffus'd.  
To him she hasted; in her face excuse

Came prologue, and apology too prompt; 854  
Which, with bland words at will, she thus address'd.

Hast thou not wonder'd, ADAM, at my stay?  
Thee I have miss'd, and thought it long, depriv'd  
Thy presence; agony of love! 'till now  
Not felt, nor shall be twice; for, never more  
Mean I to try, (what rash un-try'd I fought) 860  
The pain of absence from thy sight. But strange  
Hath been the cause, and wonderful to hear.  
This tree is not, as we are told, a tree  
Of danger, tasted; nor to evil un-known  
Op'ning the way; but, of divine effect, 865  
To open eyes, and make them Gods who taste;  
And hath been tasted such. The serpent wise,  
(Or not restrain'd as we, or not obeying)  
Hath eaten of the fruit; and is become 869  
Not dead, as we are threaten'd; but, thenceforth  
Indu'd with human voice, and human sense,  
Reasoning to admiration! and with me  
Persuasively hath so prevail'd, that I  
Have also tasted, and have also found  
Th' effects to correspond: opener mine eyes, 875  
Dim



Dim erst; dilated spirits, ampler heart,  
 And growing up to Godhead: which for thee  
 Chiefly I fought; without thee can despise:  
 For, blifs, as thou hast part, to me is blifs;  
 Tedious, un-shar'd with thee, and odious soon.  
 Thou therefore also taste, that equal lot 881  
 May join us; equal joy, as equal love:  
 Lest thou not tasting, different degree  
 Dis-join us, and I then too late renounce  
 Deity for thee, when fate will not permit. 885

[told;

Thus EVE with count'nance blithe her story  
 But, in her cheek distemper flushing glow'd.  
 On th' other side, ADAM, soon as he heard  
 The fatal trespass done by EVE, amaz'd,  
 Astonied stood, and blank! while horror chill 890  
 Ran through his veins, and all his joints relax'd,  
 From his slack hand the garland wreath'd for EVE  
 Down-drop'd, and all the faded roses shed:  
 Speechless he stood, and pale! 'till thus at length  
 First to himself he inward silence broke. 895

O fairest of creation! last, and best  
 Of all G O D's works! Creature, in whom excell'd  
 Whatever can to fight, or thought, be form'd,  
 Holy, divine, good, amiable, or sweet!  
 How art thou lost! how on a sudden lost, 900  
 Defac'd, deflow'r'd, and now to death devote!  
 Rather, how hast thou yielded to transgress  
 The strict forbiddance! how, to violate  
 The sacred fruit forbidd'n! Some cursed fraud  
 Of enemy hath beguil'd thee, yet un-known; 905  
 And me with thee hath ruin'd: for, with thee  
 Certain my resolution is to die!  
 How can I live without thee! how forego  
 Thy sweet converse, and love, so dearly join'd,  
 To live again in these wild woods forlorn! 910  
 Should G O D create another E V E, and I  
 Another rib afford, yet loss of thee  
 Would never from my heart! no, no! I feel  
 The link of nature draw me: flesh of flesh,  
 Bone of my bone thou art, and from thy state 915  
 Mine never shall be parted, bliss or woe!



So having said, as one from sad dismay  
 Re-comforted, and, after thoughts disturb'd,  
 Submitting to what seem'd remediless, 919  
 Thus in calm mood his words to EVE he turn'd.

Bold deed thou hast presum'd, advent'rous EVE!  
 And peril great provok'd, who thus hast dar'd,  
 Had it been only coveting to eye  
 That sacred fruit : sacred to abstinence;  
 Much more to taste it, under bann to touch. 925  
 But, past who can re-call, or done un-do?  
 Not GOD Omnipotent, nor fate! Yet so  
 Perhaps thou shalt not die, perhaps the fact  
 Is not so heinous now, fore-tasted fruit,  
 Profan'd first by the serpent, by him first 930  
 Made common, and un-hallow'd, e'er our taste :  
 Nor yet on him found deadly; he yet lives;  
 Lives, as thou said'st; and gains to live, as man,  
 Higher degree of life: inducement strong  
 To us, as likely tasting to attain 935  
 Proportional ascent; which cannot be  
 But to be Gods, or Angels, Demi-gods.

Nor can I think that GOD, Creator wise!  
 Though threatning, will in earnest so destroy  
 Us, His prime creatures; dignify'd so high, 940  
 Set over all His works; which in our fall,  
 For us created, needs with us must fail,  
 Dependent made: so GOD shall un-create,  
 Be frustrate, do, un-do, and labor lose;  
 Not well conceiv'd of GOD: Who (tho' His pow'r  
 Creation could repeat) yet would be loth 946  
 Us to abolish; lest the adversary  
 Triumph, and say; "Fickle their state whom GOD  
 "Most favors! who can please Him long? Me first  
 "He ruin'd; now mankind: whom will He next?"  
 Matter of scorn, not to be giv'n the foe. 951  
 However I with thee have fix'd my lot,  
 Certain to undergo like doom: if death  
 Confort with thee, death is to me as life:  
 So forcible within my heart, I feel 955  
 The bond of nature draw me to my own;  
 My own in thee! for, what thou art is mine:  
 Our state cannot be sever'd, we are one,  
 One flesh; to lose thee were to lose my self.



Book IX. *P A R A D I S E L O S T.* 373

So ADAM ; and thus EVE to him reply'd. 960  
O glorious tryal of exceeding love,  
Illustrious evidence, example high,  
Engaging me to emulate ! but, short  
Of thy perfection, how shall I attain,  
ADAM ? from whose dear side I boast me sprung ;  
And gladly of our union hear thee speak, 966  
One heart, one soul in both ! whereof good proof  
This day affords ; declaring thee resolv'd,  
Rather than death, or ought than death more dread,  
Shall separate us (link'd in love so dear !) 970  
To undergo with me one guilt, one crime,  
(If any be) of tasting this fair fruit :  
Whose virtue (for of good still good proceeds,  
Direct, or by occasion) hath presented  
This happy tryal of thy love ; which else 975  
So eminently never had been known.  
Were it I thought death menac'd would ensue  
This my attempt, I would sustain alone  
The worst, and not persuade thee ; rather die  
Deserted, than oblige thee with a fact 980  
Pernicious to thy peace ; chiefly, assur'd  
Remarkably so late of thy so true,

So faithful love un-equal'd. But, I feel  
 Far otherwise th' event, not death, but life  
 Augmented ; open'd eyes, new hopes, new joys.  
 Taste so divine ! that what of sweet before 986  
 Hath touch'd my sense, flat seems to this, and harsh.  
 On my experience, A D A M ! freely taste,  
 And fear of death deliver to the winds.

So saying, she embrac'd him, and for joy 990  
 Tenderly wept ; much won, that he his love  
 Had so en-nobled, as of choice t' incur  
 Divine displeasure for her sake, or death.  
 In recompense (for such compliance bad  
 Such recompense best merits) from the bough 995  
 She gave him of that fair-inticing fruit,  
 With liberal hand : he scrupled not to eat,  
 Against his better knowledge ; not deceiv'd,  
 But fondly overcome with female charm.  
 Earth trembled from her entrails, as again 1000  
 In pangs ; and nature gave a second groan :  
 Sky lowr'd, and mutt'ring thunder, some sad drops  
 Wept, at compleating of the mortal sin  
 Original ! while A D A M took no thought,

Eating



Eating his fill; nor EVE to iterate 1005  
 Her former trespasses fear'd; the more to sooth  
 Him with her lov'd society: that now  
 (As with new wine intoxicated both)  
 They swim in mirth, and fancy that they feel  
 Divinity within them breeding wings, 1010  
 Wherewith to scorn the earth. But, that false fruit  
 Far other operation first display'd!  
 Carnal desire in-flaming, he on EVE  
 Began to cast lascivious eyes; she him  
 As wantonly repaid; in lust they burn: 1015  
 'Till ADAM thus 'gan EVE to dalliance move.

EVE! now I see thou art exact of taste,  
 And elegant, of sapience no small part;  
 Since to each meaning favor we apply,  
 And palate call judicious: I the praise 1020  
 Yield thee, so well this day thou hast purvey'd.  
 Much pleasure we have lost, while we abstain'd  
 From this delightful fruit, nor known 'till now  
 True relish, tasting: if such pleasure be  
 In things to us forbidd'n, it might be wish'd, 1025  
 For this one tree had been forbidden ten.

But come ! so well refresh'd, now let us play,  
 As meet is, after such delicious fare :  
 For, never did thy beauty, since the day  
 I saw thee first, and wedded thee, adorn'd 1030  
 With all perfection, so in-flame my sense  
 With ardor to enjoy thee ; fairer now  
 Than ever ; bounty of this virtuous tree !

So said he, and forebore not glance, or toy  
 Of amorous intent ; well understood 1035  
 Of EVE, whose eye darted contagious fire.  
 Her hand he seiz'd ; and to a shady bank,  
 Thick over-head with verdant roof imbower'd,  
 He led her nothing loth : flow'rs were the couch,  
 Pansies, and violets, and asphodel, 1040  
 And hyacinth, earth's freshest softest lap.  
 There they their fill of love, and love's disport  
 Took largely ; of their mutual guilt the seal,  
 The solace of their sin : 'till dewy sleep  
 Oppress'd them, weary'd with their amorous play.

Soon as the force of that fallacious fruit, 1046  
 That with exhilarating vapor bland

About



About their spirits had plaid, and inmost pow'rs  
 Made err, was now exhal'd; and groffer sleep,  
 Bred of unkindly fumes, with conscious dreams  
 Incumber'd, now had left them; up they rose 1051  
 As from un-rest: and each the other viewing,  
 Soon found their eyes how open'd, and their minds  
 How darken'd! Innocence, that (as a veil)  
 Had shadow'd them from knowing ill, was gone;  
 Just confidence, and native righteoufness, 1055  
 And honor, from about them: naked left  
 To guilty shame! he cover'd; but his robe  
 Uncover'd more: so rose the DANITE strong,  
 HERCULEAN SAMPSON, from the harlot-lap  
 Of PHILISTEAN DALILAH; and wak'd 1061  
 Shorn of his strength: they, destitute, and bare  
 Of all their virtue! Silent, and in face  
 Confounded, long they sat, as stricken mute:  
 'Till ADAM, though no less than EVE abash'd, 1065  
 At length gave utterance to these words constrain'd.

O EVE! in evil hour thou didst give ear  
 To that false worm, of whomsoever taught  
 To counterfeit man's voice: true in our fall,  
False

False in our promis'd rising: since our eyes 1070  
 Open'd we find indeed, and find we know  
 Both good, and evil!—good lost, and evil got!—  
 Bad fruit of knowledge, if this be to know,  
 Which leaves us naked thus, of honor void,  
 Of innocence, of faith, of purity, 1075  
 (Our wonted ornaments,) now soil'd, and stain'd!  
 And in our faces evident the signs  
 Of foul concupiscence; whence evil store;  
 Ev'n shame, the last of evils; of the first  
 Be sure then!—How shall I behold the face 1080  
 Henceforth of GOD, or Angel, erst with joy  
 And rapture so oft beheld? those heav'nly shapes  
 Will dazzle now this earthly, with their blaze  
 Insufferably bright. O! might I here  
 In solitude live savage; in some glade 1085  
 Obscur'd, where highest woods (impenetrable  
 To star, or sun-light) spread their umbrage broad,  
 And brown as evening! Cover me, ye pines!  
 Ye cedars, with innumerable boughs  
 Hide me, where I may never see them more! —  
 But, let us now, as in bad plight, devise 1091  
 What best may for the present serve to hide



The parts of each from other, that seem most  
To shame obnoxious, and unseemliest seen. [sow'd,  
Some tree, whose broad smooth leaves together  
And girded on our loins, may cover round. 1096  
Those middle parts; that this new-comer, shame,  
There fit not, and reproach us as unclean.

So counsel'd he, and both together went  
Into the thickest wood: there soon they chose 1100  
The fig-tree: not that kind for fruit renown'd;  
But, such as at this day (to INDIANS known  
In MALABAR, or DECAN) spreads her arms  
Branching so broad, and long, that in the ground  
The bended twigs take root, and daughters grow  
About the mother-tree; a pillar'd shade 1106  
High over-arch'd, and echoing walks between:  
There oft the INDIAN herdsman shunning heat,  
Shelters in cool, and tends his pasturing herds  
At loop-holes cut thro' thickest shade. Those leaves  
They gather'd, broad as AMAZONIAN targe: 1110  
And, with what skill they had, together sow'd,  
To gird their waist: vain covering, if to hide  
Their guilt, and dreaded shame! O! how unlike  
To

To that first naked glory! (such of late 1115  
 COLUMBUS found th'AMERICAN, so girt  
 With feather'd cincture; naked else, and wild  
 Among the trees, on isles, and woody shores.)  
 Thus fenc'd, and, as they thought, their shame in part  
 Cover'd, but not at rest, or ease of mind, 1120  
 They sat them down to weep. Nor only tears  
 Rain'd at their eyes; but high winds worse within  
 Began to rise, high passions, anger, hate,  
 Mistrust, suspicion, discord, and shook sore  
 Their inward state of mind; calm region once, 1125  
 And full of peace; now tost, and turbulent!  
 For, understanding rul'd not; and the will  
 Heard not her lore! but, in subjection now  
 To sensual appetite, who from beneath  
 Usurping, over sov'reign reason claim'd 1130  
 Superior sway: from thus distemper'd breast,  
 ADAM, estrang'd in look, and alter'd style,  
 Speech intermitted thus to EVE renew'd.

[stay'd

Would thou hadst hearken'd to my words, and  
 With me, as I besought thee, when that strange 1135  
 Desire of wand'ring, this unhappy morn,



I know not whence possess'd thee! We had then  
 Remain'd still happy; not, as now, despoil'd  
 Of all our good; sham'd, naked, miserable— 1139  
 Let none henceforth seek needless cause t'approve  
 The faith they owe: when earnestly they seek  
 Such proof, conclude, they then begin to fail.

[thus EVE.]

To whom, soon mov'd with touch of blame,  
 What words have pass'd thy lips, ADAM severe!  
 Imput'st thou that to my default, or will 1145  
 Of wandering (as thou call'st it) which, who knows  
 But, might as ill have happen'd thou being by;  
 Or to thy self perhaps: hadst thou been there,  
 Or here th'attempt, thou could'st not have discern'd  
 Fraud in the serpent, speaking as he spake; 1150  
 No ground of enmity between us known,  
 Why he should mean me ill, or seek to harm.  
 Was I to have never parted from thy side?  
 As good have grown there still a lifeless rib!  
 Being as I am, why didst not thou, the head, 1155  
 Command me absolutely not to go,  
 Going into such danger, as thou said'st?  
 Too facil then, thou didst not much gain-say;  
Nay,

Nay, didst permit, approve, and fair dismiss.  
 Hadst thou been firm, and fix'd, in thy dissent, 1160  
 Neither had I transgress'd, nor thou with me.

To whom, then first incens'd, ADAM reply'd:  
 Is this the love, is this the recompense  
 Of mine to thee, ingrateful EVE! exprest  
 Immutable, when thou wert lost, not I; 1165  
 Who might have liv'd, and joy'd immortal bliss:  
 Yet willingly chose rather death with thee.  
 And am I now upbraided, as the cause  
 Of thy transgressing? — Not enough severe, 1169  
 It seems, in my restraint! — What could I more?  
 I warn'd thee, I admonish'd thee; fore-told  
 The danger, and the lurking enemy  
 That lay in wait: beyond this, had been force;  
 And force upon free-will hath here no place.  
 But, confidence then bore thee on; secure 1175  
 Either to meet no danger, or to find  
 Matter of glorious tryal. And perhaps  
 I also err'd, in over-much admiring  
 What seem'd in thee so perfect, that I thought  
 No evil durst attempt thee: but, I rue 1180  
 That



That error now, which is become my crime;  
And thou th' accuser!—Thus it shall befall  
Him, who to worth in women over-trusting,  
Lets her will rule: restraint she will not brook;  
And left to herself, if evil thence ensue, 1185  
She first his weak indulgence will accuse.——

Thus they in mutual accusation spent  
The fruitless hours; but neither self-condemning:  
And of their vain contest appear'd no end.

*The end of the ninth Book.*



THE

20 JY 62



---

THE  
TENTH BOOK  
OF  
PARADISE LOST.



---

C c

## The ARGUMENT.

*Man's transgression known, the Guardian-Angels forsake Paradise, and return up to heaven to approve their vigilance; and are approv'd, GOD declaring that the entrance of Satan could not be by them prevented. He sends His SON to judge the transgressors; who descends, and gives sentence accordingly; then in pity cloaths them both, and re-ascends. Sin and Death, sitting 'till then at the gates of hell, by wond'rous sympathy feeling the success of Satan in this new world, and the sin by man there committed, resolve to sit no longer confin'd in hell, but to follow Satan their fire up to the place of man: to make the way easier from hell to this world to and fro, they pave a broad high-way, or bridge, over Chaos, according to the track that Satan first made; then, preparing for earth, they meet him, proud of his success, returning to hell: their mutual gratulation: Satan arrives at Pandæmonium, in full assembly relates with boasting his success against man: instead of applause, is entertain'd with a general hiss by all his audience, transform'd, with himself also, suddenly into serpents, according to his doom gi'n in Paradise: then, deluded with a shew of the forbidden tree springing up before them, they greedily reaching to take of the fruit, chew dust and bitter ashes. The proceedings of Sin and Death; GOD foretels the final victory of His SON over them, and the renewing of all things; but for the present commands His Angels to make several alterations in the heavens, and elements. Adam, more and more perceiving his fall'n condition, heavily bewails: rejects the condolment of Eve; she persists, and at length appeases him: then, to evade the curse likely to fall on their off-spring, proposes to Adam violent ways, which he approves not; but conceiving better hope, puts her in mind of the late promise made them, that her seed should be reveng'd on the serpent; and exhorts her with him to seek peace of the offended Deity, by repentance and supplication.*









---



---

# PARADISE LOST.

---



---

## B O O K X.

---

**M**Ean-while the hainous and despiteful act  
 Of SATAN, done in Paradise, and how  
 He, in the serpent, had perverted EVE,  
 Her husband she, to taste the fatal fruit,  
 Was known in heav'n: for, what can 'scape the eye  
 Of GOD all-seeing, or deceive His heart      6  
 Omniscient? Who, in all things wise, and just,  
 Hinder'd not SATAN to attempt the mind  
 Of man; with strength entire, and free-will, arm'd;  
 Complete to have discover'd, and repuls'd      10  
 Whatever wiles of foe, or seeming friend. [ber'd)  
 For, still they knew, (and ought t' have still remem-

The high injunction, not to taste that fruit,  
 Whoever tempted: which they not obeying,  
 Incur'd (what could they less?) the penalty; 15  
 And, manifold in sin, deserv'd to fall.

Up into heav'n, from Paradise, in haste  
 Th' angelic guards ascended, mute, and sad,  
 For man; for, of his state by this they knew:  
 Much wond'ring how the subtil fiend had stol'n 20  
 Entrance unseen. Soon as th' unwelcome news  
 From earth arriv'd at heaven-gate, displeas'd  
 All were who heard: dim sadness did not spare  
 That time celestial visages; yet, mix'd  
 With pity, violated not their bliss. 25  
 About the new-arriv'd, in multitudes  
 Th' æthereal people ran, to hear, and know,  
 How all befel: they tow'rs the Throne Supreme,  
 Accountable, made haste, to make appear,  
 With righteous plea, their utmost vigilance; 30  
 And easily approv'd: when the Most High  
 Eternal FATHER, from His secret cloud  
 Amidst, in thunder utter'd thus His voice.



Assembled Angels, and ye Pow'rs return'd  
 From un-successful charge! be not dismay'd, 35  
 Nor troubled at these tidings from the earth,  
 Which your sincerest care could not prevent;  
 Fore-told so lately what would come to pass,  
 When first this tempter cross'd the gulf from hell.  
 I told ye then he should prevail, and speed 40  
 On his bad errand; man should be seduc'd,  
 And flatter'd out of all, believing lies  
 Against his Maker: no decree of Mine  
 Concurring to necessitate his fall;  
 Or touch with lightest moment of impulse 45  
 His free-will, to her own inclining left  
 In even scale. But, fall'n he is: and now  
 What rests, but that the mortal sentence pass  
 On his transgression, — death denounc'd that day?  
 Which he presumes already vain, and void, 50  
 Because not yet inflicted, (as he fear'd)  
 By some immediate stroke: but, soon shall find  
 Forbearance no acquittance, e'er day end.  
 Justice shall not return, as bounty, scorn'd. 54  
 But, whom send I to judge them? whom, but Thee

Vicegerent SON? To Thee I have transfer'd  
 All judgment, whether in heav'n, or earth, or hell.  
 Easy it might be seen that I intend  
 Mercy colleague with justice, sending Thee,  
 Man's friend, his Mediator, his design'd 60  
 Both Ransom, and Redeemer, voluntary;  
 And destin'd man Himself, to judge man fall'n.

So spake the FATHER, and unfolding bright  
 Tow'rd the right hand His glory, on the SON  
 Blaz'd forth un-clouded Deity: He full 65  
 Resplendent all His FATHER manifest  
 Express'd, and thus divinely answer'd mild.

FATHER eternal! Thine is to decree;  
 Mine, both in heav'n, and earth, to do Thy will  
 Supreme; that Thou in Me, Thy SON belov'd, 70  
 May'st ever rest well pleas'd. I go to judge  
 On earth these Thy transgressors; but Thou know'st,  
 Whoever judg'd, the worst on Me must light,  
 When time shall be; for, so I undertook  
 efore Thee: and, not repenting, this obtain 75  
 Of right, that I may mitigate their doom,

On



On Me deriv'd. Yet, I shall temper so  
 Justice with mercy, as may illustrate most  
 Them fully fatisfy'd, and Thee appease.  
 Attendance none shall need, nor train, where none  
 Are to behold the judgment, but the judg'd, 81  
 Those Two: the Third best absent is condemn'd;  
 Convict by flight, and rebel to all law:  
 Conviction to the serpent none belongs.

Thus saying, from His radiant seat He rose 85  
 Of high collateral glory: Him Thrones, and Pow'rs,  
 Princedoms, and Dominations ministrant,  
 Accompany'd to heaven-gate: from whence  
 EDEN, and all the coast, in prospect lay.  
 Down he descended strait: (the speed of Gods 90  
 Time counts not, tho' with swiftest minutes wing'd.)  
 Now was the sun in western cadence low  
 From noon; and gentle airs, due at their hour,  
 To fan the earth now wak'd, and usher in  
 The ev'ning cool; when He, from wrath more cool,  
 Came, the mild judge, and intercessor both, 96  
 To sentence man. The voice of God they heard,  
 Now walking in the garden, by soft winds

Brought to their ears, while day declin'd: they heard,  
 And from His presence hid themselves, among 100  
 The thickest trees, both man, and wife: 'till GOD  
 Approaching, thus to ADAM call'd aloud.

Where art thou, ADAM! wont with joy to meet  
 My coming, seen far-off? I miss thee here,  
 Not pleas'd; thus entertain'd with solitude, 105  
 Where obvious duty e'er-while appear'd un-fought:  
 Or, come I less conspicuous? Or, what change  
 Absents thee? Or, what chance detains? — Come  
 [forth!

He came; and with him EVE, more loth, tho' first  
 To offend; discountenanc'd both, and discompos'd!  
 Love was not in their looks, either to GOD, 111  
 Or to each other; but, apparent guilt,  
 And shame, and perturbation, and despair,  
 Anger, and obstinacy, and hate, and guile: 114  
 Whence ADAM, fault'ring long, thus answer'd brief.

I heard Thee in the garden, and of Thy voice  
 Afraid, being naked, hid my self. — To whom  
 The gracious Judge, without revile, reply'd.

My



My voice thou oft hast heard, and hast not fear'd,  
 But still rejoyc'd: how is it now become 120  
 So dreadful to thee? That thou art naked, who  
 Hath told thee? Hast thou eaten of the tree,  
 Whereof I gave thee charge thou should'st not eat?

To whom thus A D A M, sore beset! reply'd.  
 O heav'n! in evil streight this day I stand 125  
 Before my Judge; either to undergo  
 My self the total crime; or, to accuse  
 My other self, the partner of my life:  
 Whose failing, while her faith to me remains,  
 I should conceal, and not expose to blame 130  
 By my complaint. But, strict necessity  
 Subdues me, and calamitous constraint!  
 Lest on my head both sin, and punishment,  
 However insupportable, be all 134  
 Devolv'd. Tho' should I hold my peace, yet Thou  
 Would'st easily detect what I conceal. —  
 This woman, whom Thou mad'st to be my help,  
 And gav'st me as Thy perfect gift, so good,  
 So fit, so acceptable, so divine,  
 That from her hand I could suspect no ill; 140  
 And

And what she did, whatever in it self,  
 Her doing seem'd to justifie the deed;  
 She gave of me the tree,— and I did eat!

To whom the Sov'reign Prefence thus reply'd.  
 Was she thy GOD, that her thou didst obey, 145  
 Before His voice? Or was she made thy guide,  
 Superior, or but equal? that to her  
 Thou did'st resign thy manhood, and the place  
 Wherein GOD set thee above her, made of thee,  
 And for thee: whose perfection far excell'd 150  
 Hers, in all real dignity. Adorn'd  
 She was indeed, and lovely, to attract  
 Thy love; not thy subjection: and her gifts  
 Were such, as under government well-seem'd;  
 Unseemly to bear rule: which was thy part, 155  
 And person, had'st thou known thy self aright.

So having said, he thus to EVE in few:  
 Say, woman, what is this which thou hast done?

To whom sad EVE, with shame nigh over-whelm'd,  
 Confessing soon; yet not before her Judge 160  
 Bold,



Bold, or loquacious, thus abash'd reply'd. —  
The serpent me beguil'd, and I did eat!

Which when the Lord God heard, without delay  
To judgment He proceeded on th'accus'd  
Serpent, though brute; un-able to transfer 165  
The guilt on him, who made him instrument  
Of mischief, and polluted from the end  
Of his creation; justly then accurs'd,  
As vitiated in nature. More to know  
Concern'd not man, (since he no further knew) 170  
Nor alter'd his offense: yet GOD at last  
To SATAN, (first in sin,) his doom apply'd,  
Though in mysterious terms; judg'd as then best:  
And on the Serpent thus his curse let fall.

Because thou hast done this, thou art accurs'd 175  
Above all cattle, each beast of the field:  
Upon thy belly groveling thou shalt go;  
And dust shalt eat, all the days of thy life:  
Between thee, and the woman, I will put  
Enmity; and between thine, and her seed: 180  
Her seed shall bruise thy head, thou bruise his heel.  
So

So spake this oracle, then verify'd  
 When JESUS, Son of MARY (second EVE)  
 Saw SATAN fall, like lightning, down from heav'n,  
 Prince of the air: then, rising from his grave, 185  
 Spoil'd Principalities, and Pow'rs, triumph'd  
 In open shew; and, with ascension bright,  
 Captivity led captive through the air,  
 The realm it self of SATAN, long usurp'd;  
 Whom He shall tread at last under our feet: 190  
 Ev'n HE, who now foretold his fatal bruise;  
 And to the woman thus His sentence turn'd.

Thy sorrow I will greatly multiply  
 By thy conception; children thou shalt bring  
 In sorrow forth; and, to thy husband's will 195  
 Thine shall submit; he over thee shall rule.

On ADAM last thus judgment he pronounc'd:  
 Because thou hast hearken'd to the voice of thy  
 And eaten of the tree, concerning which [wife,  
 I charg'd thee, saying, thou shalt not eat thereof:  
 Curs'd is the ground for thy sake: thou in sorrow  
 Shalt eat thereof, all the days of thy life:

Thorns



Thorns also, and thistles, it shall bring thee forth  
 Un-bid ; and thou shalt eat th' herb of the field.  
 In the sweat of thy face shalt thou eat bread, 205  
 'Till thou return unto the ground ; for thou  
 Out of the ground wast taken, (know thy birth)  
 For dust thou art, and shalt to dust return.

So judg'd He man, both Judge, and Savior sent ;  
 And th' instant stroke of death, denounc'd that day,  
 Remov'd far off: then, pitying how they stood 211  
 Before Him naked to the air, (that now  
 Must suffer change) disdain'd not to begin  
 Thenceforth the form of servant to assume :  
 As when He wash'd His servants' feet ; so now,  
 As father of His family, He clad 216  
 Their nakedness with skins of beasts ; or slain,  
 Or (as the snake) with youthful coat re-paid :  
 And thought not much to cloath His enemies.  
 Nor He their outward only, with the skins 220  
 Of beasts ; but inward nakedness (much more  
 Opprobrious!) with His robe of righteousness  
 Arraying, cover'd from His FATHER's sight.  
 To Him with swift ascent He up return'd,  
 (Into

(Into His blifsful boſom re-aſſum'd  
 In glory, as of old) to Him appeas'd, 225  
 All (tho' all-knowing) what had paſt with man  
 Recounted, mixing interceſſion ſweet.

Mean-while, e'er thus was fin'd, and judg'd, on [earth,  
 Within the gates of hell ſat *SIN*, and *DEATH*, 230  
 In counter-view within the gates, that now  
 Stood open wide, belching outrageous flame  
 Far into Chaos, ſince the fiend paſs'd through,  
*SIN* op'ning: who thus now to *DEATH* began.

O ſon! why ſit we here, each other viewing 235  
 Idly, while *SATAN*, our great author, thrives  
 In other worlds, and happier feat provides  
 For us, his off-ſpring dear? It cannot be  
 But that ſucceſs attends him: if miſ-hap,  
 E'er this he had return'd, with fury driv'n 240  
 By his avengers; ſince no place like this  
 Can fit his puniſhment, or their revenge.  
 Methinks I feel new ſtrength within me riſe,  
 Wings growing, and dominion giv'n me large,  
 Beyond this Deep: whatever draws me on,

Or



Or sympathy, or some connat'ral force,  
 Pow'rful at greatest distance to unite,  
 With secret amity, things of like kind,  
 By secretest conveyance. Thou, my shade  
 Inseparable, must with me along; 250  
 For, DEATH from SIN no pow'r can separate.  
 But, lest the difficulty of passing back  
 Stay his return, perhaps, over this gulf  
 Impassable, impervious; let us try  
 (Advent'rous work! yet to thy pow'r, and mine,  
 Not un-agreeable) to found a path 256  
 Over this Main, from hell to that new world,  
 Where SATAN now prevails; a monument  
 Of merit high, to all th' infernal host;  
 Easing their passage hence, for intercourse, 260  
 Of transmigration, as their lot shall lead.  
 Nor can I miss the way, so strongly drawn  
 By this new-felt attraction, and instinct.

Whom thus the meagre shadow answer'd soon.  
 Go, whither fate, and inclination strong 265  
 Leads thee; I shall not lag behind, nor err  
 The way, thou leading: such a scent I draw  
 Of

Of carnage, prey innumerable! and taste  
 The favor of death from all things there that live.  
 Nor shall I to the work thou enterprisest 270  
 Be wanting, but afford thee equal aid.

So saying, with delight he snuff'd the smell  
 Of mortal change on earth. As when a flock  
 Of ravenous fowl, though many a league remote,  
 Against the day of battel, to a field 275  
 Where armies lie incamp'd come flying, lur'd  
 With scent of living carcases, design'd  
 For death the following day, in bloody fight:  
 So scented the grim Feature, and up-turn'd  
 His nostrils wide into the murky air; 280  
 Sagacious of his quarry from so far.  
 Then, both from out hell-gates, into the waste  
 Wide anarchy of Chaos, damp, and dark, [great!]  
 Flew diverse; and with pow'r (their pow'r was  
 Hovering upon the waters, what they met 285  
 Solid, or slimy, (as in raging sea  
 Toft up and down) together crowded drove,  
 From each side shoaling tow'rd the mouth of hell:  
 As when two polar winds, blowing adverse  
 Upon



Book X. *PARADISE LOST.* 401

Upon the CRONIAN sea, together drive 290  
Mountains of ice, that stop th' imagin'd way  
Beyond PETZORA eastward to the rich  
CATHAIAN coast. The aggregated foil  
DEATH with his mace petrific, cold, and dry,  
(As with a trident) smote; and fix'd as firm 295  
As DELOS, floating once: the rest, his look  
Bound with GORGONIAN rigor, not to move:  
And with ASPHALTIC slime, (broad as the gate,  
Deep to the roots of hell) the gather'd beach  
They fasten'd; and the mole immense wrought-on,  
Over the foaming Deep high-arch'd; a bridge, 301  
Of length prodigious, joining to the wall  
Immovable of this now-fenceless world,  
Forfeit to DEATH. From hence, a passage broad,  
Smooth, easy, in-offensive, down to hell. 305  
So (if great things to small may be compar'd)  
XERXES, the liberty of GREECE to yoke,  
From SUSA (his MEMNONIAN palace high)  
Came to the sea; and, over HELLESPONT  
Bridging his way, EUROPE with ASIA join'd; 310  
And scourg'd with many a stroke th' indignant waves.  
Now had they brought the work, by wond'rous art

D d

Pon-

Pontifical (a ridge of pendent rock  
 Over the vex'd abyfs, following the track  
 Of SATAN, to the self-same place where he 315  
 First lighted from his wing, and landed safe  
 From out of CHAOS,) to the out-side bare  
 Of this round world: with pins of adamant,  
 And chains, they made all fast; too fast they made,  
 And durable! And now, in little space, 320  
 The confines met of empyrean heav'n,  
 And of this world: and, on the left hand, hell,  
 With long reach interpos'd: three sev'ral ways  
 In sight, to each of these three places led.  
 And now, their way to earth they had descry'd,  
 To Paradise first tending; when, behold! 326  
 SATAN, in likeness of an Angel bright,  
 Betwixt the Centaur, and the Scorpion, steering  
 His zenith, while the sun in Aries rose:  
 Disguis'd he came; but, those his children dear 330  
 Their parent soon discern'd, though in disguise.  
 He, after EVE seduc'd, un-minded, slunk  
 Into the wood fast by; and, changing shape,  
 T'observe the sequel, saw his guileful act  
 By EVE (though all un-weeting) seconded 335  
 Upon



Book X. *P A R A D I S E L O S T.* 403

Upon her husband ; saw their shame, that sought  
Vain covertures: but, when he saw descend  
The SON of GOD to judge them, terrify'd  
He fled; not hoping to escape, but shun  
The present; fearing, guilty, what his wrath 340  
Might suddenly inflict: that pass'd, return'd  
By night, and listening where the hapless Pair  
Sat in their sad discourse, and various plaint,  
Thence gather'd his own doom: which understood  
Not instant, but of future time, with joy 345  
And tidings fraught, to hell he now return'd:  
And at the brink of CHAOS, near the foot  
Of this new wond'rous pontifice, un-hop'd  
Met, who to meet him came, his off-spring dear.  
Great joy was at their meeting, and at sight 350  
Of that stupendous bridge, his joy increas'd.  
Long he admiring stood, 'till SIN, his fair  
Inchanting daughter, thus the silence broke.

O parent! these are thy magnific deeds;  
Thy trophies! which thou view'st as not thine own;  
Thou art their author, and prime architect. 356  
For, I no sooner in my heart divin'd  
(My heart, which by a secret harmony

Still moves with thine, join'd in connexion sweet!)  
 That thou on earth hadst prosper'd, which thy looks  
 Now also evidence, but strait I felt 361  
 (Though distant from thee worlds between, yet felt)  
 That I must after thee, with this thy son:  
 Such fatal consequence unites us three!  
 Hell could no longer hold us in her bounds; 365  
 Nor this un-voyageable gulf obscure  
 Detain, from following thy illustrious track.  
 Thou hast atchiev'd our liberty, confin'd  
 Within hell-gates 'till now: Thou us impower'd  
 To fortify thus far, and over-lay, 370  
 With this portentous bridge, the dark abyfs.  
 Thine now is all this world; thy virtue hath won  
 What thy hands builded not: thy wisdom gain'd,  
 With odds, what war hath lost: and fully aveng'd  
 Our foil in heav'n: here thou shalt monarch reign;  
 There didst not: there let Him still victor sway,  
 As battel hath adjudg'd; from this new world  
 Retiring, by His own doom alienated:  
 And henceforth monarchy with thee divide  
 Of all things, parted by th' empyreal bounds, 380  
 His quadrature, from thy orbicular world;  
 Or try thee, now more dang'rous to His throne.



Whom thus the Prince of darkneſs answer'd glad,  
 Fair Daughter, and thou Son and Grand-child both!  
 High proof ye now have giv'n to be the race 385  
 Of SATAN (for I glory in the name,  
 Antagoniſt of heav'n's Almighty King)  
 Amply have merited of me, of all  
 Th'infernal empire, that, ſo near heav'n's door,  
 Triumphal with triumphal act have met, 390  
 Mine, with this glorious work ; and made one realm  
 Hell, and this world (our realm) one continent  
 Of eaſy thorough-fare. Therefore, while I  
 Deſcend through darkneſs, on your road with eaſe,  
 To my aſſociate Pow'rs, them to acquaint 395  
 With theſe ſucceſſes, and with them rejoice;  
 You two this way, among theſe numerous orbs  
 (All yours!) right down to Paradife deſcend:  
 There dwell, and reign in bliſs; thence on the earth  
 Dominion exerciſe, and in the air, 400  
 Chiefly on Man, ſole lord of all declar'd:  
 Him firſt make ſure your thrall, and laſtly kill.  
 My ſubſtitutes I ſend ye, and create  
 Plenipotent on earth, of matchleſs might  
 Iſſuing from me: on your joint vigor now 405

My hold of this new kingdom all depends;  
 Through sin to death expos'd, by my exploit.  
 If your joint pow'r prevail, th' affairs of hell  
 No detriment need fear; go, and be strong!

So saying, he dismiss'd them: they with speed 410  
 Their course through thickest constellations held,  
 Spreading their bane: the blasted stars look'd wan;  
 And planets, planet-struck, real eclipse  
 Then suffer'd. Th' other way, SATAN went down  
 The causeway to hell-gate: on either side, 415  
 Disparted CHAOS over-built exclaim'd,  
 And with rebounding furge the bars assail'd,  
 That scorn'd his indignation. Through the gate,  
 Wide open, and un-guarded, SATAN pass'd;  
 And all about found desolate: for those 420  
 Appointed to sit there, had left their charge,  
 Flown to the upper world: the rest were all  
 Far to th'in-land retir'd, about the walls  
 Of PANDÆMONIUM; city, and proud seat  
 Of LUCIFER (so by allusion call'd, 425  
 Of that bright star to SATAN paragon'd)  
 There kept their watch the legions, while the Grand  
 In



In council sat, solicitous what chance  
 Might intercept their Emperor sent: so he  
 Departing gave command, and they observ'd. 430  
 As when the TARTAR from his RUSSIAN foe,  
 By ASTRACAN, over the snowy plains,  
 Retires: or BACTRIAN Sophy from the horns  
 Of TURKISH Crescent, leaves all waste beyond  
 The realm of ALADULE, in his retreat 435  
 To TAURIS, or CASBIN: so these (the late  
 Heav'n-banish'd host) left desert utmost hell  
 Many a dark league, reduc'd in careful watch  
 Round their metropolis; and now expecting  
 Each hour their great adventurer, from the search  
 Of foreign worlds. He through the midst un-  
 In shew plebeian Angel militant mark'd,  
 Of lowest order, pass'd; and from the door  
 Of that PLUTONIAN hall, invisible  
 Ascended his high throne: which, under state 445  
 Of richest texture spread, at th' upper end  
 Was plac'd, in regal lustre. Down a-while  
 He sat, and round about him saw, un-seen.  
 At last, as from a cloud, his fulgent head,  
 And shape star-bright, appear'd, (or brighter; clad

With what permissive glory since his fall 451  
 Was left him, or false glitter.) All amaz'd  
 At that so sudden blaze, the STYGIAN throng  
 Bent their aspect; and, whom they wish'd, beheld,  
 Their mighty Chief return'd: loud wasth' acclaim!  
 Forth rush'd in haste the great consulting Peers, 456  
 Rais'd from their dark Divan, and with like joy  
 Congratulant approach'd him; who with hand  
 Silence, and with these words, attention won.

[Pow'rs!  
 Virtues]

Thrones, Dominations, Princedoms, 460  
 For, in possession such, not only of right  
 I call ye, and declare ye now; return'd  
 Successful beyond hope, to lead ye forth  
 Triumphant out of this infernal pit  
 Abominable, accurs'd, the house of woe, 465  
 And dungeon of our tyrant! Now possess,  
 As lords, a spacious world; t' our native heav'n  
 Little inferior, by my adventure hard  
 With peril great atchiev'd. Long were to tell  
 What I have done; what suffer'd; with what pain  
 Voyag'd th' un-real, vast, un-bounded Deep 471  
 Of horrible confusion! Over which,

By



Book X. *PARADISE LOST.* 409

By SIN, and DEATH, a broad way now is pav'd,  
To expedite your glorious march: but, I  
Toil'd out my uncouth passage, forc'd to ride 475  
Th' untractable abyfs, plung'd in the womb  
Of un-original NIGHT, and CHAOS wild:  
That, jealous of their secrets, fiercely oppos'd  
My journey strange, with clamorous uproar  
Protesting fate supreme: thence, how I found 480  
The new-created world, which fame in heav'n  
Long had fore-told: a fabric wonderful!  
Of absolute perfection! therein Man,  
Plac'd in a Paradise, by our exile  
Made happy. Him by fraud I have seduc'd 485  
From his Creator; and, (the more t'increase  
Your wonder) with an apple. He thereat  
Offended, (worth your laughter!) hath giv'n up  
Both His beloved Man, and all His world,  
To SIN, and DEATH, a prey; and so, to Us; 490  
Without our hazard, labor, or alarm;  
To range in, and to dwell, and over man  
To rule, as over all he should have rul'd.  
True is, me also He hath judg'd (or rather  
Me not, but the brute serpent, in whose shape 495  
Man

Man I deceiv'd) That which to me belongs,  
 Is enmity, which He will put between  
 Me, and mankind; I am to bruise his heel;  
 His seed, (when is not set,) shall bruise my head.  
 A world who would not purchase with a bruise, 500  
 Or much more grievous pain? Ye have th'account  
 Of my performance: What remains, ye Gods!  
 But up, and enter now into full blifs? —

So having said, a-while he stood, expecting  
 Their universal shout, and high applause, 505  
 To fill his ear: when, contrary, he hears  
 On all sides, from innumerable tongues,  
 A dismal universal hiss, the sound  
 Of public scorn! He wonder'd, but not long  
 Had leisure, wond'ring at himself now more: 510  
 His visage drawn he felt to sharp, and spare;  
 His arms clung to his ribs; his legs intertwining  
 Each other, 'till supplanted down he fell;  
 A monstrous serpent on his belly prone,  
 Reluctant; but in vain! a greater pow'r 515  
 Now rul'd him, punish'd in the shape he sin'd,  
 According to his doom. He would have spoke;  
 But



But, hiss for hiss return'd, with forked tongue,  
 To forked tongue: for, now were all transform'd  
 Alike, to serpents all, as accessories 520  
 To his bold Riot: dreadful was the din  
 Of hissing through the hall! thick swarming now  
 With complicated monsters, head, and tail;  
 Scorpion, and asp, and amphisbæna dire,  
 Ceraustes horn'd, hydrus, and elops drear, 525  
 And dipsas. (Not so thick swarm'd once the soil  
 Bedrop'd with blood of GORGON: or, the isle  
 OPHIUSA) But, still greatest he the midst,  
 Now dragon grown; larger than whom the sun  
 Ingender'd in the PYTHIAN vale on slime, 530  
 Huge PYTHON! and his pow'r no less he seem'd  
 Above the rest still to retain. They all  
 Him follow'd, issuing forth to th' open field;  
 Where all yet left of that revolted rout,  
 Heav'n-fall'n, in station stood, or just array; 535  
 Sublime with expectation, when to see  
 In triumph issuing forth their glorious Chief.  
 They saw, but other sight instead! a crowd  
 Of ugly serpents: horror on them fell,  
 And horrid sympathy: for, what they saw, 540  
 They

They felt themselves, now changing: down their  
arms,

Down fell both spear, and shield; down they as fast:  
And the dire hiss renew'd, and the dire form  
Catch'd, by contagion; like in punishment, 544  
As in their crime. Thus was th'applause they meant,  
Turn'd to exploding hiss, triumph to shame, [stood  
Cast on themselves from their own mouths. There  
A grove hard by, sprung up with this their change,  
(His will, Who reigns above!) to aggravate  
Their patience, laden with fruit, like that 550  
Which grew in Paradise, the bait of EVE  
Us'd by the tempter: on that prospect strange  
Their earnest eyes they fix'd; imagining,  
For one forbidden tree, a multitude  
Now ris'n, to work them further woe, or shame: 555  
Yet, parch'd with scalding thirst, and hunger fierce  
Though to delude them sent, could not abstain:  
But, on they roll'd in heaps, and up the trees  
Climbing, fat thicker than the snaky locks  
That curl'd MEGÆRA: greedily they pluck'd 560  
The fruitage, fair to sight (like that which grew  
Near that bituminous lake where SODOM flam'd:  
This,



This, more delusive, not the touch, but taste  
 Deceiv'd) they fondly thinking to allay  
 Their appetite with gust, instead of fruit 565  
 Chew'd bitter ashes, which th'offended taste  
 With spattering noise rejected: oft they assay'd,  
 Hunger and thirst constraining: drug'd as oft  
 With hatefullest disrelish, writh'd their jaws,  
 With foot, and cinders fill'd: so, oft they fell 570  
 Into the same illusion; not as man, [plagu'd  
 Whom they triumph'd, once laps'd. Thus were they  
 And worn with famine, long, and ceaseless hiss,  
 'Till their lost shape, permitted, they resum'd:  
 Yearly injoin'd, some say, to undergo 575  
 This annual humbling certain number'd days,  
 To dash their pride, and joy, for man seduc'd.  
 However, some tradition they dispers'd  
 Among the heathen, of their purchase got,  
 And fabled how the serpent, whom they call'd 580  
 OPHION, with EURYNOME (the wide-  
 Encroaching EVE perhaps) had first the rule  
 Of high OLYMPUS; thence by SATURN driv'n,  
 And OPS, e'er yet DICTÆAN JOVE was born.  
 Mean-

Mean-while, in Paradise the hellish pair 585  
 Too soon arriv'd; SIN, there in pow'r before,  
 Once actual; now in body, and to dwell  
 Habitual habitant; behind her DEATH,  
 Close following pace for pace, not mounted yet  
 On his pale horse: to whom SIN thus began. 590

Second of SATAN sprung, all-conqu'ring DEATH!  
 What think'st thou of our empire now? Tho' earn'd  
 With travel difficult, not better far,  
 Than still at hell's dark threshold t'have sat watch,  
 Un-nam'd, un-dreaded, and thy self half starv'd? 595

Whom thus the sin-born monster answer'd soon:  
 To me, who with eternal famine pine,  
 Alike is hell, or paradise, or heav'n;  
 There best, where most with ravin I may meet:  
 Which here, tho' plenteous, all too little seems 600  
 To stuff this maw, this vast un-hide-bound corps.

To whom th'incestuous mother thus reply'd:  
 Thou therefore on these herbs, and fruits, and flow'rs  
 Feed



Book X. *PARADISE LOST.* 415

Feed first; on each beast next, and fish, and fowl;  
No homely morsels! and, whatever thing 605  
The scythe of TIME mowes down, devour unspar'd:  
'Till I in man residing, through the race,  
His thoughts, his looks, words, actions, all infect;  
And season him thy last, and sweetest prey.

This said, they both betook them several ways,  
Both to destroy, or un-immortal make 611  
All kinds; and for destruction to mature,  
Sooner or later: which th'Almighty seeing,  
From His transcendent seat the Saints among,  
To those bright Orders utter'd thus His voice. 615

See! with what heat these dogs of hell advance,  
To waste, and havock yonder world; which I  
So fair, and good created: and had still  
Kept in that state, had not the folly of man  
Let in these wasteful furies; who impute 620  
Folly to me: so doth the Prince of hell,  
And his adherents, that with so much ease  
I suffer them to enter, and possess,  
A place so heav'nly; and conniving, seem

To

To gratify my scornful enemies ; 625  
 That laugh, as if (transported with some fit  
 Of passion) I to them had quitted all,  
 At random yielded up to their mis-rule:  
 And know not that I call'd, and drew them thither,  
 My hell-hounds, to lick up the draff, and filth, 630  
 Which man's polluting sin with taint had shed [burst,  
 On what was pure: 'till cram'd, and gorg'd, nigh  
 With suck'd, and glutted offal, at one fling  
 Of Thy victorious arm, well-pleasing SON! 634  
 Both SIN, and DEATH, and yawning GRAVE, at last,  
 Through Chaos hurl'd, obstruct the mouth of hell  
 For ever, and seal up his ravenous jaws.  
 Then, heav'n, and earth renew'd, shall be made pure  
 To sanctity, that shall receive no stain:  
 'Till then, the curse pronounc'd on both precedes

He ended, and the heav'nly audience loud 641  
 Sung hallelujah, as the sound of seas,  
 Through multitude that sung! "Just are Thy ways,  
 "Righteous are Thy decrees on all Thy works;  
 "Who can extenuate Thee? Next, to the SON, 645  
 "Destin'd restorer of mankind, by whom



“New heav’n, and earth, shall to the ages rise; [song,  
 “Or down from heav’n descend.” Such was their  
 While the Creator calling forth by name  
 His mighty Angels, gave them several charge, 650  
 As sorted best with present things. The sun  
 Had first his precept so to move, so shine,  
 As might affect the earth with cold, and heat,  
 Scarce tollerable: and from the north to call  
 Decrepit winter: from the south to bring 655  
 Solstitial summer’s heat. To the blanc moon  
 Her office they prescrib’d: to th’other Five,  
 Their planetary motions, and aspects,  
 In Sextil, Square, and Trine, and Opposite,  
 Of noxious efficacy; and when to join 660  
 In synod un-benign: and taught the Fix’d  
 Their influence malignant when to show’r;  
 Which of them, rising with the sun, or falling,  
 Should prove tempestuous. To the winds they set  
 Their corners; when with bluster to confound 665  
 Sea, air, and shore: the thunder, when to roll  
 With terror through the dark aëreal hall.  
 Some say, He bid His Angels turn ascanse  
 The poles of earth, twice ten degrees, and more,

E e

From

From the sun's axle ; they with labor push'd 670  
 Oblique the centric globe : some say, the sun  
 Was bid turn reins from th' æquinoctial road  
 Like distant breadth to Taurus, with the sev'n  
 ATLANTIC sisters, and the SPARTAN twins,  
 Up to the Tropic Crab ; thence, down amain 675  
 By Leo, and the Virgin, and the Scales,  
 As deep as Capricorn ; to bring-in change  
 Of seasons to each clime : else had the spring  
 Perpetual smil'd on earth, with vernant flow'rs,  
 Equal in days, and nights, except to those 680  
 Beyond the polar circles : to them day  
 Had un-benighted shon, while the low sun  
 To recompense his distance, in their sight  
 Had rounded still th' horizon, and not known  
 Or east, or west ; which had forbid the snow 685  
 From cold ESTOTILAND ; and south as far  
 Beneath MAGELLAN. At that tasted fruit,  
 The sun, as from THYESTEAN banquet, turn'd  
 His course intended : else, how had the world  
 Inhabited, though sinless, more than now 690  
 Avoided pinching cold, and scorching heat ?  
 These changes in the heav'ns (tho' flow) produc'd  
 Like



Like change on sea, and land ; fideral blast,  
 Vapor, and mist, and exhalation hot ;  
 Corrupt, and pestilent ! Now, from the north 695  
 Of NORUMBEQUE, and the SAMOED shore,  
 Bursting their brazen dungeon, arm'd with ice,  
 And snow, and hail, and stormy gust, and flaw,  
 Boreas, and Cæcias, and Argestes loud, 699  
 And Thrafcias, rend the woods, and seas up-turn :  
 With adverse blast up-turns them from the south  
 Notus, and Afer, black with thund'rous clouds  
 From SIERRA LIONA : thwart of these, as fierce,  
 Forth rush the Levant, and the Ponent winds,  
 Eurus, and Zephyr ; with their lateral noise, 705  
 Sirocco, and Libecchio. Thus began  
 Out-rage from life-less things : but, Discord first  
 (Daughter of SIN) among th'irrational  
 DEATH introduc'd, through fierce antipathy : 709  
 Beast now with beast 'gan war, and fowl with fowl,  
 And fish with fish : to graze the herb all leaving,  
 Devour'd each other : nor stood much in awe  
 Of man, but fled him ; or, with count'nance grim,  
 Glar'd on him passing. These were from without  
 The growing miseries, which ADAM saw 715

Already in part, though hid in gloomiest shade,  
 To sorrow abandon'd: but, worse felt within!  
 And, in a troubled sea of passion tost,  
 Thusto disburden fought with sad complaint.

O miserable of happy! is this the end 720  
 Of this new glorious world, and me so late  
 The glory of that glory, who now become  
 Accurs'd, of blessed? Hide me from the face  
 Of GOD, Whom to behold was then my height  
 Of happiness!—Yet well, if here would end 725  
 The misery; I deserv'd it, and would bear  
 My own deservings: but, this will not serve!  
 All that I eat, or drink, or shall beget,  
 Is propagated curse. O voice! once heard  
 Delightfully, *Increase, and multiply*; 730  
 Now death to hear! For, what can I increase,  
 Or multiply, but curses on my head?  
 Who of all ages to succeed, but, feeling  
 The evil on him brought by me, will curse  
 My head? ill fare our ancestor impure! 735  
 For this we may think ADAM! but, his thanks  
 Shall be the execration! So, besides

Mine



X. Book X. *PARADISE LOST.* 421

Mine own that 'bide upon me, all from me  
Shall with a fierce reflux on me redound:  
On me, as on their natural centre, light : 740  
Heavy, though in their place! O fleeting joys  
Of Paradise, dear-bought with lasting woes!  
Did I request Thee, Maker! from my clay,  
To mold me man? Did I sollicite Thee  
From darkness to promote me? Or, here place  
In this delicious garden? As my will 746  
Concur'd not to my Being, it were but right,  
And equal, to reduce me to my dust;  
Desirous to resign, and render back  
All I receiv'd; un-able to perform 750  
Thy terms too hard, by which I was to hold  
The good I fought not. To the loss of that,  
(Sufficient penalty!) why hast thou added  
The sense of endless woes? In-explicable 754  
Thy justice seems.— Yet, to say truth, too late,  
I thus contest: then should have been refus'd  
These terms, whatever, when they were propos'd.  
Thou didst accept them: wilt thou enjoy the good,  
Then cavil the conditions? And, though God  
Made thee without thy leave, what if thy son 760

Prove disobedient, and reprov'd, retort,  
 Wherefore didst thou beget me? I fought it not!  
 Would'st thou admit, for his contempt of thee,  
 That proud excuse? Yet him, not thy election,  
 But natural necessity, begot. 765

GOD made thee of choice His own, and of His  
 To serve Him; thy reward was of His grace; [own  
 Thy punishment then justly is at His Will.  
 Be it so! for I submit; His doom is fair,  
 That dust I am, and shall to dust return. 770

O welcome hour whenever! Why delays  
 His hand to execute, what His decree  
 Fix'd on this day? Why do I over-live?  
 Why am I mock'd with death, and lengthen'd out  
 To deathless pain? How gladly would I meet 775  
 Mortality my sentence, and be earth  
 Insensible! How glad would lay me down,  
 As in my mother's lap! There I should rest,  
 And sleep secure: His dreadful voice no more  
 Would thunder in my ears: no fear of worse 780  
 To me, and to my off-spring, would torment me  
 With cruel expectation! — Yet one doubt  
 Persues me still, lest All I cannot die;

Left



X. Book X. *PARADISE LOST.* 423

Lest that pure breath of life, the spirit of man,  
Which *GOD* inspir'd, cannot together perish 785  
With this corporeal clod: then, in the grave,  
Or in some other dismal place, who knows  
But I shall die a living death? O thought  
Horrid, if true! Yet why? It was but breath  
Of life that sin'd: what dies, but what had life,  
And sin? The body properly hath neither. 791  
All of me then shall die: let this appease  
The doubt, since human reach no further knows.  
For, though the *LORD* of All be infinite,  
Is His wrath also? Be it! Man is not so, 795  
But mortal doom'd. How can He exercise  
Wrath without end on man, whom death must end?  
Can He make deathless death? That were to make  
Strange contradiction, which to *GOD* Himself  
Impossible is held; as argument 800  
Of weakness, not of pow'r. Will He draw out,  
For anger's sake, finite to infinite,  
In punish'd man, to satisfy His rigor,  
Satisfy'd never? That were to extend  
His sentence beyond dust, and nature's law: 805  
By which all causes else, according still

To the reception of their matter, act;  
 Not to th' extent of their own sphere. But, say  
 That Death be not one stroke, as I suppos'd,  
 Bereaving sense: but, endless misery 810  
 From this day onward; which I feel begun  
 Both in me, and without me; and so last  
 To perpetuity—Ah me! that fear  
 Comes thund'ring back with dreadful revolution  
 On my defenseless head: both Death, and I, 815  
 Am found eternal, and incorporate both.  
 Nor I on my part single; in me all  
 Posterity stands curs'd! fair patrimony  
 That I must leave ye, sons! O, were I able  
 To waste it all my self, and leave ye none! 820  
 So dis-inherited, how would ye bless  
 Me, now your curse! Ah! why should all mankind,  
 For one man's fault, thus guiltless be condemn'd,  
 If guiltless? But, from me what can proceed,  
 But all corrupt; both mind, and will, deprav'd;  
 Not to do only, but to will the same 826  
 With me? How can they then acquitted stand  
 In sight of GOD? Him, after all disputes,  
 Forc'd I absolve: all my evasions vain,

And



And reasonings, (tho' thro' mazes) lead me still 830  
 But to my own conviction: first, and last,  
 On me, me only, (as the source, and spring  
 Of all corruption) all the blame lights due:  
 So might the wrath! Fond wish! could'st thou support  
 That burden, heavier than the earth to bear; 835  
 Than all the world much heavier; though divided  
 With that bad woman? Thus, what thou desir'st,  
 And what thou fear'st, alike destroys all hope  
 Of refuge; and concludes thee miserable,  
 Beyond all past example, and future: 840  
 To SATAN only like, both crime, and doom.  
 O conscience! into what abyfs of fears,  
 And horrors, hast thou driv'n me? Out of which  
 I find no way; from deep to deeper plung'd!

Thus ADAM to himself lamented loud, 845  
 Through the still night; not now (as e'er man fell)  
 Wholsom, and cool, and mild; but, with black air  
 Accompany'd; with damps, and dreadful gloom:  
 Which to his evil conscience represented  
 All things with double terror. On the ground 850  
 Out-stretch'd he lay; on the cold ground! and oft  
 Curs'd

Curs'd his creation; Death as oft accus'd  
 Of tardy execution, since denounc'd  
 The day of his offense. Why comes not Death,  
 (Said he) with one thrice-acceptable stroke 855  
 To end me? Shall Truth fail to keep her word?  
 Justice Divine not hasten to be just?  
 But, Death comes not at call; Justice Divine  
 Mends not her slowest pace, for pray'rs, or cries!  
 O woods, O fountains, hillocks, dales, and bow'rs!  
 With other echo late I taught your shades 861  
 To answer, and resound far other song! —  
 Whom thus afflicted when sad EVE beheld,  
 Desolate where she sat, approaching nigh,  
 Soft words to his fierce passion she assay'd: 865  
 But her with stern regard he thus repell'd.

Out of my sight, thou serpent! — That name best  
 Befits thee, with him leagu'd; thy self as false,  
 And hateful! nothing wants, but that thy shape,  
 Like his, and color serpentine, may shew 870  
 Thy inward fraud; to warn all creatures from thee  
 Henceforth; lest that too-heav'nly form, pretended  
 To hellish falshood, snare them! But for thee



I had persisted happy ; had not thy pride,  
 And wand'ring vanity, when least was safe, 875  
 Rejected my fore-warning, and disdain'd  
 Not to be trusted ; longing to be seen,  
 Though by the devil himself ; him over-weening  
 To over-reach : but, with the serpent meeting,  
 Fool'd, and beguil'd ; by him thou, I by thee 880  
 To trust thee from my side ; imagin'd wise,  
 Constant, mature, proof against all assaults :  
 And understood not all was but a shew,  
 Rather than solid virtue ; all but a rib,  
 Crooked by nature, bent (as now appears) 885  
 More to the part sinister from me drawn ;  
 Well if thrown ont, as supernumerary  
 To my just number found ! — O ! why did GOD,  
 Creator wise ! that peopl'd highest heav'n  
 With spirits masculine, create at last 890  
 This novelty on earth, this fair defect  
 Of nature ? And not fill the world at once  
 With men, as Angels, without feminine ?  
 Or find some other way to generate  
 Mankind ? This mischief had not then befall'n,  
 And more that shall befall : innumerable 896

Disturbances on earth through female snares,  
 And straight conjunction with this sex! for, either  
 He never shall find out fit mate; but such  
 As some misfortune brings him, or mistake; 900  
 Or, whom he wishes most, shall seldom gain  
 Through her perverseness; but shall see her gain'd  
 By a far worse: or, if she love, with-held  
 By parents; or, his happiest choice too late  
 Shall meet, already link'd, and wedlock-bound  
 To a fell adversary, his hate, or shame: 906  
 Which infinite calamity shall cause  
 To human life, and household peace confound! —

He added not, and from her turn'd — But, EVE,  
 Not so repuls'd, with tears that ceas'd not flowing,  
 And tresses all dis-order'd, at his feet. 911  
 Fell humble; and, embracing them, besought  
 His peace, and thus proceeded in her plaint.

For sake me not thus, ADAM! Witness heav'n  
 What love sincere, and reverence in my heart  
 I bear thee, and un-weeting have offended,  
 Unhappily deceiv'd! Thy suppliant 916



I beg, and clasp thy knees:—bereave me not  
 (Whereon I live!) thy gentle looks, thy aid,  
 Thy counsel, in this uttermost distress, 920  
 My only strength, and stay! Forlorn of thee,  
 Whither shall I betake me,—where subsist?  
 While yet we live, (scarce one short hour perhaps)  
 Between us two let there be peace! both joining  
 (As join'd in injuries) one enmity 925  
 Against a foe by doom express assign'd us,  
 That cruel serpent!—On me exercise not  
 Thy hatred, for this misery befall'n;  
 On me, already lost! Me, than thy self  
 More miserable! Both have sin'd! but, thou 930  
 Against GOD only; I, against GOD, and thee:  
 And to the place of judgment will return,  
 There with my cries importune heav'n; that all  
 The sentence, from thy head remov'd, may light  
 On me; sole cause to thee of all this woe; 935  
 Me! me! only just object of His ire!

She ended weeping; and her lowly plight  
 Immoveable, 'till peace obtain'd from fault  
 Acknowledg'd, and deplor'd, in ADAM wrought  
 Com-

Commiseration: soon his heart relented 940  
 Tow'rds her, his life so late, and sole delight,  
 Now at his feet submissive in distress!  
 Creature so fair his reconciliation seeking  
 His counsel, (whom she had displeas'd) his aid!  
 At one disarm'd, his anger all he lost; 945  
 And thus with peaceful words up-rais'd her soon.

Unwary! and too desirous (as before,  
 So now) of what thou know'st not, who desir'st  
 The punishment all on thy self! Alas!  
 Bear thine own first; ill able to sustain 950  
 His full wrath, whose thou feel'st as yet least part;  
 And my displeasure bear'st so ill. If pray'rs  
 Could alter high decrees, I to that place  
 Would speed before thee: and be louder heard,  
 That on my head all might be visited; 955  
 Thy frailty, and infirmer sex, forgiv'n;  
 To me committed, and by me expos'd.  
 But, rise! — let us no more contend, nor blame  
 Each other; blam'd enough elsewhere! but, strive  
 In offices of love, how we may light'n 960  
 Each other's burthen, in our share of woe:

Since



Since this day's death denounc'd (if ought I fee)  
Will prove no sudden, but a flow-pac'd, evil;  
A long day's dying, to augment our pain:  
And to our feed (O hapless feed!) deriv'd. 965

To whom thus EVE, recov'ring heart, reply'd.  
ADAM! by sad experiment, I know  
How little weight my words with thee can find,  
Found so erroneous; thence by just event  
Found so unfortunate: nevertheless, 970  
Restor'd by thee, (vile as I am!) to place  
Of new acceptance, hopeful to re-gain  
Thy love (the sole contentment of my heart,  
Living, or dying) from thee I will not hide  
What thoughts in my un-quiet breast are ris'n: 975  
Tending to some relief of our extremes,  
Or end; though sharp, and sad, yet tolerable  
As in our evils, and of easier choice.  
If care of our descent perplex us most,  
Which must be born to certain woe, devour'd 980  
By DEATH at last, (and miserable it is  
To be to others cause of misery,  
Our own begotten; and of our loins to bring  
Into

Into this curst world a woeful race;  
 That, after wretched life, must be at last 985  
 Food for so foul a monster!) in thy pow'r  
 It lies yet, e'er conception, to prevent  
 The race un-blest, to Being yet un-begot.  
 Childless thou art, childless remain: so DEATH  
 Shall be deceiv'd his glut; and with us two 990  
 Be forc'd to satisfy his rav'nous maw.  
 But, if thou judge it hard, and difficult,  
 Conversing, looking, loving, to abstain  
 From love's due rites, nuptial embraces sweet;  
 And with desire to languish without hope, 995  
 Before the present object languishing  
 With like desire: (which would be misery,  
 And torment, less than none of what we dread)  
 Then, (both our selves, and seed, at once to free  
 From what we fear for both) let us make short,—1000  
 Let us seek DEATH: — or, he not found, supply  
 With our own hands his office on our selves.  
 Why stand we longer shivering under fears,  
 That shew no end but death; and have the pow'r  
 Of many ways to die, the shortest chusing, 1005  
 Destruction with destruction to destroy? —

She



She ended here, or vehement despair  
 Broke off the rest: so much of death her thoughts  
 Had entertain'd, as dy'd her cheeks with pale.  
 But ADAM, with such counsel nothing sway'd, 1010  
 To better hopes his more attentive mind  
 Lab'ring had rais'd; and thus to EVE reply'd.

EVE! thy contempt of life, and pleasure, seems  
 To argue in thee something more sublime,  
 And excellent, than what thy mind contemns. 1015  
 But, self-destruction therefore sought, refutes  
 That excellence thought in thee: and implies,  
 Not thy contempt, but anguish, and regret,  
 For loss of life, and pleasure, over-lov'd.  
 Or, if thou covet death, as utmost end 1020  
 Of misery; so thinking to evade  
 The penalty pronounc'd; doubt not but GOD  
 Hath wiselier arm'd His vengeful ire, than so  
 To be forestall'd: much more I fear, lest death,  
 So snatch'd, will not exempt us from the pain 1025  
 We are by doom to pay. Rather, such acts  
 Of contumacy will provoke the Highest,  
 To make death in us live! Then, let us seek

F f

Some

Some safer resolution; which methinks  
 I have in view, calling to mind with heed 1030  
 Part of our sentence, that "*thy seed shall bruise*  
 "*The serpent's head:*" Piteous amends! unless  
 Be meant (whom I conjecture) our grand foe,  
 SATAN: who, in the serpent, hath contriv'd  
 Against us this deceit. To crush his head 1035  
 Would be revenge indeed! which will be lost  
 By death brought on our selves; or childless days  
 Resolv'd, as thou propos'st: so, our foe  
 Shall 'scape his punishment ordain'd; and we  
 Instead shall double ours upon our heads. 1040  
 No more be mention'd then of violence  
 Against our selves; and wilful barrenness,  
 That cuts us off from hope; and favors only  
 Rancor, and pride, impatience, and despite,  
 Reluctance against GOD, and His just yoke 1045  
 Laid on our necks. Remember with what mild  
 And gracious temper He both heard, and judg'd,  
 Without wrath, or reviling. We expected  
 Immediate dissolution, which we thought 1049  
 Was meant by death that day: when lo! to thee  
 Pains only in child-bearing were foretold,

And



And bringing forth; soon recompens'd with joy,  
 Fruit of thy womb. On me the curse aslope  
 Glanc'd on the ground; with labor I must earn  
 My bread: what harm? Idleness had been worse:  
 My labor will sustain me. And, lest cold, 1056  
 Or heat, should injure us, His timely care  
 Hath, un-befought, provided; and His hands  
 Cloath'd us unworthy; pitying while He judg'd.  
 How much more, if we pray Him, will His ear  
 Be open, and His heart to pity incline? 1061  
 And teach us further by what means to shun  
 Th' inclement seasons, rain, ice, hail, and snow;  
 Which now the sky, with various face, begins  
 To shew us in this mountain; while the winds 1065  
 Blow moist, and keen, shattering the graceful locks  
 Of these fair-spreading trees: which bids us seek  
 Some better shroud, some better warmth, to cherish  
 Our limbs benum'd; e'er this diurnal star  
 Leave cold the night, how we his gather'd beams  
 Reflected, may with matter sere foment; 1071  
 Or, by collision of two bodies, grind  
 The air attrite to fire; as late the clouds  
 Jostling, or push'd with winds, rude in their shock

Tine the flant light'ning ; whose thwart flame driv'n  
down, 1075

Kindles the gummy bark of fir, and pine ;  
And sends a comfortable heat from far,  
Which might supply the sun. Such fire to use,  
And what may else be remedy, or cure  
To evils, which our own mis-deeds have wrought ;  
He will instruct us praying, and of grace 1081  
Beseeching Him. So as we need not fear  
To pass commodiously this life, sustain'd  
By Him with many comforts, 'till we end  
In dust ; our final rest, and native home ! 1085

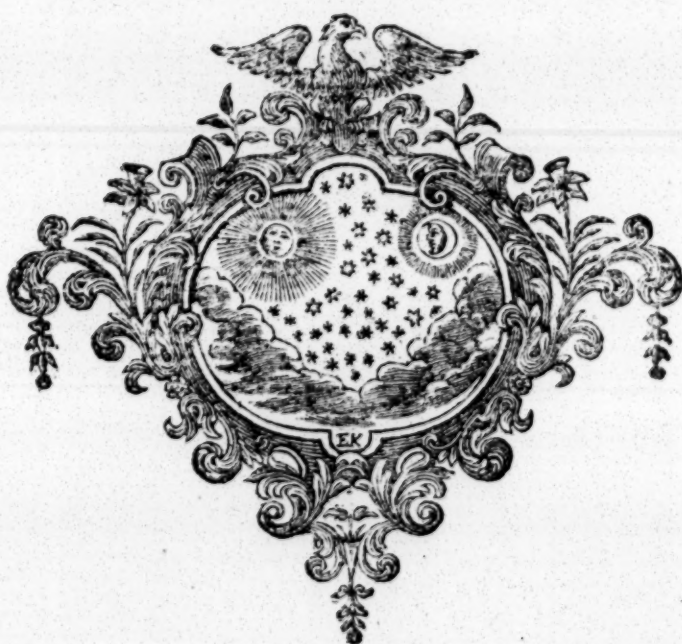
What better can we do, than to the place  
Repairing where He judg'd us, prostrate fall  
Before Him reverent ; and there confess  
Humbly our faults, and pardon beg ; with tears  
Wat'ring the ground, and with our sighs the air 1090  
Frequenting, sent from hearts contrite, in sign  
Of sorrow unfeign'd, and humiliation meek ?  
Undoubtedly He will relent, and turn  
From His displeasure : in whose look serene,  
When angry most He seem'd, and most severe, 1095  
What else, but favor, grace, and mercy, shone ?

So



So spake our father penitent: nor EVE  
Felt less remorse. They forthwith to the place  
Repairing where He judg'd them, prostrate fell  
Before Him reverent; and both confess'd 1100  
Humbly their faults; and pardon beg'd; with tears  
Wat'ring the ground; and with their sighs the air  
Frequenting, sent from hearts contrite; in sign  
Of sorrow unfeign'd, and humiliation meek.

*The end of the tenth Book.*



20 JY 63







P. Fourdrinier. Sc.



---

THE  
ELEVENTH BOOK  
OF  
PARADISE LOST.

---

F f 4

## The ARGUMENT.

*The SON of GOD presents to His FATHER the prayers of our first parents now repenting, and intercedes for them: GOD accepts them, but declares that they must no longer abide in Paradise: sends Michael with a band of Cherubim to dispossess them; but first to reveal to Adam future things: Michael's coming down. Adam shews to Eve certain ominous signs: he discerns Michael's approach; goes out to meet him: the Angel denounces their departure. Eve's Lamentation. Adam pleads, but submits: the Angel leads him up to a high hill; sets before him in vision what shall happen 'till the Flood.*





---

---

# PARADISE LOST.

---



---

## B O O K XI.

---

**T**HUS they, in lowliest plight! repentant  
 stood  
 Praying; for, from the mercy-seat above,  
 Prevenient grace descending, had remov'd  
 The stony from their hearts, and made new flesh  
 Regenerate grow instead; that sighs now breath'd  
 Un-utterable; which the spirit of pray'r                 6  
 Inspir'd, and wing'd for heav'n with speedier flight  
 Than loudest oratory. Yet, their port  
 Not of mean suitors; nor important less  
 Seem'd their petition, than when th'antient pair  
 In fables old (less antient yet than these)                 11

DEUCALION,

DEUCALION, and chaste PYRRHA, to restore  
 The race of mankind drown'd, before the shrine  
 Of THEMIS stood devout. To heav'n their pray'rs  
 Flew up, nor miss'd the way, by envious winds  
 Blown vagabond, or frustrate: in they pass'd 16  
 Dimensionless thro' heav'nly doors; then clad  
 With incense, where the golden altar fum'd,  
 By their Great Intercessor, came in fight  
 Before the FATHER's throne: them the glad SON  
 Presenting, thus to intercede began. 21

[sprung

See, FATHER! what first-fruits on earth are  
 From Thy implanted grace in man! these sighs,  
 And pray'rs, which in this golden censer, mix'd  
 With incense, I Thy Priest before Thee bring:  
 Fruits of more pleasing favor, from Thy seed 26  
 Sown with contrition in his heart, than those  
 Which (his own hand manuring) all the trees  
 Of Paradise could have produc'd, e'er fall'n  
 From innocence. Now therefore, bend Thine ear  
 To supplication; hear his sighs, though mute! 31  
 Unskilful with what words to pray, let Me  
 Interpret for him: Me, his advocate,

And



And propitiation ; all his works on Me,  
 Good, or not good, ingraft : My merit those 35  
 Shall perfect ; and for these, My death shall pay.  
 Accept Me ; and, in Me, from these receive  
 The smell of peace tow'rd mankind : let him live  
 Before Thee reconcil'd, (at least his days  
 Number'd) tho' sad ; 'till death (his doom, which I  
 To mitigate thus plead, not to reverse) 41  
 To better life shall yield him : where with Me  
 All My redeem'd may dwell, in joy, and blifs ;  
 Made one with Me, as I with Thee am One.

To Whom the FATHER, without cloud, serene.  
 All Thy request for man, accepted SON ! 46  
 Obtain ; all Thy request was My decree.  
 But, longer in that Paradise to dwell,  
 The law I gave to nature him forbids.  
 Those pure immortal elements, that know 50  
 No gross, no un-harmonious mixture foul,  
 Eject him, tainted now ; and purge him off,  
 (As a distemper) gross, to air as gross,  
 And mortal food ; as may dispose him best  
 For dissolution wrought by sin, that first 55  
 Distem-

Distemper'd all things; and of in-corrupt,  
 Corrupted. I, at first, with two fair gifts  
 Created him endow'd; with happiness,  
 And immortality: that, fondly lost;  
 This other, serv'd but to eternize woe; 60  
 'Till I provided death: so death becomes  
 His final remedy: and, (after life  
 Try'd in sharp tribulation, and refin'd  
 By faith, and faithful works;) to second life,  
 (Wak'd in the renovation of the just) 65  
 Resigns him up, with heav'n, and earth renew'd.  
 But let US call to synod all the Blest, [hide  
 Thro' heav'n's wide bounds: from them I will not  
 My judgments, how with mankind I proceed;  
 As how with peccant Angels late they saw; 70  
 And in their state, tho' firm, stood more confirm'd.

He ended, and the SON gave signal high  
 To the bright minister that watch'd: he blew  
 His trumpet (heard in OREB since, perhaps, 74  
 When GOD descended; and, perhaps, once more  
 To sound at general doom.) Th' angelic blast  
 Fill'd all the regions: from their blissful bow'rs.

Of



Of amarantin shade, fountain, or spring,  
 By the waters of life, where-e'er they sat  
 In fellowships of joy, the Sons of Light 80  
 Hasted, resorting to the summons high;  
 And took their seats: 'till from His throne supreme  
 Th' Almighty thus pronounc'd His Sov'reign Will.

O Sons! like one of Us man is become  
 To know both good, and evil, since his taste 85  
 Of that defended fruit: but, let him boast  
 His knowledge of good lost, and evil got:  
 Happier! had it suffic'd him to have known  
 Good by it self, and evil not at all.  
 He sorrows now, repents, and prays contrite; 90  
 My motions in him: longer than they move,  
 His heart I know how variable, and vain,  
 Self-left. Left therefore his now bolder hand  
 Reach also of the tree of life, and eat,  
 And live for ever, (dream at least to live 95  
 For ever) to remove him I decree,  
 And send him from the garden forth, to till  
 The ground whence he was taken; fitter soil!

MICHAEL,

MICHAEL, this My behest have thou in charge!  
 Take to thee from among the Cherubim 100  
 Thy choice of flaming warriors; lest the fiend,  
 (Or in behalf of man, or to invade  
 Vacant possession) some new trouble raise.  
 Haste thee! and from the Paradise of GOD,  
 Without remorse, drive out the sinful pair; 105  
 From hallow'd ground th' unholy: and denounce  
 To them, and to their progeny, from thence  
 Perpetual banishment. Yet, lest they faint,  
 At the sad sentence rigorously urg'd,  
 (For I behold them soften'd, and with tears 110  
 Bewailing their excess) all terror hide.  
 If patiently thy bidding they obey,  
 Dismiss them not disconsolate: reveal  
 To ADAM what shall come in future days,  
 As I shall thee enlighten: intermix 115  
 My cov'nant in the woman's seed renew'd:  
 So send them forth, tho' sorrowing, yet in peace.  
 And on the east-side of the garden place  
 (Where entrance up from EDEN easiest climbs)  
 Cherubic watch; and of a sword the flame 120  
 Wide-waving; all approach far off to fright,  
 And



And guard all passage to the tree of life:  
 Lest Paradise a receptacle prove  
 To spirits foul, and all My trees their prey; 124  
 With whose stol'n fruit man once more to delude.

He ceas'd; and th'Arch-Angelic Pow'r prepar'd  
 For swift descent; with him the cohort bright  
 Of watchful Cherubim: four faces each  
 Had, like a double JANUS; all their shape  
 Spangled with eyes, more numerous than those 130  
 Of ARGUS; and more wakeful than to drouze,  
 Charm'd with ARCADIAN pipe, the past'ral reed  
 Of HERMES, or his opiate rod. Mean-while,  
 To re-salute the world with sacred light 134  
 LEUCOTHEA wak'd; and with fresh dews imbalm'd  
 The earth; when ADAM, and first matron EVE,  
 Had ended now their orisons; and found  
 Strength added from above; new hope to spring  
 Out of despair; joy, but with fear yet link'd;  
 Which thus to EVE his welcome words renew'd.

EVE! easily may faith admit, that all 141  
 The good which we enjoy, from heav'n descends:  
 But,

But, that from us ought should ascend to heav'n,  
 So prevalent, as to concern the mind  
 Of G O D High-Blest; or, to incline His Will; 145  
 Hard to belief may seem: yet, this will pray'r,  
 Or one short sigh of human breath, up-born  
 Ev'n to the seat of G O D. For, since I fought  
 By pray'r th'offended Deity t'appease;  
 Kneel'd, and before Him humbl'd all my heart; 150  
 Methought I saw Him placable, and mild,  
 Bending His ear: persuasion in me grew  
 That I was heard with favor; peace return'd  
 Home to my breast; and to my memory 154  
 His promise, that "thy seed shall bruise our foe:"  
 Which, then not minded in dismay, yet now  
 Assures me that the bitterness of death  
 Is past, and we shall live. Whence, hail to thee!  
 E V E rightly call'd, mother of all mankind,  
 Mother of all things living, since by thee 160  
 Man is to live; and all things live for man!

To whom thus E V E, with sad demeanor meek:  
 Ill-worthy I, such title should belong  
 To me transgressor! who, for thee ordain'd



A help, became thy snare: to me reproach 165  
 Rather belongs, distrust, and all dispraise!  
 But, infinite in pardon was my Judge,  
 That I, who first brought death on all, am grac'd  
 The source of life: next favorable, thou;  
 Who highly thus t'intitle me vouchsaf't: 170  
 Far other name deserving! But, the field  
 To labor calls us, now with sweat impos'd,  
 Though after sleepless night: for see! the morn,  
 All un-concern'd with our un-rest, begins  
 Her rosy progress smiling: let us forth; 175  
 I never from thy side henceforth to stray,  
 Where-e'er our day's work lies; tho' now enjoin'd  
 Laborious, 'till day droop: while here we dwell,  
 What can be toilsom in these pleasant walks?  
 Here let us live, though in fall'n state, content! 180

So spake, so wish'd much-humbled E v e; but fate  
 Subscrib'd not: nature first gave signs, impress'd  
 On bird, beast, air; air suddenly eclips'd,  
 After short blush of morn: nigh in her sight,  
 The bird of Jove, stoop'd from his aëry tour, 185  
 Two birds of gayest plume before him drove:

G g

Down

Down from a hill the beast that reigns in woods,  
 (First hunter then) persu'd a gentle brace,  
 Goodliest of all the forest, hart, and hind;  
 Direct to th' eastern gate was bent their flight. 190  
 ADAM observ'd, and with his eye the chase  
 Persuing, not unmov'd, to EVE thus spake.

O EVE! some further change awaits us nigh,  
 Which heav'n, by these mute signs in nature, shews  
 Fore-runners of His purpose: or to warn 195  
 Us, haply too secure, of our discharge  
 From penalty, because from death releas'd  
 Some days: how long, and what 'till then our life,  
 Who knows? Or more than this, that we are dust,  
 And thither must return, and be no more? 200  
 Why else this double object in our sight,  
 Of flight persu'd in th' air, and o'er the ground,  
 One way the self-same hour? Why in the east  
 Darknesse'er day's mid-course? and morning-light  
 More orient in yon western cloud, that draws 205  
 O'er the blue firmament a radiant white;  
 And slow descends, with something heav'nly fraught?  
 He



Book XI. *PARADISE LOST.* 451

He err'd not; for by this the heav'nly bands  
Down from a sky of jasper lighted now  
In Paradise, and on a hill made halt : 210  
A glorious apparition! had not doubt,  
And carnal fear, that day dim'd ADAM's eye.  
Not that more glorious, when the Angels met  
JACOB, in MAHANAIM; where he saw  
The field pavilion'd with his guardians bright : 215  
Nor that, which on the flaming mount appear'd  
In DOTHAN; cover'd with a camp of fire,  
Against the SYRIAN King; who to surprize  
One man, assassine like, had levy'd war;  
War un-proclaim'd. The Princely Hierarch 220  
In their bright stand there left his Pow'rs, to seize  
Possession of the garden: he alone,  
To find where ADAM shelter'd, took his way;  
Not un-perceiv'd of ADAM, who to EVE,  
While the great visitant approach'd, thus spake. 225

EVE! now expect great tidings, which perhaps  
Of us will soon determine; or impose  
New laws to be observ'd: for, I descry,  
From yonder blazing cloud that veils the hill,

One of the heav'nly host; and, by his gait, 230  
 None of the meanest: some great Potentate,  
 Or of the Thrones above; such majesty  
 Invests him coming! yet not terrible,  
 That I should fear; nor sociably mild,  
 As RAPHAEL, that I should much confide; 235  
 But solemn, and sublime: whom not t'offend,  
 With reverence I must meet, and thou retire.

He ended; and th'Arch-Angel soon drew nigh;  
 Not in his shape coelestial, but as man  
 Clad to meet man: over his lucid arms 240  
 A military vest of purple flow'd;  
 Livelier than MELIBOEAN, or the grain  
 Of SARRA, worn by Kings, and Heroes old,  
 In time of truce; IRIS had dip'd the wooff;  
 His starry helm unbuckled, shew'd him prime 245  
 In manhood, where youth ended: by his side  
 (As in a glist'ring zodiac) hung the sword,  
 SATAN's dire dread; and in his hand the spear.  
 ADAM bow'd low: he, kingly, from his state  
 Inclined not, but his coming thus declar'd. 250



ADAM! heav'n's high behest no preface needs:  
 Sufficient that thy pray'rs are heard, and death,  
 (Then due by sentence when thou didst transgress)  
 Defeated of his seizure many days,  
 Giv'n thee of grace, wherein thou may'st repent,  
 And one bad act with many deeds well done 256  
 May'st cover: well may then thy Lord, pleas'd,  
 Redeem thee quite from death's rapacious claim.  
 But, longer in this Paradise to dwell  
 Permits not: to remove thee I am come, 260  
 And send thee from the garden forth, to till  
 The ground whence thou wast taken, fitter soil!

He added not; for ADAM at the news  
 Heart-struck with chilling gripe of sorrow stood,  
 That all his senses bound! EVE, who un-seen 265  
 Yet all had heard, with audible lament  
 Discover'd soon the place of her retire.

O unexpected stroke, worse than of death!  
 Must I thus leave thee, Paradise? thus leave  
 Thee, native soil! these happy walks, and shades, 270  
 Fit haunt of Gods? where I had hope to spend,

Quiet, though sad, the respite of that day  
 That must be mortal to us both! O flow'rs,  
 That never will in other climate grow;  
 My early visitation, and my last 275  
 At ev'n, which I bred up with tender hand  
 From the first op'ning bud, and gave ye names!  
 Who now shall rear ye to the fun, or rank  
 Your tribes, and water from th'ambrosial fount?  
 Thee lastly, nuptial bow'r! by me adorn'd 280  
 With what to sight, or smell, was sweet! from thee  
 How shall I part, and whither wander down  
 Into a lower world; to this obscure,  
 And wild? How shall we breathe in other air  
 Less pure, accusom'd to immortal fruits? 285

Whom thus the Angel interrupted mild:  
 Lament not, EVE! but patiently resign  
 What justly thou hast lost: nor set thy heart,  
 Thus over-fond, on that which is not thine.  
 Thy going is not lonely; with thee goes 290  
 Thy husband; him to follow thou art bound:  
 Where he abides, think there thy native soil.

ADAM,



Book XI. *PARADISE LOST.* 455

ADAM, by this from the cold sudden damp  
Recov'ring, and his scatter'd spirits return'd;  
To MICHAEL thus his humble words address'd. 295

Cœlestial! whether among the Thrones, or nam'd  
Of them the highest; for such of shape may seem  
Prince above Princes! gently hast thou told  
Thy message, which might else in telling wound,  
And, in performing, end us: what besides 300  
Of sorrow, and dejection, and despair,  
Our frailty can sustain, thy tidings bring,  
Departure from this happy place (our sweet  
Recess, and only consolation left  
Familiar to our eyes!) all places else 305  
Inhospitable appear, and desolate;  
Nor knowing us, nor known. And if by pray'r  
Incessant, I could hope to change the will  
Of Him Who all things can, I would not cease  
To weary Him with my assiduous cries. 310  
But, pray'r against His absolute decree  
No more avails, than breath against the wind;  
Blown stifling back on him that breaths it forth:  
Therefore to His great bidding I submit!

This most afflicts me, that departing hence, 315  
 As from His face I shall be hid, depriv'd  
 His blessed count'nance! Here I could frequent  
 With worship, place by place, where He vouchsaf'd  
 Presence Divine: and to my sons relate;  
 ‘ On this mount He appear’d; under this tree 320,  
 “ Stood visible; among these pines His voice  
 “ I heard; here with Him at this fountain talk’d.”  
 So many grateful altars I would rear  
 Of grassy turf; and pile up every stone  
 Of lustre, from the brook; in memory, 325  
 Or monument of ages: and thereon  
 Offer sweet-smelling gums, and fruits, and flow’rs.  
 In yonder nether world where shall I seek  
 His bright appearances, or foot-step trace?  
 For though I fled Him angry, yet recall’d 330  
 To life prolong’d, and promis’d race, I now  
 Gladly behold, though but His utmost skirts  
 Of glory; and far-off His steps adore.

To whom thus MICHAEL with regard benign.  
 ADAM! thou know’st heav’n His, and all the earth;  
 Not this rock only, His Omnipresence fills 336  
 Land,



Land, sea, and air, and every kind that lives,  
 Fomented by His virtual pow'r, and warm'd.  
 All th'earth He gave thee to possess, and rule;  
 No despicable gift! surmise not then 340  
 His presence to these narrow bounds confin'd  
 Of Paradise, or EDEN: this had been  
 Perhaps thy capital seat, from whence had spread  
 All generations; and had thither come,  
 From all the ends of th'earth to celebrate 345  
 And reverence thee, their great progenitor.  
 But, this præ-eminence thou hast lost; brought down  
 To dwell on even ground now with thy sons.  
 Yet, doubt not but in valley, and in plain,  
 GOD is, as here; and will be found alike 350  
 Present; and of His presence many a sign  
 Still following thee, still compassing thee round  
 With goodness, and paternal love, His face  
 Express, and of His steps the tract divine. 354  
 Which that thou may'st believe, and be confirm'd  
 E'er thou from hence depart; know, I am sent  
 To shew thee what shall come in future days  
 To thee, and to thy off-spring: good with bad  
 Expect to hear; supernal grace contending

With

With sinfulness of men; thereby to learn 360  
 True patience; and to temper joy, with fear,  
 And pious sorrow; equally inur'd  
 By moderation either state to bear,  
 Prosperous, or adverse: so shalt thou lead  
 Safest thy life, and best prepar'd indure 365  
 Thy mortal passage when it comes. Ascend  
 This hill; let EVE (for I have drench'd her eyes)  
 Here sleep below; while thou to foresight wak'st;  
 As once thou slept'st, whilst she to life was form'd.

To whom thus ADAM gratefully reply'd. 370  
 Ascend, I follow thee, safe guide! the path  
 Thou lead'st me; and to the hand of heav'n submit,  
 However chast'ning! to the evil, turn  
 My obvious breast; arming to overcome  
 By suffering, and earn rest from labor won; 375  
 If so I may attain!—So both ascend,  
 In the visions of GOD. It was a hill,  
 Of Paradise the highest; from whose top  
 The hemisphere of earth, in clearest ken, 379  
 Stretch'd out to th' amplest reach of prospect lay.  
 Not high'r that hill, nor wider looking round,

Where-



Whereon (for different cause) the tempter set  
 Our second ADAM, in the wilderness;  
 To shew Him all earth's kingdoms, and their glory.  
 His eye might there command wherever stood  
 City, of old or modern fame; the feat 386  
 Of mightiest empire: from the destin'd walls  
 Of CAMBALU, seat of CATHAIAN CHAM;  
 And SAMARCAND by OXUS, TEMIR's throne;  
 To PEKIN, of SINÆAN Kings: and thence 390  
 To AGRA, and LAHOR, of great MOGUL;  
 Down to the golden CHERSONESE: or where  
 The PERSIAN in ECBATAN sat; or since  
 In HISPAHAN: or, where the RUSSIAN KZAR  
 In MOSCOW; or the SULTAN in BIZANCE, 395  
 TURCHESTAN-born: nor could his eye not ken  
 Th' empire of NEGUS, to his utmost Port  
 ERCOCO; and the less maritim Kings,  
 MONBAZA, and QUILOA, and MELIND,  
 And SOFALA (thought OPHIR) to the realm 400  
 Of CONGO, and ANGOLA, farthest south:  
 Or thence, from NIGER flood to ATLAS mount,  
 The kingdoms of ALMANSOR, FEZ, and SUS,  
 MOROCCO, and ALGIERS, and TREMISEN.  
 Or

Or EUROPE thence, and where ROME was to fway  
 The world: in spirit perhaps he also saw 406  
 Rich MEXICO, the feat of MONTEZUME,  
 And CUSCO in PERU, the richer feat  
 Of ATABALIPA: and yet un-spoil'd  
 GUIANA; whose great city GERYON's sons 410  
 Call EL DORADO. But, to nobler fights,  
 MICHAEL from ADAM's eyes the film remov'd,  
 Which that false fruit that promis'd clearer sight  
 Had bred; then purg'd with euphrasy, and rue,  
 The visual nerve; for he had much to see; 415  
 And from the Well of Life three drops instill'd.  
 So deep the pow'r of these ingredients pierc'd  
 (Ev'n to the inmost seat of mental sight)  
 That ADAM, now inforc'd to close his eyes,  
 Sunk down, and all his spirits became intrans'd:  
 But, him the gentle Angel by the hand 421  
 Soon rais'd, and his attention thus recall'd.

ADAM! now ope thine eyes; and first behold  
 Th' effects, which thy original crime hath wrought  
 In some to spring from thee; who never touch'd  
 Th' excepted tree; nor with the snake conspir'd;

Nor



Book XI. *P A R A D I S E L O S T.* 461

Nor sin'd thy sin; yet from that sin derive  
Corruption, to bring forth more violent deeds.

His eyes he open'd, and beheld a field,  
Part arable, and tilth; whereon were sheaves 430  
New reap'd: the other part, sheep-walks, and  
I th' midst, an altar, as the land-mark, stood; [folds:  
Rustic, of grassy fod: thither anon  
A sweaty reaper from his tillage brought 434  
First fruits, the green ear, and the yellow sheaf;  
Uncull'd, as came to hand: a shepherd next,  
More meek, came with the firstlings of his flock,  
Choicest, and best: then sacrificing, laid  
The inwards, and their fat, with incense strew'd,  
On the cleft wood, and all due rites perform'd:  
His off'ring soon propitious fire from heav'n 441  
Consum'd, with nimble glance, and grateful steam:  
The other's not, for his was not sincere.  
Whereat he inly rag'd, and as they talk'd,  
Smote him into the midriff with a stone, 445  
That beat out life: he fell; and, deadly pale,  
Groan'd out his soul, with gushing blood effus'd!  
Much at the sight was A D A M in his heart  
Dismay'd, and thus in haste to th' Angel cry'd.

O Teacher! some great mischief hath befall'n  
To that meek man, who well had sacrific'd:  
Is piety thus, and pure devotion paid?

T'whom *MICHAEL* thus (he also mov'd) re-<sup>[ply'd:</sup>  
These two are brethren, *ADAM*, and to come  
Out of thy loins: th'unjust the just hath slain;  
For envy, that his brother's offering found 456  
From heav'n acceptance: but, the bloody fact  
Will be aveng'd; and th'other's faith, approv'd,  
Lose no reward; though here thou see him die,  
Rolling in dust, and gore. To which our fire. 460

Alas, both for the deed, and for the cause!  
But, have I now seen *DEATH*? is this the way  
I must return to native dust? O fight  
Of terror, foul, and ugly to behold,  
Horrid to think, how horrible to feel! 465

To whom thus *MICHAEL*. *DEATH* thou hast<sup>[seen</sup>  
In his first shape on man: but many shapes  
Of *DEATH*, and many are the ways that lead  
To his grim cave: all dismal! yet to sense

More



Book XI. *PARADISE LOST.* 463

More terrible at th' entrance, than within. 470  
Some (as thou saw'st) by violent stroke shall die;  
By fire, flood, famine: by intemperance more,  
In meats, and drinks, which on the earth shall bring  
Diseases dire: of which a monstrous crew  
Before thee shall appear; that thou may'st know  
What misery th' in-abstinence of EVE 476  
Shall bring on men. Immediately a place  
Before his eyes appear'd, sad, noisom, dark,  
A lazarus-house it seem'd; wherein were laid  
Numbers of all diseas'd: all maladies 480  
Of gasty spasm, or racking torture, qualmes  
Of heart-sick agony, all fev'rous kinds,  
Convulsions, epilepsies, fierce catarrhs,  
Intestin stone, and ulcer, cholic-pangs,  
Dæmoniac phrenzy, moaping melancholy 485  
And moon-struck madness, pining atrophy,  
Marasmus, and wide-wasting pestilence,  
Dropries, and asthma's, and joint-racking rheums.  
Dire was the tossing! deep the groans! DESPAIR  
Tended the sick, busiest from couch to couch: 490  
And over them triumphant DEATH his dart  
Shook; but delay'd to strike, though oft invoc'd  
With

With vows, as their chief good, and final hope.  
 Sight so deform what heart of rock could long  
 Dry-ey'd behold? ADAM could not, but wept, 495  
 Though not of woman born; compassion quell'd  
 His best of man, and gave him up to tears  
 A space; 'till firmer thoughts restrain'd excess,  
 And scarce recovering words his plaint renew'd.

O miserable mankind! to what fall 500  
 Degraded, to what wretched state reserv'd!  
 Better end here unborn! Why is life giv'n,  
 To be thus wrested from us? rather, why  
 Obtruded on us thus? who, if we knew  
 What we receive, would either not accept 505  
 Life offer'd; or, soon beg to lay it down;  
 Glad to be so dismiss'd in peace. Can thus  
 Th' image of GOD in man, (created once  
 So goodly, and erect, though faulty since!)  
 To such unsightly sufferings be debas'd, 510  
 Under inhuman pains? Why should not man,  
 Retaining still divine similitude  
 In part, from such deformities be free,  
 And, for his Maker's image sake, exempt?

Their



I. Book XI. *PARADISE LOST.* 465

Their Maker's image, answer'd MICHAEL, then  
Forsook them, when themselves they vilify'd 516  
To serve ungovern'd appetite: and took  
His image whom they serv'd, a brutish vice,  
Inductive mainly to the sin of EVE.

Therefore so abject is their punishment, 520  
Disfiguring not GOD's likeness, but their own:  
Or, if His likeness, by themselves defac'd:  
While they pervert pure nature's healthful rules  
To loathsome sickness; worthily since they  
God's Image did not reverence in themselves. 525

I yield it just, said ADAM, and submit!  
But, is there yet no other way, besides  
These painful passages, how we may come  
To death, and mix with our connatural dust 529

There is, said MICHAEL, if thou well observe  
The rule of *not too much*; by temperance taught  
In what thou eat'st, and drink'st; seeking from  
Due nourishment, no gluttonous delight: [thence  
'Till many years over thy head return, 534  
So may'st thou live; 'till, like ripe fruit, thou drop  
H h Into

Into thy mother's lap; or, be with ease  
 Gather'd, not harshly pluck'd; for death mature,  
 This is Old Age: but then, thou must out-live  
 Thy youth, thy strength, thy beauty; which will  
                   change 539

To wither'd, weak, and gray: thy senses then  
 Obtuse, all taste of pleasure must forego,  
 To what thou hast; and, for the air of youth,  
 (Hopeful, and chearful) in thy blood will reign  
 A melancholy damp of cold, and dry,  
 To weigh the spirits down; and last consume 545  
 The balm of life.—To whom our ancestor.

Henceforth I fly not death, nor would prolong  
 Life much! bent rather, how I may be quit,  
 Fairest, and easiest, of this cumb'rous charge;  
 Which I must keep 'till my appointed day 550  
 Of rend'ring up, and patiently attend  
 My dissolution! MICHAEL reply'd.

Nor love thy life, nor hate; but, what thou liv'st,  
 Live well; how long, or short, permit to heav'n:  
 And now prepare thee for another fight. 555

He



He look'd, and saw a spacious plain, whereon  
 Were tents of various hue: by some, were herds  
 Of cattle grazing: others, whence the sound  
 Of instruments, that made melodious chime, 559  
 Was heard, of harp, and organ; and who mov'd  
 Their stops, and chords, was seen: his volant touch  
 Instinct through all proportions, low, and high,  
 Fled, and persu'd transverse the resonant fugue.

In other part, stood one who at the forge  
 Lab'ring, two massy clods of ir'n, and brass, 565  
 Had melted (whether found where casual fire  
 Had wasted woods, on mountain, or in vale,  
 Down to the veins of earth; thence gliding hot  
 To some cave's mouth; or, whether wash'd by  
 stream

From under-ground) the liquid ore he drain'd 570  
 Into fit molds prepar'd; from which he form'd  
 First his own tools: then, what might else be  
 Fusil, or grav'n in metal. After these, [wrought  
 (But on the hither side) a different sort [feat,  
 From the high neighb'ring hills, which was their  
 Down to the plain descended: by their guise 576  
 Just men they seem, and all their study bent

To worship G O D a-right, and know His works  
 Not hid; nor those things laſt, which might preſerve  
 Freedom, and peace to men: they on the plain 580  
 Long had not walk'd, when from the tents, behold!  
 A bevy of fair women; richly gay  
 In gems, and wanton drefs: to th' harp they ſung  
 Soft amorous ditties, and in dance came on.  
 The men, tho' grave, ey'd them; and let their eyes  
 Rove without rein; 'till in the amorous net 586  
 Firſt caught, they lik'd; and each his liking choſe:  
 And now of love they treat, 'till th' ev'ning ſtar  
 (Love's harbinger) appear'd: then, all in heat  
 They light the nuptial torch; and bid invoke 590  
 H Y M E N, then firſt to marriage rites invok'd:  
 With feaſt, and muſic, all the tents reſound.  
 Such happy interview, and fair event  
 Of love, and youth not loſt, ſongs, garlands, flow'rs,  
 And charming ſymphonies, attach'd the heart 595  
 Of A D A M, ſoon inclin'd t' admit delight,  
 (The bent of nature!) which he thus expreſs'd.

True opener of mine eyes, prime Angel bleſt!  
 Much better ſeems this viſion, and more hope  
 Of



Of peaceful days portends, than those two past:  
 Those were of hate, and death, or pain much  
 Here, nature seems fulfill'd in all her ends. [worfe;

[best

To whom thus MICHAEL. Judge not what is  
 By pleasure, though to nature seeming meet;  
 Created, as thou art, to nobler end, 605  
 Holy, and pure, conformity divine!  
 Those tents thou saw'st so pleasant, were the tents  
 Of wickedness; wherein shall dwell his race  
 Who slew his brother: studious they appear  
 Of arts that polish life; inventors rare; 610  
 Unmindful of their Maker, though His SPIRIT  
 Taught them; but they His gifts acknowledg'd  
 Yet, they a beauteous off-spring shall beget. [none.  
 For, that fair female-troop thou saw'st, that seem'd  
 Of Goddesses, so blithe, so smooth, so gay; 615  
 Yet, empty of all good, wherein consists  
 Woman's domestic honor, and chief praise:  
 Bred only, and completed, to the taste  
 Of lustful appetite; to sing, to dance, 619  
 To dress, and trouble the tongue, and roll the eye.  
 To these, that sober race of men (whose lives

Religious, titled them the sons of God)  
 Shall yield up their virtue, all their fame,  
 Ignobly! to the trains, and to the smiles  
 Of these fair atheists; and now swim in joy, 625  
 (E'erlong to swim at large) and laugh: for which  
 The world e'erlong a world of tears must weep!

To whom thus ADAM, of short joy bereft.  
 O pity, and shame! that they, who to live well  
 Enter'd so fair, should turn aside, to tread 630  
 Paths indirect, or in the mid-way faint!  
 But, still I see the tenor of man's woe  
 Hold on the same, from woman to begin.

From man's effeminate slackness it begins,  
 (Said th' Angel) who should better hold his place  
 By wisdom, and superior gifts receiv'd. 636  
 But, now prepare thee for another scene.

He look'd, and saw wide territory spread  
 Before him, towns, and rural works between:  
 Cities of men, with lofty gates, and tow'rs; 640  
 Concourse in arms; fierce faces threat'ning war;  
 Giants



Giants of mighty bone, and bold emprise!  
 Part wield their arms; part curb the foaming steed:  
 Single, or in array of battel rang'd, 644  
 Both horse, and foot; nor idly must'ring stood:  
 One way, a band select from forage drives  
 A herd of beeves, fair oxen, and fair kine,  
 From a fat meadow-ground; or, fleecy flock,  
 Ewes, and their bleating lambs, over the plain;  
 Their booty: scarce with life the shepherds fly;  
 But call-in aid; which makes a bloody fray.  
 With cruel tournament the squadrons join!  
 Where cattle pastur'd late, now, scatter'd lies  
 With carcases, and arms, th'infanguin'd field,  
 Deserted. Others, to a city strong 655  
 Lay siege, incamp'd; by batt'ry, scale, and mine,  
 Assaulting; others, from the wall defend  
 With dart, and jav'lin, stones, and sulph'rous fire:  
 On each hand slaughter, and gigantic deeds!  
 In other part, the sceptred heralds call 660  
 To council, in the city gates; anon  
 Gray-headed men, and grave, with warriors mix'd,  
 Assemble; and harangues are heard: but soon,  
 In factious opposition: 'till at last,

Of middle age one rising, eminent 665  
 In wise deport, spake much of right, and wrong,  
 Of justice, of religion, truth, and peace,  
 And judgment from above: him old and young  
 Exploded, and had seiz'd with violent hands;  
 Had not a cloud descending snatch'd him thence,  
 Unseen amid the throng: so, violence 671  
 Proceeded, and oppression, and sword-law,  
 Through all the plain, and refuge none was found.  
 ADAM was all in tears, and to his guide  
 Lamenting turn'd full sad: O! what are these? 675  
 DEATH's ministers, not men! who thus deal death  
 Inhumanly to men: and multiply  
 Ten thousand-fold the sin of him who slew  
 His brother: for, of whom such massacre 679  
 Make they, but of their brethen; men of men?  
 But, who was that just man, whom had not heav'n  
 Rescu'd, had in his righteousness been lost?

To whom thus MICHAEL. These are the product  
 Of those ill-mated marriages thou saw'st; 684  
 Where good with bad were match'd; who of  
 Abhor to join: and, by imprudence mix'd, [themselves

Pro-



Book XI. *PARADISE LOST.* 47

Produce prodigious births, of body, or mind.  
Such were these giants; men of high renown!  
For, in those days, might only shall be admir'd;  
And valor, and heroic virtue, call'd: 690  
To overcome in battel, and subdue  
Nations, and bring home spoils, with infinite  
Man-slaughter, shall be held the highest pitch  
Of human glory; and for glory done  
Of triumph, to be styl'd great conquerors, 695  
Patrons of mankind, Gods, and sons of Gods:  
Destroyers rightlier call'd, and plagues of men.  
Thus fame shall be achiev'd, renown on earth;  
And what most merits fame, in silence hid. 699  
But, he, the seventh from thee, whom thou be-  
The only righteous in a world perverse, [heldst  
And therefore hated, therefore so beset  
With foes, for daring single to be just,  
And utter odious truth, that GOD would come  
To judge them with His Saints: him the Most High  
(Rap'd in a balmy cloud with winged steeds) 706  
Did, as thou saw'st, receive; to walk with GOD  
High in salvation, and the climes of bliss,  
Exempt from death: to shew thee what reward

A-

Awaits the good ; the rest, what punishment : 710  
Which now direct thine eyes, and soon behold.

[chang'd:

He look'd, and saw the face of things quite  
The brazen throat of war had ceas'd to roar ;  
All now was turn'd to jollity, and game,  
To luxury, and riot, feast, and dance ; 715  
Marrying, or prostituting (as befell)  
Rape, or adultery, where passing Fair  
Allur'd them: thence from cups, to civil broils.  
At length a reverend fire among them came,  
And of their doings great dislike declar'd, 720  
And testify'd against their ways: he oft  
Frequented their assemblies, whereso met,  
Triumphs, or festivals: and to them preach'd  
Conversion, and repentance; as to souls  
In prison, under judgments imminent: 725  
But all in vain! which when he saw, he ceas'd  
Contending, and remov'd his tents far-off.  
Then, from the mountain hewing timber tall,  
Began to build a vessel of huge bulk ; 729  
Measur'd by cubit, length, and breadth, and height ;  
Smear'd round with pitch ; and in the side a door  
Con-



Contriv'd; and of provisions laid in large,  
 For man, and beast: when lo, a wonder strange!  
 Of every beast, and bird, and insect small 734  
 Came sevens, and pairs, and enter'd in, as taught  
 Their order: last the fire, and his three sons,  
 With their four wives: and GOD made fast the door.  
 Mean-while the south-wind rose, and, with black  
 Wide-hov'ring, all the clouds together drove [<sup>wings</sup>  
 From under heav'n; the hills to their supply 740  
 Vapor, and exhalation dusk, and moist,  
 Sent up amain: and now, the thicken'd sky  
 Like a dark ceiling flood; down rush'd the rain  
 Impetuous: and continu'd, 'till the earth  
 No more was seen; the floating vessel swum 745  
 Up-lifted; and secure with beaked prow  
 Rode tilting o'er the waves: all dwellings else  
 Flood overwhelm'd, and them with all their pomp  
 Deep under water roll'd; sea cover'd sea;  
 Sea without shoar! and in their palaces 750  
 Where luxury late reign'd, sea-monsters whelp'd,  
 And stabled: of mankind (so numerous late)  
 All left, in one small bottom swum im-bark'd.  
 How didst thou grieve then, ADAM! to behold  
 The

The end of all thy off-spring, end so sad, 755  
 Depopulation! Thee another flood,  
 Of tears, and sorrow a flood, thee also drown'd;  
 And sunk thee as thy sons: 'till gently rear'd  
 By th' Angel, on thy feet thou stood'st at last,  
 Tho' comfortless; as when a father mourns 760  
 His children, all in view destroy'd at once:  
 And scarce to th' Angel utter'dst thus thy plaint.

O visions ill foreseen! Better had I  
 Liv'd ignorant of future! so had born  
 My part of evil only, each day's lot 765  
 Enough to bear; those now, that were dispens'd  
 The burden of many ages, on me light  
 At once, by my fore-knowledge; gaining birth  
 Abortive, to torment me e'er their Being,  
 With thought that they must be. Let no man seek  
 Henceforth to be fore-told, what shall befall 771  
 Him, or his children: evil he may be sure:  
 Which neither his fore-knowing can prevent;  
 And he the future evil shall no less  
 In apprehension, than in substance, feel; 775  
 Grievous to bear! But, that care now is past,

Man



Book XI. *PARADISE LOST.* 477

Man is not whom to warn: those few escap'd,  
Famin, and anguish, will at last consume,  
Wand'ring that wat'ry Desert. I had hope,  
When violence was ceas'd, and war on earth, 780  
All would have then gone well; peace would have  
crown'd

With length of happy days the race of man.  
But I was far deceiv'd! For, now I see  
Peace to corrupt no less, than war to waste.  
How comes it thus? Unfold, coelestial guide! 785  
And whether here the race of man will end.

[thou saw'st  
To whom thus MICHAEL. Those whom last  
In triumph, and luxurious wealth, are they  
First seen in acts of prowess eminent,  
And great exploits; but, of true virtue void: 790  
Who having spil'd much blood, and done much  
Subduing nations; and atchiev'd thereby [waste,  
Fame in the world, high titles, and rich prey;  
Shall change their course to pleasure, ease, and sloth,  
Surfeit, and lust; 'till wantonness, and pride, 795  
Raife out of friendship hostile deeds in peace.  
The conquer'd also, and enslav'd by war,  
Shall,

Shall, with their freedom lost, all virtue lose,  
 And fear of God; from Whom their piety feign'd,  
 In sharp contest of battel found no aid, 800  
 Against invaders; therefore cool'd in zeal,  
 Thence-forth shall practise how to live secure,  
 Worldly, or dissolute; on what their lords  
 Shall leave them to enjoy: (for th' earth shall bear  
 More than enough, that temperance may be try'd:)  
 So, all shall turn degenerate, all deprav'd; 806  
 Justice, and temperance, truth, and faith forgot!  
 One man except, the only son of light  
 In a dark age, against example good,  
 Against allurements, custom, and a world 810  
 Offended: fearless of reproach, and scorn,  
 Or violence, he of their wicked ways  
 Shall them admonish; and before them set  
 The paths of righteousness, how much more safe,  
 And full of peace; denouncing wrath to come 815  
 On their impenitence; and shall return  
 Of them derided. But, of GOD observ'd,  
 The one just man alive, by His command  
 Shall build a wondrous ark (as thou beheldst)  
 To save himself, and household, from amidst 820



A world devote to universal wreck.  
 No sooner he, with them of man, and beast,  
 Select for life, shall in the ark be lodg'd,  
 And shelter'd round; but all the cataracts  
 Of heav'n set open, on the earth shall pour 825  
 Rain, day and night; all fountains of the deep  
 Broke up, shall heave the ocean to usurp  
 Beyond all bounds; 'till inundation rise  
 Above the highest hills. Then, shall this mount  
 Of Paradise, by might of waves, be mov'd 830  
 Out of his place, push'd by the horned flood;  
 With all his verdure spoil'd, and trees a-drift  
 Down the great river, to the opening gulf,  
 And there take root; an island salt, and bare,  
 The haunt of seals, and orcs, and sea-mews' clang;  
 To teach thee that GOD attributes to place 836  
 No sanctity, if none be thither brought  
 By men who there frequent, or therein dwell.  
 And now, what further shall ensue behold.

He look'd, and saw the ark hull on the flood,  
 Which now abated: for, the clouds were fled, 841  
 Driv'n by a keen north-wind, that, blowing dry,  
 Wrink-

Wrinkled the face of deluge, as decay'd;  
 And the clear sun on his wide wat'ry glass  
 Gaz'd hot, and of the fresh wave largely drew, 845  
 As after thirst; which made their flowing shrink  
 From standing lake, to tripping ebb; that stole  
 With soft foot tow'rd the deep; who now had stop'd  
 His sluices, as the heav'n his windows shut.  
 The ark no more now floats, but seems on ground,  
 Fast on the top of some high mountain fix'd. 851  
 And now the tops of hills, as rocks, appear:  
 With clamor thence the rapid currents drive,  
 Tow'rd the retreating sea, their furious tide.  
 Forthwith from out the ark a raven flies, 855  
 And after him (the surer messenger)  
 A dove, sent forth once and again, to spy  
 Green tree, or ground, whereon his foot may light:  
 The second time returning, in his bill  
 An olive-leaf he brings, pacific sign! 860  
 Anon dry ground appears, and from his ark  
 The antient fire descends, with all his train:  
 Then with up-lifted hands, and eyes devout,  
 Grateful to heav'n, over his head beholds  
 A dewy cloud, and in the cloud a bow 865

Con-



Book XI. *PARADISE LOST.* 481

Conspicuous, with three lifted colors gay,  
Betok'ning peace from GOD, and covenant new:  
Whereat the heart of ADAM, erst so sad,  
Greatly rejoyc'd; and thus his joy broke forth.

O thou, who future things canst represent 870

As present, heav'nly instructor! I revive  
At this last sight; assur'd that man shall live,  
With all the creatures, and their seed preserve.

Far less I now lament for one whole world  
Of wicked sons destroy'd, than I rejoice 875

For one man found so perfect, and so just,  
That GOD vouchsafes to raise another world  
From him, and all His anger to forget.

But say, what mean those color'd streaks in heav'n,  
Distended, as the brow of GOD appeas'd? 880

Or, serve they, as a flow'ry verge, to bind  
The fluid skirts of that same wat'ry cloud,  
Lest it again dissolve, and show'r the earth?

To whom th' Arch-Angel. Dext'rously thou  
So willingly doth GOD remit His ire, 885

Though late, repenting Him of man deprav'd;

I i

Griev'd

Griev'd at His heart, when looking down He saw  
 The whole earth fill'd with violence; and all flesh  
 Corrupting each their way: yet, those remov'd,  
 Such grace shall one just man find in His sight, 890  
 That He relents, not to blot out mankind;  
 And makes a covenant never to destroy  
 The earth again by flood; nor let the sea  
 Surpass His bounds; nor rain to drown the world,  
 With man therein, or beast: but, when He brings  
 Over the earth a cloud, will therein set 896  
 His triple-color'd bow, whereon to look,  
 And call to mind His covenant: day, and night,  
 Seed-time, and harvest, heat, and hoary frost, 899  
 Shall hold their course; 'till fire purge all things new,  
 Both heav'n, and earth, wherein the just shall dwell.

*The end of the eleventh Book.*



20 JY 63

T H E



XI.

faw

esh

,  
890

rd,

ngs

896

ht,

899

ew,

ell.



E





---

THE  
TWELFTH BOOK  
OF  
PARADISE LOST.

---

## The A R G U M E N T.

*The Angel Michael continues from the flood to relate what shall succeed; then, in the mention of Abraham, comes by degrees to explain, Who that seed of the woman shall be, which was promised Adam and Eve in the Fall; His Incarnation, Death, Resurrection, and Ascension; the state of the Church 'till His second coming. Adam, greatly satisfied, and recomforted by these relations and promises, descends the hill with Michael; wakens Eve, who all this while had slept, but with gentle dreams compos'd to quietness of mind, and submission. Michael in either hand leads them out of Paradise, the fiery sword waving behind them, and the Cherubim taking their stations to guard the place.*





# PARADISE LOST.

---

## B O O K XII.

---

**A**S one who in his journey bates at noon,  
Tho' bent on speed: so, here th' Arch-  
Angel paus'd,

Betwixt the world destroy'd, and world restor'd.

If ADAM ought perhaps might interpose:

Then, with transition sweet, new speech resumes.

Thus thou hast seen one world begin, and end;  
And man, as from a second stock, proceed.

Much thou hast yet to see; but, I perceive

Thy mortal sight to fail: objects divine

Must needs impair, and weary human sense. 10

I i 3

Henceforth

Henceforth what is to come I will relate:  
 Thou therefore give due audience, and attend!

This second source of men, while yet but few,  
 And while the dread of judgment past remains  
 Fresh in their minds, fearing the Deity, 15  
 With some regard to what is just, and right,  
 Shall lead their lives, and multiply apace;  
 Lab'ring the soil, and reaping plenteous crop,  
 Corn, wine, and oil: and from the herd, or flock,  
 Oft sacrificing bullock, lamb, or kid, 20  
 With large wine-offerings pour'd, and sacred feast,  
 Shall spend their days in joy un-blam'd; and dwell  
 Long time in peace, by families, and tribes,  
 Under paternal rule: 'till one shall rise  
 Of proud ambitious heart; who (not content 25  
 With fair equality, fraternal state;)  
 Will arrogate dominion undeserv'd,  
 Over his brethren, and quite dispossess  
 Concord, and law of nature from the earth;  
 Hunting, (and men, not beasts, shall be his game)  
 With war, and hostile snare, such as refuse 31  
 Subjection to his empire tyrannous.



A mighty hunter thence he shall be styl'd  
 Before the LORD; as in despite of heav'n,  
 Or from heav'n, claiming second sov'reignty: 35  
 And from rebellion shall derive his name,  
 Though of rebellion others he accuse.

He with a crew, (whom like ambition joins  
 With him, or under him to tyrannize)  
 Marching from EDEN tow'rs the west, shall find  
 The plain, wherein a black bituminous gurge 41  
 Boils out from under ground, the mouth of hell.  
 Of brick, and of that stuff, they cast to build  
 A city, and tow'r, whose top may reach to heav'n;  
 And get themselves a name: lest, far dispers'd 45  
 In foreign lands, their memory be lost;  
 Regardless whether good or evil fame!

But, GOD (Who oft descends to visit men  
 Unseen, and through their habitations walks  
 To mark their doings) them beholding soon, 50  
 Comes down to see their city, e'er the tow'r  
 Obstruct heav'n-tow'rs; and in derision sets  
 Upon their tongues a various spirit, to rase  
 Quite out their native language: and instead,  
 To sow a jangling noise of words unknown. 55

Forthwith a hideous gabble rises loud,  
 Among the builders: each to other calls  
 Not understood; 'till hoarse, and all in rage,  
 As mock'd they storm: great laughter was in heav'n,  
 And looking down, to see the hubbub strange,  
 And hear the din: thus was the building left 61  
 Ridiculous; and the work Confusion nam'd.

Whereto thus ADAM, fatherly displeas'd.  
 O execrable son! so to aspire  
 Above his brethren; to himself assuming 65  
 Authority usurp'd, from GOD not giv'n.  
 He gave us only over beast, fish, fowl  
 Dominion absolute; that right we hold  
 By his donation: but, man over men  
 He made not lord: such title to himself 70  
 Reserving, human left from human free.  
 But, this usurper his encroachment proud  
 Stays not on man: to GOD his tow'r intends  
 Siege, and defiance. Wretched man! what food  
 Will he convey up thither, to sustain 75  
 Himself, and his rash army; where thin air  
 Above the clouds will pine his entrails gross;  
 And famish him of breath, if not of bread?



To whom thus MICHAEL. Justly thou abhorr'st  
 That son, who on the quiet state of men 80  
 Such trouble brought, affecting to subdue  
 Rational liberty: yet know withal,  
 Since, by original lapse, true liberty  
 Is lost, (which always with right reason dwells  
 Twin'd, and from her hath no dividual being:)  
 Reason in man obscur'd, or not obey'd, 86  
 Immediately inordinate desires,  
 And upstart passions, catch the government  
 From reason; and to servitude reduce  
 Man, 'till then free. Therefore, since he permits  
 Within himself unworthy pow'rs to reign, 91  
 Over free reason; GOD, in judgment just,  
 Subjects it from without to violent lords:  
 Who oft as undeservedly inthrall  
 His outward freedom. Tyranny must be; 95  
 Though to the tyrant thereby no excuse.  
 Yet, sometimes nations will decline so low  
 From virtue (which is reason) that no wrong,  
 But justice, and some fatal curse annex'd,  
 Deprives them of their outward liberty; 100  
 Their inward lost: witness th' irreverent son  
 Of

Of him who built the ark; who, for the shame  
 Done to his father, heard his heavy curse,  
 “ *Servant of Servants*, on his vitious race.  
 Thus will the latter, as the former, world 105  
 Still tend from bad to worse; ’till GOD at last,  
 Wearied with their iniquities, withdraw  
 His presence from among them, and avert  
 His holy eyes; resolving from thenceforth  
 To leave them to their own polluted ways: 110  
 And one peculiar nation to select  
 From all the rest, of whom to be invoc’d;  
 A nation from one faithful man to spring:  
 Him, on this side EUPHRATES yet residing,  
 Bred up in idol-worship. O that men 115  
 (Canst thou believe?) should be so stupid grown,  
 While yet the patriarch liv’d, who scap’d the flood,  
 As to forsake the living GOD, and fall  
 To worship their own work in wood, and stone,  
 For Gods! Yet, him GOD the Most High vouch-  
 To call by vision, from his father’s house, [safes  
 His kindred, and false Gods; into a land  
 Which he will shew him: and from him will raise  
 A mighty nation; and upon him show’r



Book XII. *P A R A D I S E L O S T.* 491

His benediction so, that in his seed 125

All nations shall be blest: he strait obeys;

Not knowing to what land, yet firm believes.

I see him, (but thou canst not) with what faith

He leaves his Gods, his friends, and native soil

U R of C H A L D Æ A, passing now the ford 130

T o H A R A N: after him a cumb'rous train

Of herds, and flocks, and numerous servitude:

Not wand'ring poor, but trusting all his wealth

With G O D, who call'd him, in a land unknown.

C A N A A N he now attains; I see his tents 135

Pitch'd about S I C H E M, and the neighb'ring plain

O f M O R E H. There by promise he receives

Gift to his progeny of all that land;

From H A M A T H northward, to the Desert south;

(Things by their names I call, tho' yet un-nam'd) 140

From H E R M O N east, to the great western sea;

Mount H E R M O N! yonder sea! (each place behold

In prospect, as I point them) on the shore

Mount C A R M E L; here, the double-founted stream,

J O R D A N, true limit eastward: but, his sons 145

Shall dwell to S E I R, that long ridge of hills!

This ponder, that all nations of the earth

Shall

Shall in his seed be blessed: by that seed  
 Is meant thy GREAT DELIVERER, who shall bruise  
 The serpent's head; whereof to thee anon 150  
 Plainlier shall be reveal'd. This patriarch blest,  
 (Whom Faithful ABRAHAM due time shall call)  
 A son, and of his son, a grand-child leaves;  
 Like him in faith, in wisdom, and renown.  
 The grand-child with twelve sons increas'd, departs  
 From CANAAN, to a land hereafter call'd 156  
 ÆGYPT, divided by the river NILE:  
 See where it flows, disgorging at seven mouths  
 Into the sea! To sojourn in that land  
 He comes, invited by a younger son 160  
 In time of dearth: a son, whose worthy deeds  
 Raise him to be the second in that realm  
 Of PHARAOH: there he dies, and leaves his race  
 Growing into a nation: and now grown,  
 Suspected to a sequest King, who seeks 165  
 To stop their over-growth, as in-mate guests  
 Too numerous: whence of guests he makes them  
 Inhospitably; and kills their infant males: [slaves  
 'Till by two brethren (those two brethren call  
 MOSES, and AARON) sent from GOD to claim  
 His



His people from inthralment, they return 171  
 With glory, and spoil, back to their promis'd land.  
 But first, the lawless tyrant, (who denies  
 To know their *GOD*, or message to regard)  
 Must be compell'd by signs, and judgments dire: 175  
 To blood un-shed, the rivers must be turn'd;  
 Frogs, lice, and flies, must all his palace fill  
 With loath'd intrusion, and fill all the land:  
 His cattle must of rot, and murrain, die;  
 Botches, and blains, must all his flesh imboss, 180  
 And all his people: thunder mix'd with hail,  
 Hail mix'd with fire, must rend th'*ÆGYPTIAN* sky,  
 And wheel on th'earth, devouring where it rolls:  
 What it devours not, herb, or fruit, or grain,  
 A darksom cloud of locusts swarming down 185  
 Must eat, and on the ground leave nothing green:  
 Darkness must over-shadow all his bounds,  
 Palpable darkness! and blot out three days:  
 Last, with one midnight-stroke, all the first-born  
 Of *ÆGYPT* must lye dead. Thus with ten wounds  
 The river-dragon tam'd at length, submits 191  
 To let his sojourners depart; and oft  
 Humbles his stubborn heart: but still, as ice

More

More harden'd after thaw: 'till in his rage  
 Persuing whom he late dismiss'd, the sea 195  
 Swallows him with his host; but them lets pass  
 (As on dry land) between two chrystal walls;  
 Aw'd by the rod of *MOSES* so to stand  
 Divided, 'till his Rescu'd gain their shore: 199  
 Such wondrous pow'r *GOD* to His Saint will lend,  
 Though present in His Angel! who shall go  
 Before them in a cloud, and pillar of fire:  
 By day a cloud, by night a pillar of fire;  
 To guide them in their journey, and remove  
 Behind them, while th'obdurate King persues. 205  
 All night he will persue; but, his approach  
 Darknes defends between, 'till morning watch;  
 Then through the fiery pillar, and the cloud,  
*GOD* looking forth will trouble all his host,  
 And craze their chariot-wheels: when by command,  
*MOSES* once more his potent rod extends 211  
 Over the sea; the sea his rod obeys:  
 On their imbattel'd ranks the waves return,  
 And overwhelm their war! The race elect,  
 Safe towards *CANAAN* from the shore advance 215  
 Through the wild desert; not the readiest way;  
 Lest



Left ent'ring on the CANAANITE alarm'd,  
 War terrify them in-expert, and fear  
 Return them back to ÆGYPT, chusing rather  
 Inglorious life with servitude: (for life, 220  
 To noble, and ignoble, is more sweet  
 Un-train'd in arms, where rashness leads not on.)  
 This also shall they gain by their delay  
 In the wide wilderness; there they shall found  
 Their government, and their great senate chuse 225  
 Thro' the twelve tribes, to rule by laws ordain'd.  
 GOD from the mount of SINAI, (whose gray top  
 Shall tremble, He descending,) will Himself  
 In thunder, lightning, and loud trumpet's sound,  
 Ordain them laws: part, such as appertain 230  
 To civil justice; part, religious rites  
 Of sacrifice; informing them by types,  
 And shadows, of that Destin'd Seed to bruise  
 The serpent, by what means He shall atchieve  
 Mankind's deliverance. But, the voice of GOD 235  
 To mortal ear is dreadful! They beseech  
 That MOSES might report to them His Will,  
 And terror cease: He grants what they besought;  
 Instructed, that to GOD is no access.

Without

Without Mediator, whose high office now 240  
 MOSES in figure bears; to introduce  
 One Greater, of whose day he shall foretel,  
 And all the prophets in their age the times  
 Of Great MESSIAH shall sing. Thus, laws and rites  
 Establish'd, such delight hath GOD in men 245  
 Obedient to His Will, that He vouchsafes  
 Among them to set up His tabernacle;  
 The Holy One with mortal men to dwell.  
 By His prescript a sanctuary is fram'd  
 Of cedar, overlaid with gold; therein 250  
 An ark, and in the ark His testimony,  
 The records of His covenant: over these  
 A mercy-seat of gold, between the wings  
 Of two bright Cherubim: before Him burn  
 Seven lamps, as in a zodiac representing 255  
 The heav'nly fires: over the tent a cloud  
 Shall rest by day, a fiery gleam by night;  
 Save when they journey, and at length they come,  
 Conducted by His Angel, to the land 259  
 Promis'd to ABRAHAM, and his seed—The rest  
 Were long to tell; how many battles fought;  
 How many Kings destroy'd; and kingdoms won;  
 Or



Or, how the sun shall in mid-heav'n stand still  
 A day entire, and night's due course adjourn,  
 Man's voice commanding, "Sun! in GIBEON stand,  
 " And thou moon in the vale of AJALON, 266  
 " 'Till ISRAEL overcome:" so call the third  
 From ABRAHAM, son of ISAAC; and from him  
 His whole descent, who thus shall CANAAN win.

Here ADAM interpos'd. O sent from heav'n, 270  
 Inlightner of my darknes! gracious things  
 Thou hast reveal'd; those chiefly, which concern  
 Just ABRAHAM, and his seed: now first I find  
 Mine eyes true op'ning, and my heart much eas'd;  
 E'er-while perplex'd with thoughts, what would be-  
 Of me, and all mankind: but, now I see [come  
 His day, in Whom all nations shall be blest:  
 Favor un-merited by me, who fought  
 Forbidden knowledge by forbidden means!  
 This yet I apprehend not, why to those 280  
 Among whom GOD will deign to dwell on earth,  
 So many, and so various, laws are giv'n:  
 So many laws argue so many sins  
 Among them: how can GOD with such reside?

K k

To

To whom thus MICHAEL. Doubt not but that sin  
 Will reign among them, as of thee begot : 286  
 And therefore was law giv'n them, to evince  
 Their natural pravity, by stirring up  
 Sin against law to fight : that when they see  
 Law can discover sin, but not remove, 290  
 (Save by those shadowy expiations weak,  
 The blood of bulls and goats) they may conclude  
 Some blood more pretious must be paid for man ;  
 Just for unjust : that, in such righteousness  
 To them by faith imputed, they may find 295  
 Justification towards GOD, and peace  
 Of conscience ; which the law by ceremonies  
 Cannot appease ; nor man the moral part  
 Perform ; and, not performing, cannot live.  
 So, law appears imperfect ; and but giv'n 300  
 With purpose to resign them in full time,  
 Up to a better covenant ; disciplin'd  
 From shadowy types to truth ; from flesh to spirit ;  
 From imposition of strict laws, to free  
 Acceptance of large grace ; from servil fear, 305  
 To filial ; works of law, to works of faith.  
 And therefore shall not MOSES (though of GOD



Highly belov'd,) being but the minister  
 Of law, His people into CANAAN lead;  
 But JOSHUA: (whom the Gentiles JESUS call; 310  
 His name, and office bearing, who shall quell  
 The adversary-serpent; and bring back  
 Thro' the world's wilderness long-wander'd man,  
 Safe to eternal Paradise of rest.) 314  
 Mean-while they, in their earthly CANAAN plac'd,  
 Long time shall dwell, and prosper: but, when sins  
 National interrupt their public peace,  
 Provoking GOD to raise them enemies;  
 From whom as oft He saves them penitent;  
 By Judges first, then under Kings: of whom 320  
 The second, (both for piety renown'd,  
 And puissant deeds) a promise shall receive  
 Irrevocable, that his regal throne  
 For ever shall indure: the like shall sing  
 All prophecy, that of the royal stock 325  
 Of DAVID (so I name this King) shall rise  
 A SON, the woman's seed to thee foretold;  
 Foretold to ABRAHAM; as in Whom shall trust  
 All nations; and to Kings foretold, of Kings  
 The last; for of His reign shall be no end. 330

But, first a long succession must ensue:  
 And his next son, for wealth and wisdom fam'd,  
 The clouded ark of G O D, 'till then in tents  
 Wand'ring, shall in a glorious temple inshrine.  
 Such follow him, as shall be register'd 335  
 Part good, part bad; of bad the longer scrawl:  
 Whose foul idolatries, and other faults,  
 Heap'd to the popular sum, will so incense  
G O D, as to leave them, and expose their land,  
 Their city, His temple, and His holy ark, 340  
 With all His sacred things, a scorn and prey  
 To that proud city, whose high walls thou saw'st  
 Left in confusion; B A B Y L O N thence call'd.  
 There in captivity He lets them dwell  
 The space of seventy years: then brings them back;  
 Remembering mercy, and His covenant sworn 346  
 To D A V I D, 'stablish'd as the days of heav'n.  
 Return'd from B A B Y L O N, by leave of Kings  
 Their lords, whom G O D dispos'd, the house of  
 They first re-edify: and for a while [G O D  
 In mean estate live moderate: 'till grown 351  
 In wealth, and multitude, factious they grow.  
 But first, among the priests dissention springs;  
 Men



Book XII. *PARADISE LOST.* 501

Men who attend the altar, and should most  
Endeavour peace: their strife pollution brings 355  
Upon the temple it self: at last they seize  
The sceptre, and regard not DAVID's sons:  
Then lose it to a stranger, that the true  
Anointed King MESSIAH might be born  
Barr'd of His right: yet, at His birth a star, 360  
Un-seen before in heav'n, proclaims him come;  
And guides the eastern sages, who inquire  
His place, to offer incense, myrrh, and gold:  
His place of birth a solemn Angel tells  
The simple shepherds, keeping watch by night: 365  
They gladly thither haste; and, by a choir  
Of squadron'd Angels, hear his carol sung.  
A virgin is His mother, but His Sire  
The Pow'r of the Most High! He shall ascend  
The throne hereditary, and bound His reign 370  
With earth's wide bounds, His glory with the  
[heav'ns!

He ceas'd, discerning ADAM with such joy  
Surcharg'd, as had, like grief, been dew'd in tears  
Without the vent of words; which these he  
breath'd.

O prophet of glad tidings! finisher 375  
 Of utmost hope! now clear I understand,  
 What oft my steadiest thoughts have search'd in vain:  
 Why our Great Expectation should be call'd,  
 The seed of woman: Virgin Mother, hail!  
 High in the love of heav'n! yet from my loins 380  
 Thou shalt proceed, and from thy womb the SON  
 Of GOD Most High; so GOD with man unites.  
 Needs must the serpent now his capital bruise  
 Expect with mortal pain: say, where and when 384  
 Their fight, what stroke shall bruise the victor's  
 [heel?

To whom thus MICHAEL. Dream not of their fight,  
 As of a duel, or the local wounds  
 Of head, or heel: not therefore joins the SON  
 Manhood to GOD-HEAD, with more strength to foil  
 Thy enemy: nor so is overcome 390  
 SATAN, whose fall from heav'n, (a deadlier bruise!)  
 Disabled, not to give thee thy death's wound:  
 Which He, who comes thy Saviour, shall re-cure,  
 Not by destroying SATAN, but his works,  
 In thee, and in thy seed. Nor can this be, 395  
 But by fulfilling (that which thou didst want,)

Obedience



Obedience to the law of GOD, impos'd  
 On penalty of death, and suffering death;  
 The penalty to thy transgression due;  
 And due to theirs which out of thine will grow: 400  
 So only can high justice rest appaid.  
 The law of GOD exact He shall fulfil,  
 Both by obedience, and by love; though love  
 Alone fulfil the law: thy punishment  
 He shall indure, by coming in the flesh 405  
 To a reproachful life, and cursed death:  
 Proclaiming life to all who shall believe  
 In His redemption; and that His obedience  
 Imputed, becomes theirs by faith; His merits  
 To save them, not their own (tho' legal) works.  
 For this He shall live hated, be blasphem'd, 411  
 Seis'd on by force, judg'd, and to death condemn'd,  
 A shameful, and accurst! nail'd to the cross  
 By His own nation; slain, for bringing life.  
 But, to the cross He nails thy enemies, 415  
 The law that is against thee, and the sins  
 Of all mankind, with Him there crucify'd,  
 Never to hurt them more, who rightly trust  
 In this His Satisfaction. So He dies,

But soon revives ; death over Him no pow'r 420  
 Shall long usurp : e'er the third dawning light  
 Return, the stars of morn shall see Him rise  
 Out of His grave, fresh as the dawning light,  
 The ransom paid, which man from death redeems,  
 His death for man, as many as offer'd life 425  
 Neglect not, and the benefit embrace  
 By faith, not void of works. This God-like act  
 Annuls thy doom, the death thou should'st have dy'd,  
 In sin for ever lost from life : this act 429  
 Shall bruise the head of SATAN, crush his strength,  
 Defeating Sin, and Death, his two main arms :  
 And fix far deeper in his head their stings,  
 Than temporal death shall bruise the victor's heel,  
 Or theirs whom he redeems : a death-like sleep !  
 A gentle wafting to immortal life ! 435  
 Nor after Resurrection shall He stay  
 Longer on earth, than certain times t'appear  
 To His Disciples ; men who in His life  
 Still follow'd Him : to them shall leave in charge  
 To teach all nations what of Him they learn'd, 440  
 And His salvation ; them who shall believe  
 Baptizing in the profluent stream, the sign

Of



Of washing them from guilt of sin, to life  
 Pure, and in mind prepar'd (if so befall)  
 For death, like that which the Redeemer dy'd. 445  
 All nations they shall teach: for, from that day,  
 Not only to the sons of ABRAHAM'S loins  
 Salvation shall be preach'd; but, to the sons  
 Of ABRAHAM'S faith: where-ever thro' the world:  
 So, in his seed all nations shall be blest'd. 450  
 Then to the heav'n of heav'ns shall He ascend  
 With victory, triumphing through the air  
 Over His foes and thine; there shall surprise  
 The serpent, prince of air, and drag in chains  
 Thro' all his realm, and there confounded leave:  
 Then enter into glory, and resume 456  
 His seat at GOD'S right hand, exalted high  
 Above all names in heav'n: and thence shall come,  
 When the world's dissolution shall be ripe, [dead:  
 With glory, and pow'r, to judge both quick and  
 To judge th' unfaithful dead, but to reward 461  
 His faithful, and receive them into bliss;  
 Whether in heav'n, or earth: for then, the earth  
 Shall all be Paradise, far happier place  
 Than this of EDEN, and far happier days! 465  
 So

So spake th'Arch-Angel MICHAEL; then paus'd,  
As at the world's great period: and our fire,  
Replete with joy, and wonder, thus reply'd.

O goodness infinite! goodness immense!  
That all this good of evil shall produce, 470  
And evil turn to good! more wonderful  
Than that which by creation first brought forth  
Light out of darkness! Full of doubt I stand,  
Whether I should repent me now of sin, 474  
By me done, and occasion'd; or rejoice [spring:  
Much more, that much more good thereof shall  
To GOD more glory, more good-will to men  
From GOD, and over wrath grace shall abound.  
But say, if our Deliverer up to heav'n  
Must re-ascend, what will betide the few 480  
His faithful, left among th'unfaithful herd,  
The enemies of truth? Who then shall guide  
His people? who defend? will they not deal  
Worse with his followers, than with him they dealt?

Be sure they will, said th'Angel; but from heav'n  
He to His own a COMFORTER will send, 486  
The



Book XII. *PARADISE LOST.* 507

The promise of the FATHER: Who shall dwell  
His SPIRIT within them; and the law of faith  
Working thro' love, upon their hearts shall write,  
To guide them in all truth; and also arm 490  
With spiritual armor, able to resist  
SATAN'S assaults, and quench his fiery darts:  
What man can do against them, not afraid,  
Though to the death; against such cruelties  
With inward consolations recompens'd; 495  
And oft supported so, as shall amaze  
Their proudest persecutors: for, the SPIRIT  
(Pour'd first on His Apostles, whom He sends  
To evangelize the nations; then, on all  
Baptiz'd,) shall them with wond'rous gifts indue,  
To speak all tongues, and do all miracles, 501  
As did their LORD before them. Thus they win  
Great numbers of each nation, to receive  
With joy the tidings brought from heav'n: at length,  
Their Ministry perform'd, and race well run, 505  
Their doctrine, and their story written left,  
They die. But in their room, as they fore-warn,  
Wolves shall succeed for teachers, grievous wolves!  
Who all the sacred mysteries of heav'n,

To

To their own vile advantages shall turn, 510  
 Of lucre, and ambition; and the truth  
 With superstitions, and traditions taint,  
 Left only in those written records pure;  
 Though not but by the SPIRIT understood.  
 Then shall they seek t' avail themselves of names,  
 Places, and titles; and with these to join 516  
 Secular pow'r; though feigning still to act  
 By spiritual: to themselves appropriating  
 The SPIRIT of GOD, promis'd alike, and giv'n  
 To all believers: and, from that pretense, 520  
 Spiritual laws by carnal pow'r shall force  
 On every conscience; laws! which none shall find  
 Left them inroll'd; or, what the SPIRIT within  
 Shall on the heart engrave. What will they then  
 But force the SPIRIT of Grace it self, and bind  
 His confort liberty? what, but unbuild 526  
 His living temples, built by faith to stand,  
 Their own faith, not another's? (for, on earth,  
 Who against faith, and conscience, can be heard  
 Infallible?) Yet, many will presume: 530  
 Whence heavy persecution shall arise  
 On all, who in the worship persevere

Of



Book XII. *P A R A D I S E L O S T.* 509

Of spirit, and truth: the rest (far greater part)  
Will deem in outward rites, and specious forms,  
Religion satisfy'd; truth shall retire 535  
Bestuck with fland'rous darts; and works of faith  
Rarely be found. So shall the world go on,  
To good malignant, to bad men benign;  
Under her own weight groaning; 'till the day  
Appear of respiration to the just, 540  
And vengeance to the wicked: at return  
Of HIM so lately promis'd to thy aid,  
The Woman's Seed; obscurely then foretold;  
Now amplier known thy SAVIOUR, and thy LORD;  
Last, in the clouds, from heav'n to be reveal'd  
In glory of the FATHER, to dissolve 546  
SATAN, with his perverted world; then raise  
From the conflagrant mass, purg'd, and refin'd,  
New heav'ns, new earth, ages of endless date,  
Founded in righteousness, and peace, and love;  
To bring forth fruits, joy, and eternal bliss. 551

He ended; and thus ADAM last reply'd.  
How soon hath thy prediction, Seer blest!  
Measur'd this transient world the race of time,  
'Till

'Till time stand fix'd? Beyond is all abyſs, 555  
 Eternity, whose end no eye can reach!  
 Greatly instructed I ſhall hence depart;  
 Greatly in peace of thought; and have my fill  
 Of knowledge, what this veſſel can contain:  
 Beyond which was my folly to aſpire! 560  
 Henceforth I learn, that to obey is beſt,  
 And love with fear the only GOD; to walk  
 As in His preſence; ever to obſerve  
 His providence; and on Him ſole depend;  
 Merciful over all His works! with good 565  
 Still overcoming evil; and by ſmall  
 Accompliſhing great things; by things deem'd weak  
 Subverting worldly ſtrong; and worldly wiſe,  
 By ſimply meek; that ſuffering for truth's ſake,  
 Is fortitude to higheſt victory; 570  
 And, to the faithful, death the gate of life;  
 Taught this by His example, Whom I now  
 Acknowledge my REDEEMER ever bleſt!

To whom thus alſo th' Angel laſt reply'd:  
 This having learn'd, thou haſt attain'd the ſum 575  
 Of wiſdom; hope no higher; though all the ſtars  
 Thou



Book XII. *PARADISE LOST.* 511

Thou knew'st by name; and all th' ethereal pow'rs;  
All secrets of the Deep; all nature's works;  
Or, works of GOD in heav'n, air, earth, or sea;  
And all the riches of this world enjoy'dst; 580  
And all the rule, one empire: only add  
Deeds to thy knowledge answerable; add faith;  
Add virtue, patience, temperance, add love,  
(By name to come call'd charity, the soul  
Of all the rest) then wilt thou not be loth 585  
To leave this Paradise, but shalt possess  
A Paradise within thee, happier far! —  
Let us descend now therefore from this top  
Of speculation; for the hour precise  
Exacts our parting hence: and see! the Guards,  
By me incamp'd on yonder hill, expect 591  
Their motion; at whose front a flaming sword,  
In signal of remove, waves fiercely round.  
We may no longer stay: go! waken EVE;  
Her also I with gentle dreams have calm'd, 595  
Portending good; and all her spirits compos'd  
To meek submission; thou, at season fit,  
Let her with thee partake what thou hast heard;  
Chiefly, what may concern her faith to know,  
The

The great deliverance by her seed to come 600  
 (For by the woman's seed) on all mankind.  
 That ye may live (which will be many days)  
 Both in one faith unanimous, though sad  
 (With cause!) for evils past; yet, much more cheer'd  
 With meditation on the happy end. 605

He ended; and they both descend the hill:  
 Descended, ADAM to the bow'r, where EVE  
 Lay sleeping, ran before; but found her wak'd;  
 And thus with words not sad she him receiv'd.

Whence thou return'st, and whither went'st, I [know;  
 For GOD is also in sleep, and dreams advise; 611  
 Which He hath sent propitious, some great good  
 Prefaging, since with sorrow, and heart's distress  
 Wearied I fell asleep: but now, lead on!  
 In me is no delay; with thee to go, 615  
 Is to stay here; without thee here to stay,  
 Is to go hence unwillingly: thou to me  
 Art all things under heav'n, all places thou;  
 Who for my wilful crime art banish'd hence.  
 This further consolation yet secure 620



Book XII. *PARADISE LOST.* 513

I carry hence ; though all by me is lost,  
Such favor I unworthy am vouchsaf'd,  
By me the Promis'd Seed shall all restore.

So spake our mother EVE ; and ADAM heard  
Well-pleas'd, but answer'd not : for now, too nigh  
Th' Arch-Angel stood ; and from the other hill 626  
To their fix'd station, all in bright array,  
The Cherubim descended ; on the ground  
Gliding meteorous, as ev'ning mist,  
Ris'n from a river, o'er the marish glides ; 630  
And gathers ground fast at the laborer's heel,  
Homeward returning. High in front advanc'd,  
The brandish'd sword of GOD before them blaz'd ;  
Fierce as a comet ; which with torrid heat,  
And vapors as the LIBYAN air adust, 635  
Began to parch that temperate clime : whereat  
In either hand the hast'ning Angel caught  
Our lingring Parents ; and to th' eastern gate  
Led them direct ; and down the cliff as fast,  
To the subjected plain ; then disappear'd. 640  
They looking back, all th' eastern side beheld  
Of Paradise ; so late their happy seat !

L 1

Wav'd

Wav'd over by that flaming brand; the gate  
With dreadful faces throng'd, and fiery arms. 644  
Some natural tears they drop'd, but wip'd them soon:  
The world was all before them, where to chuse  
Their place of rest, and Providence their guide.  
They, hand in hand, with wand'ring steps, and slow,  
Through EDEN took their solitary way.

*T H E E N D.*



20 JY 63



# INDEX.

## A

	Book	Line
<b>A</b> Aron and Moses, their mission to Egypt	12	170
Abdiel (a Seraph) opposes Satan promoting the Angels revolt, &c.	5	803
Reply to his answer,	5	877
His fidelity, &c. celebrated	5	896
Retreat from Satan's party	6	1
Soliloquy on view of him at their head	6	114
Speech to him thereon	6	130
Reply to his answer	6	171
Encounters him in the battel	6	189
Vanquishes Ariel, Arioc and Ramiel, (fallen Angels)	6	369
Abel and Cain, their story related	11	429
Abraham's and the patriarchs	12	113
All nations his sons by faith	12	446
Acheron, a river of hell	2	570
Adam and Eve describ'd generally	4	288
particularly	4	295
	4	312
	4	492
Their state of innocence	4	738
	5	211
	5	303
	8	510
Vide Innocence.		
Night oraison	4	720
Morning oraison	5	153
Preparations to entertain the Angel Raphael	5	313
The Table and Entertainment describ'd	5	391
Their nuptial bed	4	708
Nuptials celebrated	8	510
Parting preceding the temptation	9	385
L 1 2		Behaviour

# I N D E X.

	Book	Line
<i>Behaviour after their fall</i>	9	1004
<i>Find themselves naked</i>	9	1051
<i>Make themselves coverings of fig-leaves</i>	9	1099
<i>Recriminate on, and reproach each other</i>	9	1187
<i>Hide themselves from God (the Son)</i>	10	97
<i>Appearance before him</i>	10	109
<i>Repentance</i>	10	1098
<i>Expulsion from paradise</i>	12	625
<i>Vide Similes.</i>		
<i>Adam, his discourse with Eve on the prohibition of } the Tree of Knowledge</i>	4	411
<i>To her at night</i>	4	610
<i>Answer to her question about the nightly luminaries.</i>	4	660
<i>Viewing her sleeping</i>	5	8
<i>Answer to her relating her dream, (the subject of } Satan's first illusive temptation)</i>	5	94
<i>To her weeping</i>	5	129
<i>Invites the Angel Raphael to his bower, &amp;c.</i>	5	361
<i>Discourse with him</i>	5	460
<i>Continued on various subjects</i>	8	651
<i>Vide Raphael.</i>		
<i>His creation, and dominion, &amp;c. over the creatures</i>	9	524
<i>Prohibited the Tree of Knowledge</i>	7	542
<i>Account of himself, and the Objects about him, &amp;c. } on his creation</i>	8	332
<i>Of his first view of the Divine Presence, instation } in Paradise, &amp;c.</i>	8	253
<i>Speech to God thereon, and on his solitude there</i>	8	311
<i>Reply to God's answer</i>	8	357
<i>Sleep on the formation of Eve describ'd</i>	8	379
<i>His first view of her</i>	8	451
<i>Passion for her</i>	8	481
<i>Valediction to Raphael</i>	8	521
<i>Discourse with Eve preceding the temptation (on } Satan's subtilty, and the means to resist it, &amp;c.) }</i>	8	644
<i>Care, and fears for her in absence</i>	9	from 265 to 384
<i>Meets her returning with the forbidden fruit</i>	9	838
<i>Soliloquy lamenting her transgression</i>	9	847
<i>Resolves to die with her</i>	9	896
<i>Speech to her thereon</i>	9	907
<i>Eats the forbidden fruit</i>	9	921
<i>Incites her to carnal fruition (the first effect of it)</i>	9	996
		1014
		The



# I N D E X.

	Book	Line
<i>The place, &amp;c. described</i>	9	1037
<i>After-speech to her on their fall and nakedness</i>	9	1067
<i>Another, charging her as the aggressor</i>	9	1132
<i>Reply to her answer (recriminates her affected self-sufficiency, &amp;c.)</i>	9	1162
<i>Answer to God (the Son) calling him to judgment</i>	10	115
<i>Reply to him (accuses Eve)</i>	10	124
<i>The sentence pronounced on him</i>	10	197
<i>Soliloquy thereon</i>	10	720
<i>continued</i>	10	854
<i>Wishes for his Dissolution</i>	10	746
<i>Reflection on the immortality of the soul, &amp;c.</i>	10	771
<i>Repulsory speech to Eve attempting to console him</i>	10	782
<i>Relents towards her</i>	10	866
<i>Reply to her (accusing her self as the first in transgression)</i>	10	937
<i>Answer (to her reply advising to die by their own hands)</i>	10	947
<i>Resolves the contrary, (submission to God's will, and repentance)</i>	10	1013
<i>Speech to Eve (on the efficacy of prayer, &amp;c.)</i>	10	1028
<i>Hails her the mother of mankind</i>	11	140
<i>Speech to her on the Omens preceding their expulsion from Paradise</i>	11	158
<i>On the view of Michael approaching</i>	11	193
<i>Behaviour on receiving the message</i>	11	226
<i>Speech to Michael thereon</i>	11	263
<i>Resignation</i>	11	295
<i>Discourse with Michael, discovering to him in vision what should happen in the world 'till the flood</i>	11	370
<i>Discourse with him relating what should happen to the general resurrection</i>	11	from 450 to 867
<i>General reply to him, (resolutions of future obedience, dependance on God's providence, &amp;c.)</i>	12	from 6 to 551
<i>Vide Eve. Vide Michael. Vide Raphael.</i>		
<i>Vide Similes.</i>		
<i>Adonis (or Thammuz) a fall'n Angel</i>	1	46
<i>Adramelec and Asmadai, fall'n Angels, wounded, and put to flight</i>	6	365
<i>Air first clouded on Adam's fall</i>	11	182
<i>Allusions,</i>		<i>Vide Similes.</i>

# I N D E X.

	Book	Line
<i>Amarant, a flower transplanted from Paradise to Heaven</i>	3	352
<i>Ambition censured</i>	2	482
<i>A cause of Satan's fall</i>	4	86
<i>Angels (Cœlestial) obey God of choice, not necessity</i>	5	535
<i>Imbattel'd against Satan, and the fall'n Angels</i>	6	15
<i>Their signal, and march</i>	6	60
<i>Signal to engage, and engagement</i>	6	202
<i>Prevail</i>	6	386
<i>Disposition to re-engage</i>	6	524
<i>Retreat</i>	6	597
<i>Rally again, and renew the fight</i>	6	634
	7	180
<i>Their song on the creation</i>	7	252
	7	557
	7	602
<i>On its dissolution and renovation</i>	10	641
	4	778
	4	782
<i>Guardians of Paradise, their parade, watches, &amp;c.</i>	4	861
	4	977
	5	287
<i>Re-ascent to Heaven in Adam's fall</i>	11	17
<i>Appointed to expel Adam, &amp;c. from Paradise</i>	11	127
<i>Descent there</i>	7	208
<i>Post assigned</i>	8	220
<i>March possessing it, and expelling him, &amp;c.</i>	12	626
<i>Vide God the Father } and Son }</i>		<i>Vide Similes.</i>
<i>Guardians of mankind</i>	9	152
<i>Angels (fallen) their after-state</i>	1	50
	1	339
	1	331
<i>Numbers</i>	5	743
<i>Names</i>	1	374
<i>Various pursuits, &amp;c.</i>	2	528
<i>Loss supply'd by man's creation</i>	3	677
<i>Imbattel'd against the Angels cœlestial</i>	6	79
<i>Engagement</i>	6	202
<i>Defeat</i>	6	386
<i>Disposition to re-engage</i>	6	507
<i>Their artillery,——cannon, &amp;c.</i>	6	572
		<i>Prevail</i>



# I N D E X.

	Book	Line
<i>Prevail</i>	6	597
<i>Entire defeat, and expulsion from Heaven</i>	6	from 831 to 877
<i>Transformed to Serpents</i>	10	519
<i>Further punish'd with an illusion of the forbidden fruit</i>	10	547
<i>Both annually continued</i>	10	575
<i>Vide Satan. Vide Similes.</i>		
<i>Apostles, their mission, &amp;c.</i>	12	439
<i>Gift of the Holy Ghost</i>	12	497
<i>Successors (wolves, false teachers, &amp;c. describ'd)</i>	12	508
<i>Argument of the Poem</i>	1	1
	9	1
<i>Ariel, Arioc and Ramiel (fall'n Angels) vanquish'd</i>	6	369
<i>Ark, its building by Noah, describ'd</i>	11	728
<i>Vide Noah.</i>		
<i>Ark of the covenant described</i>	12	249
<i>Ashtaroth and Baalim (fall'n Angels)</i>	1	422
<i>Astoreth, or Altarte (a fall'n Angel)</i>	1	431
<i>Author's hymn on conjugal love</i>	4	750
<i>To light</i>	3	1
	1	6
<i>Invocations</i>	3	61
	7	1
	11	20
<i>Reflection, in prospect of Adam's, &amp;c. fall</i>	2	380
<i>On Satan's premeditated attempt</i>	4	1
<i>On Eve's parting with Adam preceding it</i>	9	404
<i>On their nakedness after the fall</i>	9	1114
<i>On his own blindness, &amp;c.</i>	3	22
<i>Azazel (a fall'n Angel) Satan's standard-bearer.</i>	1	534

## B

<i>Baalim and Ashtaroth (fall'n Angels)</i>	1	422
<i>Babel, the city and tower built by Nimrod, &amp;c.</i>	12	38
<i>The confusion of languages there describ'd</i>	12	48
<i>Baptism, what the sign of</i>	12	442
<i>Baptiz'd, the Holy Ghost given primitively to all such</i>	12	497
<i>Battel, &amp;c. between the celestial, and fallen Angels, (God the Son concluding it) describ'd</i>	6	from 202 to 877
<i>Vide Angels celestial and fall'n.</i>		
<i>Beasts, part of the sixth day's creation, describ'd</i>	7	453
<i>Belzebub, (a fall'n Angel)</i>	1	79
		De-

# I N D E X.

	Book	Line
<i>Described</i>	2	299
<i>His answer to Satan's first speech after their fall</i>	1	128
<i>To his second</i>	1	272
<i>Speech in council, call'd by Satan thereon</i>	2	310
<i>Promotes an attempt on the world</i>	2	345
Belial ( <i>a fall'n Angel</i> )	1	290
<i>Describ'd</i>	2	108
<i>His speech in council</i>	2	119
<i>To Satan on their advantage gain'd in the re-in-</i>	6	620
<i>gagement with the cœlestial Angels</i>		
<i>Birds, part of the fifth day's creation, describ'd</i>	7	417
<i>Blasts, an effect of Adam's fall</i>	10	692
<i>Bridge from hell gates to the world over Chaos, the</i>	10	293
<i>work, &amp;c. describ'd</i>		
C.		
Cain and Abel, <i>their story related</i>	11	429
Cham's <i>story</i>	11	807
Chance, <i>the common notion of it, exploded</i>	2	909
Chaos <i>describ'd</i>	2	890
	7	210
<i>Its court</i>	2	959
<i>Answer to Satan's speech there</i>	2	989
<i>Bounds since the Angels fall, the creation, &amp;c.</i>	2	998
<i>State before it</i>	5	577
<i>A bridge made over it from hell-gates to the world,</i>	10	282
<i>at Adam's fall,</i>		
	<i>Vide Similes.</i>	
Charity, <i>its praises, &amp;c.</i>	12	from 576
		to 587
Chemos, or Peor ( <i>a fall'n Angel</i> )	1	406
		412
Cherubim	<i>Vide Angels Cœlestial, &amp;c.</i>	
	<i>Vide Similes</i>	
<i>Church, hirelings in it, compar'd to the Devil in</i>	4	192
<i>paradise</i>		
<i>Cocytus, a river of hell</i>	2	579
Comparisons	<i>Vide Similes.</i>	
<i>Conjugal love, the praises, &amp;c. of it</i>	4	750
<i>Distinguish'd from an amour</i>	4	765
<i>Consists in reason, not passion</i>	8	586
<i>Defin'd</i>	8	589
	<i>Express</i>	



# I N D E X.

	Book	Line
<i>Exprest (on the woman's part) in practice</i>	8	50
<i>In words</i>	12	615
<i>A reciprocal duty of it</i>	9	357
<i>Conjugal obedience, woman's happiness, &amp;c.</i>	4	635
	8	494
<i>Conjugal union, the reason and obligations of it</i>	9	955
	9	961
<i>Conscience, God's umpire in man</i>	3	194
<i>The terrors of it</i>	4	23
	10	842
<i>Laws to force it, censur'd</i>	12	515
<i>No infallibility against it</i>	12	529
<i>Constellations, their appearances, motion, &amp;c.</i>	3	577
	3	708
<i>Creation, the universal, describ'd</i>	7	221
	4	340
<i>Creatures animal in paradise, describ'd</i>	8	369
<i>Have degrees of knowledge, and reason</i>		
<i>Their discord, an effect of Adam's fall</i>	10	707
<i>Entry of Noah's ark</i>	11	733

## D

<i>Dagon (a fallen Angel)</i>	1	457
<i>Damn'd, the vicissitudes of their torments describ'd</i>	2	596
<i>David, his throne why eternal</i>	12	320
<i>Day and night in heaven, describ'd</i>	6	4
<i>Death and Sin, their station at hell-gates before A-</i>	2	648
<i>dam's fall</i>		
<i>Their union</i>	10	249
<i>Make a bridge from thence over Chaos to the</i>	10	282
<i>world, after it</i>		
<i>Meet Satan in his return to hell from thence</i>	10	326
<i>Their Journey thither, and influences describ'd</i>	10	410
<i>Arrival at paradise</i>	10	585
<i>After-conduct in the world</i>	10	610

*Vide Similes.*

<i>Death describ'd</i>	2	666
<i>Answer to Satan at hell-gates</i>	2	688
<i>The son of Satan and Sin</i>	2	727
<i>Its birth</i>	2	777
<i>Answer to Sin on Adam's fall</i>	10	264
<i>To Sin's speech in paradise</i>	10	596

*Vide Similes.*

*Death*

# I N D E X.

	Book	Line
<i>Death natural, the causes, and variety of it, de-</i>	11	from 466
<i>scribed</i>		to 493
<i>More terrible in view than reality</i>	11	469
<i>Of the faithful, a sleep to immortality</i>	12	from 425
<i>The gate of life</i>	12	to 434
<i>Death eternal considered</i>	10	571
<i>Deluge universal</i>	10	808
<i>Despair, the degrees and colours of it</i>	4	108
<i>Devils, why eternally excluded from grace</i>	3	129
<i>Discord censured</i>	2	496
<i>Daughter of Sin, &amp;c.</i>	10	707
<i>Dominion absolute in man, over men, an usurpation</i>	12	64
<i>Dreams illusive, &amp;c. their source</i>	4	799
<i>Natural</i>	5	110
<i>Divine</i>	12	611

## E

<i>Eagle, a bird of prey, an effect of Adam's fall</i>	11	185
<i>Earth and Heaven</i>		<i>Vide Heav'n and Earth.</i>
<i>Earth, its general creation describ'd</i>	3	715
<i>The shadow of Heaven</i>	7	231
<i>Separated from the waters, part of the third day's</i>	5	574
<i>creation, describ'd</i>	7	276
<i>The fruits of it, &amp;c.</i>	7	313
<i>Its motion, or of the Heavens, speculations thereon</i>	8	70
<i>censur'd</i>	9	99
<i>Its praises</i>	9	107
<i>The centre of the creation</i>	11	743
<i>Destruction by Noah's flood describ'd</i>	12	852
<i>Restitution after it</i>	12	463
<i>An universal paradise at the Messiah's coming to</i>		<i>judgment</i>
<i>Vide World.</i>	4	210
<i>Eden, the country bounded</i>		<i>Vide Paradise.</i>
<i>Eden, the garden of it</i>	12	173
<i>Egypt, the plagues of it describ'd</i>	3	183
<i>Election asserted</i>	11	415
<i>Elements, &amp;c. subsist on each other</i>	11	664
<i>Enoch, his story and translation</i>	11	700
		Eve



# I N D E X.

	Book	Line
Eve and Adam	<i>Vide Adam and Eve.</i> <i>Vide Innocence.</i> <i>Vide Similes.</i>	
	4	712
	5	379
	8	470
	8	482
	8	546
	8	596
Eve particularly describ'd, characteriz'd, &c.	9	386
	9	431
	9	457
	9	489
	9	538
	9	603
	9	896
<i>Answer to Adam's discourse on the prohibition of the tree of knowledge</i>	4	440
<i>Recounts her first view of the creation, Adam, &amp;c.</i>	4	449
<i>Answer to him at night</i>	4	635
<i>To him waking her (relates her dream, the subject of Satan's first illusive temptation)</i>	5	27
<i>Weeping describ'd</i>	5	129
<i>Attending the entertainment of Raphael</i>	5	443
<i>Her formation from Adam</i>	8	460
<i>Behaviour on view of him, &amp;c.</i>	8	500
<i>Discourse with him preceding the temptation (she prevailing on her own sufficiency, and his fondness)</i>	9 from	205
	to	384
<i>Answer to Satan (in the serpent)</i>	9	552
<i>The discourse (Satan tempting her to eat the forbidden fruit) continued</i>	9	732
<i>Soliloquy before her eating it</i>	9	745
<i>Plucks and eats</i>	9	780
<i>Soliloquy after it</i>	9	795
<i>Resolution to tempt Adam</i>	9	830
<i>Speech to him thereon</i>	9	856
<i>Reply to his answer, resolving to die with her</i>	9	960
<i>Behaviour thereon</i>	9	990
<i>Gives him the fruit</i>	9	995
<i>Repeats the transgression with him</i>	9	1005
<i>Is incited by him to carnal fruition (the first effect of it)</i>	9	1014
		1035
		The

# I N D E X.

	Book	Line
<i>The place, &amp;c. described</i>	9	1037
<i>Answer to him (accusing her as the aggressor) }</i>	9	1142
<i>imputes it to his indulgence</i>		
<i>Answer to God (the Son) calling her to judgment }</i>	10	159
<i>(accuses the serpent)</i>		
<i>The sentence pronounc'd on her</i>	10	192
<i>Behaviour, and speech to Adam's repulse of her, }</i>	10	909
<i>and her offers of consolation (accuses her self) }</i>		
<i>After-behaviour thereon</i>	10	937
<i>Reply to his answer (advises to die by their own }</i>	10	966
<i>hands)</i>		
<i>To him, bailing her the mother of mankind</i>	11	162
<i>Soliloquy, lamenting the threatned expulsion from }</i>	11	268
<i>Paradise</i>		
<i>Speech to him on quitting it (affection, conjugal }</i>	12	610
<i>resolutions, and consolation on the promise of the }</i>		
<i>Messiah)</i>		
<i>Vide Adam.</i>		
<i>Vide Similes.</i>		
<i>Evening describ'd</i>	4	598
<i>Evil — in thought unapprov'd, — blameless</i>	5	117
<i>Experience — a guide to wisdom</i>	9	807
F		
<i>Faith, unnecessary endeavours to approve it, suspicious</i>	9	1140
<i>Faith in Christ, with works, eternal life</i>	12	420
<i>Laws to force it censur'd</i>	12	515
<i>No infallibility against it</i>	12	529
<i>Fancy (a faculty of the soul) its office</i>	5	100
<i>The eye of the soul</i>	8	460
<i>Fame (or glory) the common notion of it censur'd</i>	11	688
<i>Fate, the will of God</i>	7	170
<i>Fig-tree, of which Adam, Eve, &amp;c. made Aprons, }</i>	9	1101
<i>describ'd</i>		
<i>Firmament, the second day's creation, describ'd</i>	7	261
<i>Fish, part of the fifth day's creation, describ'd</i>	7	391
<i>Flaming sword in Paradise on Adam's, &amp;c. expul- }</i>	12	632
<i>sion thence, describ'd</i>		
<i>Vide Similes.</i>		
<i>Vide Noah.</i>		
<i>Flood universal</i>	11	797
<i>Freedom, with the loss of it, virtue, &amp;c. degenerates</i>	3	173
<i>Free grace asserted</i>		Free



# I N D E X.

	Book	Line
<i>Free grace defin'd</i>	3	227
	3	95
	5	235
<i>Free-will asserted</i>	5	520
	8	635
	9	350
	10	43
	3	108
<i>Reason, the same</i>	9	350
<i>The image of God</i>	8	440
<i>Fruition carnal, the passion of it censur'd</i>	8	579

## G

<i>Gabriel, (the Arch-Angel) chief of the guardian An-</i>	}	4	443
<i>gels of Paradise) his station, &amp;c. described</i>			
<i>Inform'd by Uriel of Satan's descent there</i>		4	561
<i>Undertakes to detect him</i>		4	576
<i>His charge to Uzziel, Ithuriel, and Zephon (three</i>	}	4	782
<i>other of the guardian Angels) thereon</i>			
<i>Speech to them, &amp;c. on their taking, and return</i>	}	4	866
<i>with, him</i>			
<i>To Satan thereon</i>		4	877
<i>Reply to his answer</i>		4	902
<i>To another</i>		4	946
<i>To another</i>		4	1006
<i>Appointed one of the chiefs of the celestial army</i>	}	6	45
<i>against the revolted Angels</i>			
<i>His prowess, &amp;c. in the Battel</i>		6	345
<i>Glory (or fame) the common notion of it censured</i>		11	688
<i>GOD the FATHER contemplating his works, &amp;c.</i>		3	56
<i>Speech to God the Son, on Satan's design on the</i>	}	3	80
<i>creation, man, &amp;c.</i>			
<i>Reply to his answer</i>		3	168
<i>Proposes the manner, &amp;c. of fall'n man's redemption</i>		3	203
<i>Answer to the Son undertaking it</i>		3	274
<i>Decrees his bodily resurrection as God and man</i>		3	303
<i>His (the Father's) attributes, &amp;c.</i>		3	372
<i>Visibly seen in the Son</i>	}	3	383
<i>Charge to Raphael to warn Adam against his fall</i>		5	224
<i>Speech to the whole celestial hierarchy, conven'd</i>	}	5	600
<i>at the inauguration of God the Son</i>			

# I N D E X.

	Book	Line
<i>To the Son on Satan's, &amp;c. Revolt thereon</i>	5	719
<i>Army against the revolvers describ'd</i>	6	15
<i>Speech to Abdiel on his quitting their party</i>	6	29
<i>Appoints Michael and Gabriel chiefs of the celestial army</i>	6	44
<i>Battel, &amp;c. between them and the revolvers, describ'd</i>	6	from 202 to 670
<i>Appoints God the Son to end it</i>	6	680
<i>Chariot (the father's) describ'd</i>	6	749
<i>Speech to the Son, resolving the creation of the world</i>	7	139
<i>Commits the work to him</i>	7	163
<i>His (the Father's) omnipresence</i>	7	168
<i>Goodness, free</i>	7	170
<i>Will, fate</i>	7	173
<i>Institution of the sabbath (by God the Father and Son) the seventh after the six days of the creation</i>	7	581
<i>The solemnity of it describ'd</i>	7	594
<i>Speech (the Father's) on the guardian Angels return from Paradise upon Adam's &amp;c. fall</i>	10	34
<i>Appoints the Son judge of it</i>	10	55
<i>Speech to the celestials on Sin and Death's entrance into the world thereby</i>	10	614
<i>Promise of their dissolution, and renovation of heaven and earth</i>	10	633
<i>Charge to the Angels, touching the Changes in the creation on the fall</i>	10	649
<i>Answer to the Son's intercession on Adam's repentance</i>	11	45
<i>Speech to the celestials, conven'd at his decreeing his expulsion from Paradise</i>	11	84
<i>To Michael thereon</i>	11	99
<i>G O D the S O N, at the right hand of the father</i>	3	62
<i>His (the father's) essence, &amp;c.</i>	3	138
<i>His word, &amp;c.</i>	3	169
<i>Answer to him on Satan's design on the creation, man, &amp;c.</i>	3	144
<i>On his proposing the manner, &amp;c. of man's redemption</i>	3	227
<i>Undertakes it</i>	3	236
<i>Love to man, and filial obedience</i>	3	266
		The



# I N D E X.

	Book	Line
<i>The second Adam</i>	3	285
<i>His merits alone imputative to man</i>	{ 3	290
	{ 12	406
<i>His resurrection, as God and man, decreed</i>	3	303
<i>Equal to the Father</i>	3	305
<i>His (the Son's) attributes</i>	3	383
<i>Answer to the Father on Satan's, &amp;c. revolt</i>	6	733
	{ 3	383
<i>The image of the Father</i>	{ 6	680
	{ 6	736
<i>The Messiah</i>	{ 6	718
	{ 6	881
<i>Answer to the Father, appointing him to end</i>	{	6
<i>the battel between the cœlestial and revolted An-</i>		
<i>gels</i>		723
<i>Undertakes it</i>	6	730
<i>His armour, equipage, &amp;c. describ'd</i>	6	760
<i>Speech to the cœlestial army</i>	6	800
<i>Solely attacks the revolters</i>	6	824
<i>Intirely defeats them</i>	6	838
<i>The action and defeat describ'd</i>	{ 6	from 631
		to 877
<i>Returns in triumph</i>	6	878
<i>His person, equipage, &amp;c. in the Work of the crea-</i>	{	7
<i>tion describ'd</i>		
<i>Re-ascent to heaven after it</i>	7	192
<i>Institution of the sabbath (by God the Father,</i>	{	7
<i>and Son) the seventh after the six days cre-</i>		
<i>ation</i>		581
<i>The solemnity of it describ'd</i>	7	594
<i>Answer (the Son's) to Adam, on his solitude in</i>	{	8
<i>Paradise</i>		
<i>To his reply</i>	8	369
<i>To another (promises him a consort)</i>	8	398
<i>Appointed by the Father judge of Adam's trans-</i>	{	8
<i>gression (fall)</i>		
<i>All judgment committed to him</i>	10	55
<i>The mercy of it</i>	10	56
<i>Answer to the Father thereon</i>	10	58
<i>Descent to Eden</i>	10	68
<i>Call to Adam there</i>	10	85
<i>Reply to his answer (accusing Eve)</i>	10	103
<i>To his reply</i>	10	119
		144
		70

# I N D E X.

	Book	Line
<i>To Eve (accusing the serpent)</i>	10	157
<i>Sentence pronounc'd by him on the serpent</i>	{ 10	163
<i>Explained</i>	10	175
<i>On Eve</i>	10	182
<i>On Adam</i>	10	192
<i>Cloaths them with skins, &amp;c.</i>	10	197
<i>Re-ascent to the Father, and intercession for them</i>	10	211
<i>The justice of his sentence</i>	10	224
<i>His intercession on their repentance</i>	11	754
<i>Vide Messiah.</i>		22
<i>G O D, Purity of adoration more acceptable to him, {</i>	4	736
<i>than ritual</i>		
<i>All good proceeds from, and returns to him</i>	5	469
<i>To be contemplated in the works of the Creation</i>	5	508
<i>Acts immediate</i>	7	176
<i>The centre of heaven</i>	9	107
<i>His absolute decrees</i>	11	311
<i>Omnipresence, goodness, &amp;c.</i>	11	335
<i>The fear of him, &amp;c. with loss of freedom, degenerates</i>	11	797
<i>Particular presence</i>	12	48
<i>To obey, love, depend on his providence, &amp;c. the {</i>	12	557
<i>sum of knowledge</i>		
<i>And wisdom</i>	12	575
<i>Gospel how to be understood</i>	12	511
<i>Grace of God, man its object, and Devils eternally {</i>	3	129
<i>excluded from it, why</i>		
<i>Man's long resistance of it alone exclusive</i>	3	198
<i>Repentance a fruit of it</i>	11	22
<i>The spirits of it, and liberty, consorts</i>	12	525
<i>Gratitude exerted, a discharge of its debt</i>	4	55
<i>Gunpowder, guns, &amp;c. the original invention ascrib'd {</i>	6	478
<i>to the devil</i>		484
<i>Discharge describ'd</i>	6	584

## H

<i>Heaven and earth, their final renovation by {</i>	11	898
<i>fire</i>	12	547
<i>After-happiness therein</i>	{ 12	463
	{ 12	549
<i>Heaven, the joys, &amp;c. of it describ'd</i>	3	344
<i>Its Gate</i>	{ 3	501
	5	253

*Passo*



# I N D E X.

	Book	Line
<i>Passage from thence to the world</i>	3	526
<i>Its general creation</i>	3	716
<i>Visible, the study of it how necessary</i>	8	66
<i>Speculations of its motions, or the earth's, censured</i>	8	70
<i>How situated, respecting the world, and Hell</i>	10	320
	1	60
<i>Hell described</i>	1	228
	2	587
	2	618
<i>Its Gates</i>	2	645
<i>First open'd by sin</i>	2	871
<i>How situated, respecting heaven, and the world</i>	10	322
<i>Vide Similes.</i>		
<i>Hierarchies of heav'n, before the revolt of the fall'n</i>	5	579
<i>Angels, describ'd</i>		
<i>Hinnom, the valley of, whence call'd Tophet, and</i>	1	399
<i>Gehenna</i>		
<i>HOLY-GHOST, its effusion, &amp;c. at the creation</i>	7	195
<i>Descent, &amp;c. on the Apostles, and all baptiz'd</i>	12	485
<i>Promis'd and given alike to all believers</i>	12	518
<i>Hospitality, an incitation to it</i>	5	316
<i>Hymn to light</i>	3	1
<i>To God the Father and Son</i>	3	372
<i>On conjugal love</i>	4	750
	7	180
<i>On the creation</i>	7	252
	7	557
	7	602
<i>Hypocrisy visible to God alone</i>	3	682
<i>Hypocrites, Satan the first</i>	4	121
<i>Pretenders to supernatural purity, &amp;c.</i>	4	744

## I

<i>Idolatry, the original rise of it assign'd</i>	1	364
<i>Of the post-diluvian world</i>	12	115
<i>Jealousy, the lover's hell</i>	5	449
<i>Immortality of the soul discuss'd</i>	10	782
	4	312
<i>Innocence, the state of it describ'd</i>	4	492
	4	738
	5	211

# I N D E X.

	Book	Line
<i>Innocence, the state of it describ'd</i>	5	303
	5	443
	8	40
	8	510
<i>Intellectual beings, a faculty of them</i>	2	146
	1	6
<i>Invocations, the author's</i>	3	51
	7	1
	11	20
<i>Jove (a fall'n Angel)</i>	1	512
<i>Israelites, the story of their bondage, and deliverance from Ægypt, related</i>	12	163
<i>Of the settlement of their civil and sacred economy in the wilderness</i>	12	223
<i>Establishment in Canaan</i>	12	260
<i>Reason, use, &amp;c. of their ritual laws</i>	12	280
<i>Government by Judges and Kings</i>	12	315
<i>Captivity in Babylon</i>	12	335
<i>Return from thence, after-dissentions, &amp;c. to the birth of the Messiah, &amp;c.</i>	12 from to	345 359
<i>Ihs, (a fall'n Angel)</i>	1	478
<i>Ithuriel (a guardian Angel of Paradise)</i>	4	788
<i>Detects Satan's first attempt on Eve there</i>	4	810

## K

<i>Knowledge of good and evil, the tree of it, how situated</i>	4	220
<i>Described</i>	9	626
	9	575
<i>Forbidden to Adam</i>	7	542
<i>Satan's Encomium of it</i>	8	323
	9	679
<i>Eve's</i>	9	795
	9	863
<i>Knowledge (or opinion) the result of reason and fancy</i>	5	100
	7	126
<i>Without restraint, folly</i>	8	188
	12	560
<i>Of things necessary, wisdom</i>	8	192
<i>Knowledge of future events, the desire of it represented</i>	11	770
<i>Its sum, the love, fear, &amp;c. of God</i>	12	557



# I N D E X.

*In animal creatures asserted*

Book    Line  
8        369

*Vide Similes.*

## L

<i>Lethe, a river of hell, describ'd</i>	2	582
<i>Medusa the guard of it</i>	2	610
<i>Leviathan describ'd</i>	1	201
<i>Liberty, with the loss of it, virtue, &amp;c. degenerates</i>	11	797
<i>Adam's fall, the first cause of it</i>	12	82
<i>Liberty, the same with reason</i>	12	83
<i>Life, the tree of it describ'd</i>	4	218
<i>Where situated</i>	9	69
<i>Life, long, by temperance</i>	11	530
<i>The great rule of it respecting it self</i>	11	553
<i>Light, hymn to it</i>	3	1
<i>The first day's creation, describ'd</i>	7	243
<i>Lightning how produced</i>	10	1073
<i>Limbo, or fool's paradise, where</i>	3	495
<i>Lion, a beast of prey, an effect of Adam's fall</i>	11	187
<i>Love conjugal, its praises</i>	4	750
<i>Distinguish'd from that of an amour</i>	4	763
<i>Love consists in reason, not passion</i>	8	586
<i>Defin'd</i>	8	589
<i>In spirits coelestial, the expression of it, what, and how</i>	8	620
<i>Smiles, the food of love</i>	9	239
<i>Founded in reason, one end of human life</i>	9	241
<i>Lucifer, Satan, why so called</i>	10	425
		<i>Vide Satan.</i>
<i>Lust carnal, the first effect of Adam's, &amp;c. fall</i>	9	1011
<i>The solace of it</i>	9	1042

## M

<i>Mammon (a fall'n Angel)</i>	1	678
<i>His speech in the council call'd by Satan after their fall</i>	2	229
<i>Man fall'n the object of grace, why</i>	3	130
<i>His long resistance of it alone exclusive</i>	3	198
<i>Redemption propos'd by God the Father</i>	3	203
<i>Undertaken by God the Son</i>	3	227
<i>The Son's merits alone imputative to him, towards it, how</i>	3	290

M m 2

*Man*

# I N D E X.

	Book	Line
<i>Man created to repair the loss of the fall'n</i>	3	667
<i>Angels</i>	9	143
<i>His creation (part of the sixth day's) describ'd</i>	7	524
<i>Dominion over the rest</i>	7	520
<i>Love to woman, how consistent with his superiority</i>	8	567
<i>The whole creation in little</i>	9	109
<i>Angels, his guardians</i>	9	154
<i>His superiority over the woman given him by</i>	10	145
<i>God</i>	10	195
<i>Pursuing his appetites, disfigures not God's image,</i>	11	515
<i>but his own</i>		
<i>Conformity to the divine will, the true end of his</i>	11	603
<i>creation</i>		
<i>Absolute dominion over his brethren (men) an</i>	12	64
<i>usurpation</i>		
<i>Given him by God only over the creatures</i>	12	67
<i>Matches conjugal, the modern censur'd</i>	8	57
<i>Respecting the woman particularly</i>	10	888
<i>Medusa, the guard of Lethe</i>	2	610
<i>Mercy, God's first and last attribute</i>	3	132
<i>Messiah promised</i>	10	181
<i>The promise explain'd</i>	10	182
<i>His birth, &amp;c. and kingdom describ'd</i>	12	359
<i>Why called the seed of the woman</i>	12	376
<i>Life, and passion</i>	12	388
<i>Resurrection, and mission of the Apostles</i>	12	420
<i>Ascension, &amp;c.</i>	12	451
<i>Coming to judgment, &amp;c.</i>	12	458
<i>Michael (the Arch-Angel) appointed one of the chiefs</i>	6	44
<i>of the celestial army against the revolted Angels</i>	6	250
<i>His prowess, &amp;c. in the battel</i>	6	262
<i>Speech to Satan encountring him</i>	6	296
<i>The combat described</i>	6	320
<i>Wounds Satan</i>	6	410
<i>The revoltors defeated, incamps on the field of battel</i>	11	126
<i>Prepares to expel Adam, &amp;c. from Paradise</i>	11	238
<i>His appearance, &amp;c. there described</i>	11	251
<i>Speech to Adam thereon</i>	11	286
<i>Reply to Eve lamenting the threatned expulsion</i>	11	334
<i>To Adam on the same subject</i>		

*Discovers*



# I N D E X.

	Book	Line
<i>Discovers to him (in vision) what should happen } to the time of the Flood</i>	11	from 423 to 867
<i>The story of Cain and Abel</i>	11	429
<i>Death with its causes and variety</i>	11	466
<i>The state of the antediluvian world (in common)</i>	11	556
<i>The state of it (civil, or in propriety)</i>	11	638
<i>The story of Enoch</i>	11	664
<i>Of Noah</i>	11	700
<i>The flood</i>	11	738
<i>God's covenant to destroy the world no more by water</i>	11	890
<i>Discovers to him (relatively) what should happen } from the flood to the general resurrection</i>	12	from 6 to 551
<i>The patriarchal government</i>	12	13
<i>Nimrod's tyranny</i>	12	24
<i>The building and confusion at Babel</i>	12	38
<i>The story of Cham</i>	12	101
<i>Of Abraham, and the Patriarchs</i>	12	113
<i>Of the Israelites bondage in Ægypt, and deliv- } rance thence</i>	12	163
<i>Of the settlement of their civil, and sacred œconomy, } in the wilderness, and establishment in Canaan</i>	12	223
<i>Of their various ritual laws, their reason, use, &amp;c.</i>	12	280
<i>Of their government by Judges and Kings</i>	12	315
<i>Of their captivity in Babylon</i>	12	335
<i>Of their return from thence, after-dissentions, the } birth and kingdom of the Messiah</i>	12	from 345 to 371
<i>Of his life, passion, resurrection, mission of the } Apostles, ascension, &amp;c.</i>	12	from 388 to 465
<i>Of the mission of the Holy Ghost, gift of tongues, } miracles, &amp;c.</i>	12	from 485 to 504
<i>Of the Apostles successors, (false teachers, &amp;c.) } their ambition, innovations, &amp;c. the effects of } them, and the Messiah's coming to judgment</i>	12	from 507 to 551
<i>His answer to Adam's resolutions of future Obe- } dience, &amp;c. commends, advises him, and warns } him to quit Paradise</i>	12	575
<i>Leads him and Eve out</i>	12	637
<i>Vide Similes.</i>		
<i>Mind, the force of it</i>	1	254
<i>Discourse, its food</i>	9	237
<i>Moloch (a fall'n Angel)</i>	1	392
<i>His speech in the council call'd by Satan after } their fall</i>	2	51
M m 3		<i>Defies</i>

# I N D E X.

	Book	Line
<i>Defies Gabriel in the battel between the cœlestial</i>	6	357
<i>and revolted Angels</i>	6	360
<i>Is wounded by him, and flies</i>	3	459
<i>Moon, suppos'd inhabited by translated saints and</i>	3	726
<i>middle spirits</i>	4	606
<i>Its office</i>	5	418
<i>Rising describ'd</i>	7	356
<i>The spots in it, vapours not yet consolidated with</i>	7	375
<i>its body</i>	7	379
<i>Part of the fourth day's creation</i>	4	661
<i>Receives its light from the sun</i>	10	656
<i>Motion, aspects</i>	6	1. 20
<i>Moon and stars, their courses, influences, &amp;c.</i>	5	10
<i>Moon and planets, their noxious motion, aspects, &amp;c.</i>	11	192
<i>an effect of Adam's fall</i>	11	133
<i>Morning in heav'n describ'd</i>	12	170
	1	740
<i>Morning, natural, describ'd</i>	11	133
	12	170
<i>Moses and Aaron their mission to Ægypt</i>	1	740
<i>Mulciber (a fall'n Angel)</i>	1	740

## N

<i>Night in heaven, describ'd</i>	5	642
<i>Night and day in heaven describ'd</i>	6	4
	4	604
<i>Night, natural, describ'd</i>	4	776
	5	38
	9	48
<i>At Adam's fall</i>	10	846
<i>Nimrod (the first monarch) his tyranny described,</i>	12	24
<i>and censured</i>	6	446
<i>Nifroc (a fall'n Angel)</i>	6	451
<i>His answer to Satan in council after their defeat</i>	6	451
<i>by the cœlestial Angels</i>	11	719
<i>Noah, his reprehension of the antediluvian world</i>	11	808
<i>Building the ark, &amp;c.</i>	11	728
<i>Entering it, with his family, the creatures, &amp;c.</i>	11	733
<i>The flood describ'd</i>	11	738
	11	824
		Its



# I N D E X.

	Book	Line
<i>Its abatement, the ark's resting, &amp;c.</i>	11	481
<i>His descent from it, the appearance of the rainbow, &amp;c.</i>	11	861
<i>Noon describ'd</i>	5	300

## O

<i>Obedience, conjugal, woman's happiness, &amp;c.</i>	4	635
<i>Of will, not necessity, only acceptable to God</i>	5	529
<i>Old age describ'd</i>	11	535
<i>Omens of Adam's expulsion from Paradise</i>	11	182
<i>Opinion (or knowledge)</i>		
<i>Vide Knowledge or Opinion.</i>		
<i>Orbs celestial, and terrestrial, notions about their motions, appearance, &amp;c. doubtful, and not necessary to the improvement of happiness, &amp;c.</i>	8	from 70 to 178
<i>Orus (a fall'n Angel)</i>		
<i>Osiris (another)</i>	1	478

## P

<i>Pandæmonium (the court of hell) describ'd</i>	1	710
<i>Vide Similes.</i>		
	4	131
	4	214
	5	291
<i>Paradise (or the garden of Eden) described.</i>	7	537
	8	304
	9	439
<i>The eastern gate of it</i>	4	542
<i>Guarded by Gabriel</i>	4	549
<i>The bower of Adam and Eve there</i>	4	690
	4	778
<i>The parade, watches, &amp;c. of the guardian Angels in Paradise</i>	4	782
	4	861
	4	977
<i>The hill there, from whence Michael discovers to Adam in vision, what should happen to the time of the flood</i>	11	377
<i>Adam and Eve's expulsion from paradise describ'd</i>	12	625
<i>The flaming sword, &amp;c. guarding the east gate of it</i>	12	632

M m 4

The

# I N D E X.

	Book	Line
<i>The seat of it destroy'd by Noah's flood</i>	11	829
<i>Vide Similes.</i>		
<i>Passions inordinate, an effect of Adam's fall</i>	9	1120
<i>Patriarchal government, from the flood to Nimrod's tyranny</i>	12	13
<i>Patriarchs (Abraham's, &amp;c.) their story related</i>	12	113
<i>Peace, the corruptions of it equal to the wastes of war</i>	11	783
<i>Peor, or Chemos (a fall'n Angel)</i>	1	412
<i>Persecution in matters spiritual, the rise of it</i>	12	from 508 to 533
<i>Its effects</i>	12	533
<i>Phlegeton (a River of Hell)</i>	2	580
<i>Plagues of Ægypt describ'd</i>	12	173
<i>Planets and moon, their noxious motion, aspects, &amp;c. an effect of Adam's fall</i>	10	656
<i>Pleasure sensual, censur'd</i>	11	603
<i>Poles, north and south, perpetual day under both, but for Adam's fall</i>	10	668
	10	680
<i>Prayer, the efficacy of its spirit</i>	11	5. 14
	11	146
<i>Unavailable against God's absolute decrees</i>	11	311
<i>Predestination defin'd</i>	3	111
<i>Priests occasion the first dissension in the Jewish church and state</i>	12	353
<i>Prosopopœia, on Eve's eating the forbidden fruit</i>	9	782
<i>On Adam's</i>	9	1000

## R

<i>Rinbow, its first appearance after Noah's flood</i>	11	865
<i>Sign of God's covenant to destroy the world no more by water</i>	11	895
<i>Ramiel, Ariel, and Arioc (fall'n Angels) vanquisht</i>	6	369
<i>Raphael (the Angel) his descent to Paradise to warn Adam against his fall</i>	5	247
<i>His person described</i>	5	276
<i>Answer to Adam's invitation to his bower, and entertainment there</i>	5	371
	5	404
<i>Salutation of Eve</i>	5	388
<i>Discourse with Adam on various Subjects</i>	5	468
	8	to 651
		On



# I N D E X.

	Book	Line
<i>On the perfection, variety, and gradual œconomy of the creation</i>	5	from 468 to 503
<i>On obedience, as a duty of choice, not necessity</i>	5	from 520 to 543
<i>On the revolt and defeat of the fall'n Angels</i>	5	from 577 6 to 897
<i>Thence warns him against Satan's temptations</i>	6	893
<i>Vanquishes Asmadai, and puts him to flight</i>	6	363
<i>On the Creation, &amp;c.</i>	7	from 111 to 640
<i>On the motion, appearances, and influences of the cœlestial and terrestrial bodies</i>	8	from 15 to 178
<i>Reply to Adam's account of himself on his creation, &amp;c.</i>	8	560
<i>Reply to his question concerning love, and the expression of it in spirits cœlestial</i>	8	620
<i>Advice to Adam at parting, and re-ascent to heaven</i>	8	630
<i>Vide Similes.</i>		
<i>Reason, and free-will, the same</i>	4	95
	4	108
	9	350
<i>The chief faculty of the soul</i>	5	100
<i>The being of the soul, discursive of men, intuitive of Angels</i>	5	486
<i>In animal creatures</i>	8	369
<i>The law of nature</i>	9	653
<i>Correlative with liberty</i>	12	83
<i>with virtue</i>	12	97
<i>Redemption of man, propos'd by God the Father</i>	3	203
<i>Undertaken by God the Son</i>	3	227
<i>Repentance the grace of God</i>	3	185
<i>Sincere endeavours towards it acceptable</i>	3	191
<i>An act of it</i>	10	1086
<i>Its efficacy</i>	11	22
<i>Reprobation, the state of it</i>	3	198
<i>Reptiles, part of the sixth day's creation, described</i>	7	475
<i>Revolt, and defeat of the fall'n Angels</i>	5	577
	6	892
<i>Rimmon (a fall'n Angel)</i>	1	467

# I N D E X.

Book    Line

## S

<i>Sabbath, its institution, the seventh, after the six days creation</i>	}	7	581
<i>The solemnity of it describ'd</i>	}	7	594
<i>Salvation, not only to the sons of Abraham's loins, but his faith</i>	}	12	449
<i>Satan (the prince of the fall'n Angels) his fall from heaven</i>	}	1	34
<i>Why so call'd</i>	}	1	81
<i>Speech to Belzebub, after their fall</i>	}	5	657
<i>Reply to Belzebub's answer</i>	}	1	84
<i>Ascent from hell</i>	}	1	157
<i>His stature, looks, &amp;c. describ'd</i>	}	1	192
<i>Speech to Belzebub thereon</i>	}	4	193
<i>His shield describ'd</i>	}	5	285
<i>His spear</i>	}	5	706
<i>Speech to the other fall'n Angels</i>	}	1	242
<i>His standard describ'd</i>	}	1	284
<i>Speech to the fall'n Angels reimbattel'd</i>	}	1	292
<i>Calls a council</i>	}	1	315
<i>Speech to them in council</i>	}	1	531
<i>Undertakes an attempt on the world (the result of it)</i>	}	1	622
<i>Ascent to the gates of hell</i>	}	2	752
<i>Speech to Death there</i>	}	2	11
<i>The father of Sin and Death</i>	}	2	430
<i>Answer to Sin's speech</i>	}	2	465
<i>To her reply</i>	}	2	629
<i>Flight into Chaos</i>	}	2	681
<i>Arrival at the court of Chaos</i>	}	2	727
<i>Speech there</i>	}	2	737
<i>Brought sin and death first into the world</i>	}	2	817
<i>Ascent to light, &amp;c.</i>	}	2	917
<i>Alights on the convex of the world's outermost orb</i>	}	2	951
<i>View of the world from the first step to heav'n gate</i>	}	2	968
<i>Descent to it describ'd</i>	}	2	968
<i>Stops at the sun</i>	}	3	1024
<i>Discovers Uriel, the Angel of it, there</i>	}	3	1034
		3	418
		3	540
		3	561
		3	588
		3	621
			Transforms



# I N D E X.

	Book	Line
<i>Transforms himself to a Cherub</i>	3	634
<i>Speech to Uriel</i>	3	654
<i>Deceives him</i>	3	681
<i>Is directed by him to the world</i>	3	724
<i>And Paradise</i>	3	733
<i>Alights on mount Niphates</i>	3	739
<i>Soliloquy contemplating the sun</i>	4	32
<i>The first hypocrite</i>	4	121
<i>Arrives at Paradise</i>	4	131
<i>Sits on the tree of life</i>	4	194
<i>Soliloquy on view of Adam and Eve in Paradise</i>	4	358
<i>Descends from the tree of life, and assumes several animal shapes.</i>	4	395
<i>Listens to Adam's discourse with Eve, on God's prohibition of the tree of knowledge</i>	4	408
<i>Soliloquy on the subject of it</i>	4	505
<i>Resolves thence to tempt them to disobedience</i>	4	512
<i>First attempt in the assumed shape of a toad, on Eve asleep</i>	4	799
<i>Answer to Ithuriel and Zephon, reprehending him thereon</i>	4	827
<i>Reply to their answer</i>	4	851
<i>Answer to Gabriel</i>	4	886
<i>Reply to his answer</i>	4	925
<i>To another</i>	4	968
<i>The inauguration of God the Son, the occasion of his revolt</i>	5	657
<i>Speech to the next subordinate Angel of his party thereon</i>	5	673
<i>The seat of his hierarchy before his fall, describ'd</i>	5	756
<i>Speech to the Angels of his hierarchy thereon</i>	5	772
<i>Reply to Abdiel's answer, on his Speech to the Hi- rarchs of his party</i>	5	853
<i>His army described</i>	6	79
<i>His port, and post there</i>	6	99
<i>Answer to Abdiel's reply</i>	6	150
<i>Battel between his, and the celestial army, described</i>	6 from	205
<i>His prowess in the battel</i>	6 to	385
<i>Encounters Michael</i>	6	246
<i>Answer to Michael's speech thereon</i>	6	253
<i>The combat describ'd</i>	6	281
<i>Wounded by him</i>	6	296
		320
		Carried

# I N D E X.

	Book	Line
<i>Carried off</i>	6	335
<i>His army defeated</i>	6	386
<i>Retreats and calls a council</i>	6	414
<i>Speech in council</i>	6	418
<i>Reply to Nisroc there</i>	6	469
<i>Gives the word for renewing the battel</i>	6	558
<i>Renew'd by his army, and the second Battel de- scrib'd</i>	6	569 670
<i>Speech on the cœlestial army's retreat</i>	6	608
<i>His army's intire defeat and expulsion from heav'n describ'd</i>	6	from 831 to 877
<i>Returns, from compassing the earth, to Paradise by night in a mist, in order to his temptation</i>	9	53
<i>His circuit, &amp;c. describ'd</i>	9	62
<i>Soliloquy thereon</i>	9	99
<i>Enters the serpent</i>	9	182
<i>View (in that shape) of Eve</i>	9	424
<i>Soliloquy thereon</i>	9	473
<i>Behaviour to her</i>	9	523
<i>Speech to her</i>	9	532
<i>Reply to her answer</i>	9	567
<i>The discourse (his temptation of Eve to eat the forbidden fruit) continued</i>	9	732
<i>Leaves her, after eating it</i>	9	784
<i>His sentence thereon (virtually) pronounced by God the Son</i>	10	171
<i>Returns to hell to avoid his presence in Paradise</i>	10	337
<i>Meets Sin and Death upon their journey to the world on Adam's, &amp;c. fall</i>	10	345
<i>Answer to Sin's speech</i>	10	383
<i>Parts with them</i>	10	410
<i>Ascends his throne at Pandæmonium</i>	10	443
<i>Speech to the fall'n Angels assembled there</i>	10	459
<i>Applauded with an hiss</i>	10	504
<i>He and they transform'd to serpents</i>	10	510
<i>Further punish'd with an illusion of the forbidden fruit</i>	10	549
<i>Both annually continued</i>	10	575
<i>Himself (the serpent) drag'd in chains at the ascen- sion of the Messiah</i>	12	453
<i>Dissolution (with the world) at his coming to judg- ment</i>	12	545

*Vide Similes.*

Saturn



# I N D E X.

	Book	Line
Saturn ( <i>a fall'n Angel</i> )	1	512
Scriptures how to be understood	12	511
Seasons, their changes, respecting each clime, an ef- fect of Adam's fall	10	677
Serpent describ'd	9	182
After enter'd by Satan	9	495
His sentence (formally) pronounc'd by God the Son, as the assum'd tempter of Eve	10	163 175
<i>Vide Similes.</i>		
Sideral blasts, &c. an effect of Adam's fall	10	692
Sin, and Death		<i>Vide Death and Sin.</i>
Sin describ'd	2	650
Her speech to Satan, and Death, at hell-gates	2	727
Reply to Satan	2	747
Her birth	2	752
Reply to his answer	2	850
Opens hell-gates to him	2	871
Speech to Death on Adam's fall	10	235
To Satan, (meeting him returning to hell,) on her and Death's journey to the world after it	10	354
To Death on their arrival at Paradise	10	591
Reply to Death's answer.	10	602
<i>Vide Similes.</i>		
Sin original, lust carnal the first effect of it	9	1011
Its solace	9	1042
Slavery, original of it the inordinacy of the Passions	12	86
The justice of it, as consequential on deviating from virtue, &c.	12	97
Soul, its faculties	5	100
Immortality discuss'd	10	782
Spirits, their essence, and power	1	423
Their invisible existence on earth	1	789
The elect, their hymn to God the Father, and Son	4	677
	3	372
Material, &c. faculties in spirits	5	404
Plural, animal, and intellectual spirits progressive from material nutrition	5	433 482
Their existence in life, intellect, shape, &c. defin'd	6	344
Spring perpetual within the tropics, but for Adam's fall	10	678
Stars, their places, appearances, &c.	3	565
Fed by the air	5	417
		<i>Part</i>

# I N D E X.

	Book	Line
<i>Carried off</i>	6	335
<i>His army defeated</i>	6	386
<i>Retreats and calls a council</i>	6	414
<i>Speech in council</i>	6	418
<i>Reply to Nisroc there</i>	6	469
<i>Gives the word for renewing the battel</i>	6	558
<i>Renew'd by his army, and the second Battel de-</i>	6	569
<i>scrib'd</i>		670
<i>Speech on the cœlestial army's retreat</i>	6	608
<i>His army's intire defeat and expulsion from heav'n</i>	6	from 831
<i>describ'd</i>		to 877
<i>Returns, from compassing the earth, to Paradise by</i>	9	53
<i>night in a mist, in order to his temptation</i>		
<i>His circuit, &amp;c. describ'd</i>	9	62
<i>Soliloquy thereon</i>	9	99
<i>Enters the serpent</i>	9	182
<i>View (in that shape) of Eve</i>	9	424
<i>Soliloquy thereon</i>	9	473
<i>Behaviour to her</i>	9	523
<i>Speech to her</i>	9	532
<i>Reply to her answer</i>	9	567
<i>The discourse (his temptation of Eve to eat the</i>	9	732
<i>forbidden fruit) continued</i>		
<i>Leaves her, after eating it</i>	9	784
<i>His sentence thereon (virtually) pronounced by</i>	10	171
<i>God the Son</i>		
<i>Returns to hell to avoid his presence in Paradise</i>	10	337
<i>Meets Sin and Death upon their journey to the</i>	10	345
<i>world on Adam's, &amp;c. fall</i>		
<i>Answer to Sin's speech</i>	10	383
<i>Parts with them</i>	10	410
<i>Ascends his throne at Pandæmonium</i>	10	443
<i>Speech to the fall'n Angels assembled there</i>	10	459
<i>Applauded with an hiss</i>	10	504
<i>He and they transform'd to serpents</i>	10	510
<i>Further punish'd with an illusion of the forbidden</i>	10	549
<i>fruit</i>		
<i>Both annually continued</i>	10	575
<i>Himself (the serpent) drag'd in chains at the ascen-</i>	12	453
<i>sion of the Messiah</i>		
<i>Dissolution (with the world) at his coming to judg-</i>	12	545
<i>ment</i>		

*Vide Similes.*

Saturn



# I N D E X.

	Book	Line
Saturn ( <i>a fall'n Angel</i> )	1	512
Scriptures how to be understood	12	511
Seasons, their changes, respecting each clime, an ef- fect of Adam's fall }	10	677
Serpent describ'd	9	182
After enter'd by Satan	9	495
His sentence (formally) pronounc'd by God the Son, } as the assum'd tempter of Eve }	10	163 175
<i>Vide Similes.</i>		
Sideral blasts, &c. an effect of Adam's fall	10	692
Sin, and Death		<i>Vide Death and Sin.</i>
Sin describ'd	2	650
Her speech to Satan, and Death, at hell-gates	2	727
Reply to Satan	2	747
Her birth	2	752
Reply to his answer	2	850
Opens hell-gates to him	2	871
Speech to Death on Adam's fall	10	235
To Satan, (meeting him returning to hell,) on her } and Death's journey to the world after it }	10	354
To Death on their arrival at Paradise	10	591
Reply to Death's answer.	10	602
<i>Vide Similes.</i>		
Sin original, lust carnal the first effect of it	9	1011
Its solace	9	1042
Slavery, original of it the inordinacy of the Passions	12	86
The justice of it, as consequential on deviating } from virtue, &c. }	12	97
Soul, its faculties	5	100
Immortality discuss'd	10	782
Spirits, their essence, and power	1	423
Their invisible existence on earth	1	789
The elect, their hymn to God the Father, and Son	4	677
	3	372
Material, &c. faculties in spirits	5	404
Plural, animal, and intellectual spirits progressive } from material nutrition }	5	433 482
Their existence in life, intellect, shape, &c. defin'd	6	344
Spring perpetual within the tropics, but for Adam's } fall }	10	678
Stars, their places, appearances, &c.	3	565
Fed by the air	5	417
		<i>Part</i>

# I N D E X.

	Book	Line
<i>Part of the fourth day's creation</i>	7	357
<i>Receive their light from the sun</i>	7	364
	<i>Vide Similes.</i>	
<i>Stars, and Moon, their courses, influences, &amp;c.</i>	4	661
<i>Storms, &amp;c. an effect of Adam's fall</i>	11	695
<i>Styx, a river of hell</i>	2	577
<i>Sun, its appearance, place and power</i>	3	571
<i>Brightness describ'd</i>	3	596
<i>Orb fed by exhalations from the grosser</i>	5	423
<i>Part of the fourth day's creation</i>	7	354
<i>The fountain of light</i>	7	364
	4	352
	4	539
<i>Setting describ'd</i>	4	590
	8	630
	10	92
<i>Its annual course, producing intense heat and cold,</i>	10	651
<i>an effect of Adam's fall</i>		
<i>Its oblique motion from the equinoctial, from the</i>	10	671
<i>same cause.</i>		
	<i>Vide Similes.</i>	

## T.

<i>Teachers (false) of the christian religion, describ'd</i>	12	508
<i>Temperance, the effect of it long life</i>	11	530
<i>Thammuz or Adonis (a fall'n Angel)</i>	1	446
<i>Thunder, an effect of Adam's fall</i>	10	666
<i>Time, respecting eternity, defin'd</i>	5	580
<i>Titan (a fall'n Angel)</i>	1	510
<i>Tradition censur'd</i>	12	511
<i>Tree of life</i>	<i>Vide Life.</i>	
<i>Of knowledge</i>	<i>Vide Knowledge.</i>	
<i>Truth, suffering for it, fortitude, &amp;c.</i>	12	569
<i>Tyranny, Nimrod's, describ'd, and censured</i>	12	24
<i>Origine of it, the inordinacy of the passions</i>	12	86
<i>No excuse of the tyrant (tho' just in consequence</i>	12	95
<i>on the subject)</i>		
<i>Tyrants, their plea for conquest, &amp;c. compar'd with</i>	4	390
<i>Satan's first attempt on man</i>		
<i>Twilight describ'd</i>	4	598

*Vacuity*



# I N D E X.

Book Line

## V

<i>Vacuity, God's omnipresence an argument against it</i>	7	168
<i>Valour, (or heroick virtue,) the common notion of it</i>	11	688
<i>censur'd</i>	}	
<i>Virtue, &amp;c. with loss of freedom degenerates</i>	11	797
<i>Reason, and virtue, the same</i>	12	98
<i>Union conjugal</i>		<i>Vide Conjugal union.</i>
<i>Uriel (the Angel of the sun)</i>	3	622
<i>His answer to Satan</i>	3	694
<i>Directs him to the world</i>	3	724
<i>And Paradise</i>	3	733
<i>Descends thither himself, and informs Gabriel of</i>	4	555
<i>Satan's pre-descent</i>	4	561
<i>Encounters Adramalec (a fall'n Angel) wounds</i>	6	363
<i>and puts him to flight</i>	}	
		<i>Vide Similes.</i>
<i>Uzziel (a guardian Angel of Paradise)</i>	4	782

## W

<i>War, property the original of it</i>	11	638
<i>The corruptions of peace equal to its wastes</i>	11	783
<i>Waters separated from the earth, part of the third</i>	7	282
<i>day's creation</i>	}	
		<i>Vide Similes.</i>
<i>Wife, her duty in danger, distress, &amp;c.</i>	9	267
	11	290
<i>Wind, the tempestuous power of it, an effect of</i>	10	664
<i>Adam's fall</i>	10	695
<i>Wisdom, the sum of it, the love, &amp;c. of God</i>	12	575
<i>Wolves, (or false teachers) the Apostles successors,</i>	12	507
<i>describ'd</i>	}	
<i>Woman, conjugal obedience her happiness, &amp;c.</i>	4	635
<i>Man's love towards her, how consistent with his</i>	8	567
<i>superiority</i>	}	
<i>Two of her loveliest qualities</i>	9	232
<i>The effect of leaving her to her own will</i>	9	1182
<i>His superiority over her, given him by God</i>	10	145
<i>A novelty, defect of nature, &amp;c. (sarcastically)</i>	10	195
<i>The advantage of her social, over her artificial</i>	11	614
<i>accomplishments</i>	}	

Every

# I N D E X.

	Book	Line
<i>Every way the cause of man's misery (sarcastically)</i>	11	632
<i>Works, with faith in Christ, eternal life</i>	12	420
<i>World, the convex of its outermost orb describ'd</i>	3	418
<i>By whom possess'd (sarcastically)</i>	3	444
<i>The creation of the world, committed by God the</i>	3	463
<i>Father, to God the Son</i>	7	163
<i>Describ'd</i>	7	218
<i>Situation of it, respecting heaven and hell</i>	10	320
<i>Vide Earth.</i>		

## Z

<i>Zephon (a guardian Angel of Paradise)</i>	4	788
<i>Reprehends Satan's first attempt on Eve there</i>	4	823
<i>Reply to his answer</i>	4	834
<i>Zophiel (a Cherub)</i>	6	535
<i>Alarms the celestial army, on the approach of</i>	6	537
<i>Satan's to renew the battel</i>		

## S I M I L E S.

<i>Adam and Eve, after their fall, compar'd to the</i>	9	1115
<i>Americans, as first seen by Columbus</i>		
<i>Their repentance — to Deucalion and Pyrrha's</i>	11	8
<i>address to restore human race after their flood</i>		
<i>Adam caressing Eve — to Jupiter with Juno</i>	4	499
<i>(May-showers)</i>		
<i>His address to her sleeping — to Zephyrus breath-</i>	5	15
<i>ing on Flora</i>		
<i>Bower — to Pomona's arbour</i>	5	377
<i>Desires to know the story of the creation, prior to</i>	7	66
<i>his own — to thirst unallay'd, increasing</i>		
<i>Awak'd after carnal fruition, the first effect of</i>	9	1059
<i>his fall — to Sampson shorn by Dalilah</i>		
<i>Sorrow on the vision of Noah's flood — to a fa-</i>	11	760
<i>ther's mourning his children all destroy'd in his</i>		
<i>view at once.</i>		
<i>Angels celestial, the spears (of the guardians of Pa-</i>	4	980
<i>radise) — to ears of corn ripe for reaping</i>		
<i>Their march against Satan's army — to that of</i>	6	72
<i>the birds in Paradise to receive their names</i>		
<i>from Adam</i>		

*The*



# I N D E X.

	Book	Line
<i>Their hallelujahs—to the sound of seas</i>	10	642
<i>(Appointed to expel Adam, &amp;c. from Paradise)—their faces to a double Janus (four)</i>	11	128
<i>Their eyes—to those of Argus</i>	11	129
<i>Their appearance there—to the Angels appearing to Jacob in Mahanaim</i>	11	213
<i>—To those in Dothan against the King of Assyria</i>	11	216
<i>Their motion—to an evening mist</i>	12	628
<i>Angels fall'n (or infernal)—to autumnal leaves</i>	1	302
<i>—To floating sea-sedge after a storm</i>	1	304
<i>Rousing at Satan's command—to centinels waking from sleep on duty</i>	1	332
<i>Imbatteling—to the Ægyptian plague of locusts</i>	1	339
<i>—To the irruptions of the northern Barbarians</i>	1	351
<i>Their disposition to engage—to that of the heroes of antiquity</i>	1	549
<i>With them—the greatest armies in all ages since the creation—pigmies</i>	1	573
<i>Themselves—to oaks or pines blasted</i>	1	612
<i>Their searching, &amp;c. for the materials of Pandæmonium—to pioneers intrenching, &amp;c.</i>	1	675
<i>Their manner of raising it—to the wind of an Organ.</i>	1	705
<i>Assembling thereat—to bees</i>	1	768
<i>—To pigmies</i>	1	780
<i>—To fairies</i>	1	781
<i>Their applause of Mammon's speech in council—to the hollow wind after a storm</i>	2	285
<i>Their rising from council—to thunder afar off</i>	2	476
<i>Their pleasure on the result—to the evening sun after a foul day</i>	2	488
<i>Their after various pursuits, passions, &amp;c.—to the Olympick or Pythian games</i>	2	530
<i>—To the Phenomena of armies in the clouds</i>	2	533
<i>—To Hercules on Oeta</i>	2	543
<i>Their numbers composing Satan's army against the celestials—to the stars</i>	5	745
<i>—To the dew-drops</i>	5	746
<i>Their applause of Satan's reply to Abdiel—to the sound of deep waters</i>	5	872
<i>Throng'd together after their entire defeat by God the Son—to a herd of goats</i>	6	856
<i>Their retreat to Pandæmonium from the frontiers of hell during Satan's expedition to the world—to the Tartar's flight before the Rufs—and the</i>	10	431
N n		Persian

# I N D E X.

	Book	Line
Persian from the Turk—wasting the intermediate country	10	431
Transformation to serpents—to those sprung from the Gorgon's blood, &c.	10	526
Their appearance on the tree illusive of the forbidden fruit—to the snaky hair of Megæra (one of the furies)	10	558
The fruit—to the apples of Sodom	10	561
Chaos. Atoms, their motion—to the Libyan quicksands	2	900
Confusion there—to storming a town	2	920
—To heaven and earth (suppos'd) falling, &c.	2	924
Death, and Sin, their making a bridge over Chaos to the world—to polar winds, driving the ice together in the (suppos'd) north-east passage	10	289
The work—to Neptune's fixing the Isle of Delos	10	293
—To Xerxes making a bridge over the Hellespont	10	306
Death's instinct of Adam's fall—to the flight of birds of prey to a field of battle	10	273
His and Satan's frowns on each other—to two thunder-clouds meeting.	2	714
Eve—her hair—to the vine's tendrils	4	305
Her looks—to the first blush of morning	5	122
Her self—to Pandora	4	713
—To a wood-nymph, or Venus	5	379
—To a Dryad, or Delia, (Diana)	9	387
—To Pales or Pomona	9	393
—To Ceres	9	395
Her Temptation by Satan—alluded to by the story of Ophion and Euryuome	10	578
Flaming sword in Paradise, on Adam's and Eve's expulsion thence—to a comet	12	632
It's heat, &c. to the Libyan air	12	634
Hell—to mount Ætna (in Sicily)	1	230
—To the bog or lake Serbonis (in Palestine)	2	592
Knowledge, the desire of it—to a thirst unallay'd, increasing	7	66
Michael, his combat with Satan—to two Planets (the frame of nature, suppos'd, dissolv'd) rushing in opposition to each other	6	310
Appearance to expel Adam, &c. from Paradise—to a man in a military vest, &c.	11	239
Pandæmonium (or the court of hell) its sudden rise—to an exhalation	1	710
Paradise, the air of it—to the effluvia from Arabia	4	159
Fœlix at Sea,		Its



# I N D E X.

	Book	Line
<i>Its self—to the field of Enna (in Sicily)</i>	4	268
<i>To the grove of Daphne, &amp;c. (in Thessaly)</i>	4	272
<i>—To the isle of Nyssa, (where Bacchus was brought up)</i>	4	275
<i>—To mount Amara (in Ethiopia)</i>	4	280
<i>—To the gardens of Adonis</i>	9	439
<i>—Of Alcinous</i>	9	440
<i>—Of Solomon</i>	9	442
<i>Raphael, his view of the world in his descent from</i> <i>heaven to paradise—to that of the moon through</i> <i>an optick glass.</i>	5	261
<i>—Of Delos or Samos from the Cyclades (isles)</i>	5	264
<i>Himself—to a Phoenix</i>	5	271
<i>—To Mercury</i>	5	285
<i>Satan—to Briareus, Typhon and the Leviathan</i>	1	199
<i>—To the sun rising in a mist</i>	1	201
<i>—In eclipse</i>	1	594
<i>—To the longest train of a comet</i>	1	596
<i>—To mount Teneriff or Atlas</i>	2	707
<i>His shield—to the moon</i>	4	985
<i>His spear—to a mast</i>	1	284
<i>His standard—to a meteor</i>	1	292
<i>The Phenomenon of his ascent to hell-gates—to a</i> <i>fleet in the Offin</i>	1	337
<i>His and Death's frowns on each other—to two</i> <i>thunder-clouds meeting</i>	2	636
<i>Flight to the court of Chaos—to a Gryphon's in</i> <i>the wilderness</i>	2	714
<i>Towards heaven—to (the ship) Argo, thro' the</i> <i>Thracian Bosphorus</i>	2	943
<i>—To Ulysses's voyage between Scylla and Charybdis</i>	2	1016
<i>Arrival at light, &amp;c. —to a weather-beaten vessel</i> <i>towards port</i>	2	1019
<i>—On the convex of the world's outermost orb—</i> <i>to a vulture seeking his prey</i>	2	1043
<i>First view of the world—to a scout's casual prospect</i> <i>(after a dangerous journey) of a new country or city</i>	3	431
<i>—Of the stars orbs—to the Hesperian gardens, &amp;c.</i>	3	543
<i>Appearance in the sun's orb—to a spot in it dif-</i> <i>fering from all astronomical observations</i>	3	568
<i>Meditation on his intended attempt on the world—</i> <i>to a gun recoiling</i>	3	688
<i>In paradise—to a wolf preying on a fold</i>	4	14
<i>—To a thief breaking in at a house-top, &amp;c.</i>	4	183
<i>—To a tyger in view of a brace of fawns</i>	4	188
	4	403

*Detected*

# I N D E X.

	Book	Line
<i>Detected by Ithuriel there—to gunpowder taking fire</i>	4	814
<i>Reprehended by Zephon—to a steed rein'd, in a fret</i>	4	857
<i>His army against the celestials in number—to the stars</i>	5	745
<i>—To the dew drops</i>	5	746
<i>Their applause of his reply to Abdiel—to the</i>	6	872
<i>sound of deep waters</i>		
<i>Himself recoiling on a blow receiv'd from Michael</i>	6	193
<i>—to a mountain sinking by an earthquake</i>		
<i>His combat with Michael—to two Planets (the</i>	6	310
<i>frame of nature, suppos'd, dissolv'd) rushing in</i>		
<i>opposition to each other</i>		
<i>View (in the serpent) of Paradise and Eve there—</i>	9	445
<i>to a citizen's taking the Air in the country</i>		
<i>from his home-confinement</i>		
<i>Shape (transform'd to a serpent) on his return to</i>	10	529
<i>hell after the temptation—to the serpent Python</i>		
<i>His tempting Eve—alluded to by the story of Ophi-</i>	10	7 8
<i>on and Eurynome</i>		
<i>Serpent that enter'd by Satan—to those Hermione</i>	9	504
<i>and Cadmus were transform'd to</i>		
<i>—To that assum'd by Æsculapius</i>	9	506
<i>—To those by Jupiter Ammon, and Capitolinus</i>	9	508
<i>His motion, wreathings, &amp;c.—to the working</i>	9	513
<i>of a ship in shifting winds, &amp;c.</i>		
<i>His crest (preceding Eve to the forbidden Tree)</i>	9	634
<i>—to an exhalation flaming</i>		
<i>His address introducing the temptation—to that of</i>	9	670
<i>an orator of the Athenian or Roman Common</i>		
<i>Wealths</i>		
<i>Sin, her middle parts—to the (suppos'd) Dogs of Scylla</i>	2	659
<i>—Of the night-bag</i>	2	662
<i>Spears—to ears of corn ripe for reaping</i>	4	980
<i>Stars, their orbs—to the Hesperian gardens, &amp;c.</i>	3	568
<i>Sun, his course turn'd at Adam's, &amp;c. eating the</i>	10	688
<i>forbidden fruit—as at the banquet of Thyestes</i>		
<i>Uriel, his descent from the Sun on Paradise—to a</i>	4	555
<i>shooting star</i>		
<i>Waters, their flux into seas, &amp;c. on the creation—</i>	7	290
<i>to drops on dust</i>		
<i>—To armies forming themselves on sound of trumpet</i>	7	294

F I N I S.

20 JY 63



